



ROBT E. PETERSON'S  
Cheap Book Store,  
Cor. Fifth & Arch sts.  
PHILADELPHIA.

163-6  
187

Theological Seminary.

PRINCETON, N. J.

Part of the  
ADDISON ALEXANDER LIBRARY,  
which was presented by  
MESSRS. R. L. AND A. STUART.

BX 5067 .S82 1816 v.3  
Strype, John, 1643-1737.  
Ecclesiastical memorials

J. L. Alexander



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015



# Ecclesiastical Memorials;

RELATING CHIEFLY TO

RELIGION,

AND ITS

REFORMATION,

UNDER THE REIGNS OF

KING HENRY VIII. KING EDWARD VI.

AND

QUEEN MARY THE FIRST:

WITH THE

APPENDIXES

CONTAINING

*THE ORIGINAL PAPERS, RECORDS, &c.*

~~~~~

*In Seven Volumes.*

BY JOHN <sup>✓</sup>STRYPE, M.A.

---

*VOLUME THE THIRD.*

~~~~~

CONTAINING

THE CONTINUATION AND CONCLUSION

OF

THE REIGN OF

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR SAMUEL BAGSTER, No. 81, STRAND.

---

MDCCCXVI.



THE  
**PREFACE**  
TO THE  
**THIRD VOLUME,**

*And the Second of the Folio Edition.*

---

A DISMAL face of things appeared to the professors of the gospel, upon this queen's access to the throne; occasioned by the fierce resolutions taken of undoing all that had been done many years before, in the reigns of her father and brother, towards the reforming of religion; and for bringing back again into practice the old religion and superstitions. The chief managery of this work was left in the hands of two disobliged and bloody-minded bishops, *London*, and *Winchester*, Lord Chancellor. And what severe methods were pursued to bring this about, the ensuing MEMORIALS will shew in divers particulars, besides what Mr. Fox, and others since him, have published. And since my writing of this History, I have met with some other informations about it: and that from the pen of a very eminent foreigner, and sojourner, but well acquainted with the affairs of England; who lived here in those very days: having been sent for over hither by the former prince, to read divinity in one of our Universities, and to assist in the reformation of religion. It was Dr. Peter Martyr: who, after his fleeing away hence in the beginning of

this queen's reign, wrote several letters to his correspondents concerning himself and the overthrow of religion here, and of the condition of the English professors of the gospel, both at home and abroad, soon after the queen's coming to reign. As,

In November, 1553, when he made a narrow escape out of England. Which he looked upon as an extraordinary piece of God's good providence towards him : Thus he described it in a letter writ to Calvin,

Peter Martyr's escape out of England. *Epist. Theol.*

from Strasburgh. *Quâ ratione Deus eripuerit me,* &c. i. e. " By what means God snatched him from the mouth of the lion, as yet he knew not himself : and much less could he signify to him (Calvin) : But that as Peter, brought out of prison by an angel, thought the things that were done, but in a dream ; so he even yet could scarce think it true, that he was there at Strasburgh, safe and sound. And this, as he wrote, he was minded first of all to shew to him, that he, together with himself and all other good brethren, might give God thanks : And that he would exhort his holy church, that they, earnestly, with most ardent prayers, would beg of God to obtain help ; whereby that evil, which then pressed the English church, might be eased.

" That the archbishops of Canterbury and York, *viz.* Cranmer and Holgate, and the Bishops of Worcester and Exon, *viz.* Hooper and Coverdale, besides many other learned and godly divines, were taken up and committed to jayls, and were like to suffer death for the Gospel : specially since Gardiner bishop of Winchester, a man of a severe and cruel disposition, now managed all church matters." But there

was one thing that had something very remarkable, which he on this occasion communicated to Calvin, viz. "That even in this dismal prospect of misery and persecution, it was the judgment almost of all, that this reign would not last long; and that they were wise men, who had no light conjectures thereof." Which, indeed, proved true.

By another letter, wrote in May, 1554, to the same person, he informed him; "That very sad news was brought from England; that is, that the parliament there had assented to restore to the pope his tyrannies, (*sua tyrannissima.*) And that Philip be, and so held, King of England: That there was every where a flight of good men, who could possibly get away: That there was then with them (at Strasburgh) three very excellent knights, Morison, Cheek, and Cook; men not less eminent for piety than learning. That the state of religion was in that kingdom, in effect, not only afflicted, but destroyed; which he recommended to his prayers, and his church's. That it was certain, that the Archbishop of Canterbury and the rest of the bishops, detained captives, were in extreme danger."

And in another letter written by him in January, the same year, to another person of quality unknown (whom he styled, *Vir Charissimus*) thus he relates the sad state of this kingdom: "That he was daily more and more taught by experience it self, that death, by the death of Edward, that most holy King of England, was become the lot of a great many members of the church: And that it was bringing with it such loss, as many then did not see. But he beseeched God,

Sad News  
from Eng-  
land.  
Papatus in  
Angliare  
restauratus

The pre-  
sent sad  
State of  
England,  
Amico cui-  
dam.

the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, to grant, that they might not see it ; and that much sorrow, within a short time after, they might not also feel. But that for his part, he should be a stone and a lump of lead, if, what share soever he had felt of those things, he should not groan bitterly for the miserable case of his most famous brethren (ministers and learned professors of the gospel) and their present dangers both of mind and body : Yea, if he should not accompany every day, with just fears, the so great evils and miseries of that people ; while they were then exceedingly afflicted, and exposed every where to offences ; set on fire at all hours with flames of temptation : while the church was trodden upon, and laid under foot with the highest impiety of hypocrites.” And then he asketh this question, “ How could it possibly be, that he, and such as he, should grieve slightly and but a little (*temperatè ac mediocriter*) while he had read to, and taught there, many learned persons, and students of divinity, and such as were proficient, not to be repented of ; whose harvest was near ripe ; whom now he was forced to see wandering in uncertain places, or else remaining at home unhappily subverted ?

He proceeded further to describe these miseries in the ruin of a Noble Church, as he styled this begun reformation of the Church of England under King Edward ; and of the imprisonment of the learned and godly bishops ; and of their barbarous executions like to follow, as though they were rogues and the worst of malefactors. And then concludes, “ How these and other things, that called for sorrow, would not



suffer him to abide with a quiet mind and spirit : Wherefore, he prayed God from his heart, that he would remit something of these heavy punishments ; and for Christ's sake forbear, in some measure, pouring out his so great displeasure. Otherwise, they should soon be utterly oppressed with the weight of these huge evils. And that at length, which he earnestly begged of his friend to whom he wrote this sad account, that he would now and then beseech God, that he would at last take pity of miserable England, and of the state of good learning there.

Many of the English nation fled abroad ; and, among the rest, divers that were students in divinity ; who took this opportunity to follow their studies in such places where they came, and had the benefit of hearing learned men's lectures. And namely, among other cities, Zurich, or Tigur in Helvetia ; where they were entertained with all respect and tenderness by Bullinger and Gualter, and Wolphius, and other chief ministers and magistrates there. Horn, a learned man, and who was afterwards Bishop of Winchester, passing by Strasburgh, visited P. Martyr aforesaid, and acquainted him with the settlement of the English there ; and of their good and commendable progress in their studies, and adherence to religion : And, as it may be concluded, counselled that learned professor to write a comfortable and exhortatory letter to them. Which he did in September, 1554, with this superscription : "*Omnibus Anglis, qui Tiguri degunt in Sanctâ Societate, dilectis Deo, et mihi in Christo charissimis.*" The tenor whereof was :

P. Martyr's  
Letter to  
the Exiles,  
Students at  
Zuric. Epis.  
Theol.

“ That when his good brother, Mr. Horn, passed that way (*viz.* Strasburgh) he had much discourse with him concerning them, his most dear and most desired brethren in Christ. That altho' he was absent in body from the sight of them, yet he was most nearly joined with them in a living spirit. That from him he heard such things of them, as he wished and desired ; and which (he thanked God) exceedingly delighted him. For he related, how they cherished godliness among them, and increased in it ; and that every one of them set himself to learning and study : and how they strove among themselves in an innocent conversation, and in profitable and honest exercises, with a very commendable emulation. He therefore blessed God for his goodness, whom it had pleased so notably to gather such a fruit from so great a shipwreck. That he was wont so to do ; and that it was the manner of the Divine Clemency, that from ruins, by a wonderful counsel, he snatched out some remnants, to the glory of his name : Whereby he restored things overthrown ; and builded up things gone to decay.

“ Moreover, this their recess he did wonderfully congratulate, in which he heard they so behaved themselves, that they not only lived to themselves, but to the edifying of one Christ and his members (meaning in love and unity.) That which remained was, that they should finish what they had begun. Because, as they well knew, to begin excellent things, was wont to excite the expectations of men ; which at length should end in plentiful and pious thanksgivings ; when such things as were holily begun, were

vigourously concluded. Which, if they were left imperfect, would begin a just grief to godly men, and their friends; and besides cause laughter to the enemies, and wicked sort.

“ Nor did what he said tend, as though he any thing doubted of their perseverance. For, concerning that, he promised himself, that he that had begun in them a good work, would carry the same on to the end. And besides, he saw them endued from God with so great strength and constancy, that he doubted not their house was not built upon the sand, but a firm rock: But his intent in thus addressing to them, was only to applaud them who ran well; and to discourse with them of the end, which he was persuaded they propounded to themselves in this their enterprize, and which he understood was expected of all good men from them. Nor did he think it needed his pains to praise their holy counsel, and pious purpose; because the profit was of it self evident.”

And so he went on, exhorting them to follow their studies, and shewing the advantage of this retirement for that purpose and end; with his prayer for them, and begging their prayers for him. Dated from Argentine (that is, Strasburgh) the 30th of September, 1554.

And it was a happy retreat, both to them and the whole nation, being a means of improving them, in this vacation, in good and useful learning; and hence supplying the church with pious, learned, and able men. For this sorrowful scene of misery lasted not long, and ended with that queen. The exiles returned. Religion was restored: The church furnished with

excellent bishops and pastors. And what steps were taken, and holy methods pursued, in settling religion under Queen Elizabeth, may be seen partly in the conclusion of the History of the Reformation, by Bishop Burnet, and more at large in the Annals of the Reformation, in the first twelve years of that queen's reign; and also in The Life and Acts of Archbishop Parker. Which books may serve for a continuance of these Ecclesiastical Memorials: Wherein the Account of the Affairs of the Church are carried on to a greater length. And whither I betake the reader.

J. S.

THE  
**C O N T E N T S**  
 OF THE  
**THIRD VOLUME.**

---

THE SECOND PART OF  
**THE REIGN OF KING EDWARD VI.**

\*.\* *The paging in the Margin refers the Reader to the paging of the  
 Folio Edition, 1721.*

---

**BOOK II. CHAPTER I.**

- |   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| <p><b>THE</b> Lady Mary's concern with the king and council, for retaining mass in her family. Dr. Mallet her chaplain. The councils letter to her concerning her chaplains. The emperor interposes for the Lady Mary to have mass. Her resolution. Her letter to the king. Resolutions of council hereupon taken. . . . . p. 1 to 13</p> <p><b>CHAP. II.</b> The king writes to King Sigismond: And the Duke of Florence. Payments of the Army. Lord Darcy created. Merchants of Calais. The King takes up money. The college of Galway. The council for Wales. Lords lieutenants. Forts . . . . . p. 13 to 21</p> <p><b>CHAP. III.</b> Embassies and businesses abroad in Scotland and France; and to the Emperor. Dr. Wotton sent ambassador. His business. About the Lady Mary's mass. The affairs of Ireland. The match with France. The French ambassador comes about it. Herman, Archbishop of Colen . . . . . p. 21 to 34</p> <p><b>CHAP. IV.</b> Sir John Gates advanced. Grants to him. Occurrences. The bishopric of Winton diminished. Regulation of coin. Coverdale preferred to Exeter. The sweating sickness. Henry, Duke of Suffolk, dies. A dearth. Orders to the bishops. Bishop Scory's letter to the king. Duke of Somerset's new troubles . . . . . p. 35 to 54</p> <p><b>CHAP. V.</b> The Marquis of Dorset advanced. Polydore Virgil. A Lasco. The army mustered before the king. The Scots queen entertained. Reports in Germany. Sir James Crofts, Lord Admiral, goes into France. Barnaby Fitz Patric. Guisnes to be surveyed . . . . . p. 55 to 66</p> <p><b>CHAP. VI.</b> England jealous of the Emperor. The Bishop of Ely hath the great seal delivered up by the Lord Rich. His rise and wealth. Some account of the Bishop of Ely. Richard Turner, D.D. A Mint at York. Merchants of the Stilyard . . . . . p. 66 to 79</p> | <p><b>ANNO</b><br/>       1551,</p> |
| <p><b>VOL. III.</b></p>   | <p><b>b</b></p>                     |



- ANNIS 1551. CHAP. VII. The king's chaplains. William Thomas his grants. Thomas Rose, Hugh Goodacre, eminent divines, preferred. The king's deliberations. Annuities for the chaplains. The bishopric of Bristol fleeced. Enquiry into the king's revenue. Commissions . . . . . p. 79 to 85
- CHAP. VIII. Dr. Redman dies. Some account of him. Commissions for making ecclesiastical laws. Bullinger's correspondence in England. Dr. Cox's letter to him. Conferences about the sacrament. The Duke of Somerset's end: Brought about by Northumberland, and some others. Somerset's friends and dependents. Edward Seymour restored . . . . . p. 85 to 103
- CHAP. IX. The king's debts. More's Utopia in English. Epistles of Bucer's death: and other books printed now. Bible printed in folio. Bishop Ridley's ordination of ministers. A parliament. Private acts. A bill for apparel. Forms of wills and testaments . . . . . p. 103 to 118
1552. CHAP. X. France and Cesar apply to the king. The king congratulates the elector of Saxony. Gresham the king's agent in Antwerp. The French successes against the emperor. The English incline to the emperor. Jealousies of Steukley's intelligence thence. Minutes of council for breaking with France. Fitz Patric sent for home. Steukley omitted. French commission for sea affairs . p. 119 to 137
- CHAP. XI. An embassy to the emperor. Morison's address to him. The king offers aid against the Turk. p. 137 to 144
- CHAP. XII. The king's military exercises. A splendid muster before him in Greenwich Park. The dearth. Lady Mary comes to court. The king's progress. Occurrences. A monstrous child born. Strange fishes taken in the Thames. The king consults for the state of religion; and the realm. His device for raising money . . . . . p. 144 to 159
- CHAP. XIII. Matters of Ireland. The emperor raises money in the Low Countries. Antwerp. The English merchants there. Buckholt's process against the king . p. 160 to 170
- CHAP. XIV. Disturbance in Buckinghamshire. Bishop Hoper visits. The bishoprics of Worcester and Gloucester united. The Duke of Somerset's daughters. The Dutchess, &c. The king goes a progress. The gestic therof. The duke of Northumberland goes into the North. Lord Guilford Dudley. The Bishop of Bath's exchanges. Dr. Walter Haddon, &c. The king's sales of church lands. Merchants of Bristol, &c. . . . . p. 170 to 188
- CHAP. XV. A commission for enquiry into heresies. The new service. The Bishop of Durham's troubles. Deprived. A synod. Articles of religion framed: and a catechism, confirmed. Articles for uniformity. Bernard Gilpius's sermon at court . . . . . p. 189 to 200



- CHAP. XVI. New sergeants. Lady Mary visits the king. The king's sales. Alasco's judgment of the ceremonies. Divers books printed. Leland, the antiquarian, dies p. 200 to 213
- CHAP. XVII. Commissioners from France. Corruptions at court. Paget, Beaumont, and the Earl of Arundel: Their submissions. The University of Rostock's letter to the king. The king's diligence and good example. Free schools by him founded . . . . . p. 213 to 223
- CHAP. XVIII. Popery in Corpus Christi College, Oxon. Dr. Heins dies. Immanuel Tremellius preferred. Bishop Ponet's book. Knox at Newcastle. Lady Anne of Cleves. Day, late bishop, his judgment about altars. Commissions. Sir William Bowyer. Ordinations of ministers. Places and offices bestowed . . . . . p. 223 to 236
- CHAP. XIX. A parliament. The bishopric of Durham dissolved. A general pardon. Certain excepted. The king removes to Greenwich. Knox's last sermon at court. Summoned before the council. Earls of Pembroke, and Westmorland. Sir Andrew Dudley. Sir John Williams. Melancthon. North-east passage. Archbishop Holgate p. 236 to 250
- CHAP. XX. A design to enter into leaguc with the Protestant princes. The present condition of the emperor. The embassy to him from England. Letters from the English ambassadors, concerning the state of the Low Countries . . . . . p. 250 to 266
- CHAP. XXI. The king's ambassadors in France, and to King Ferdinand, and to the Emperor. Their access to his presence. Instructions sent them for their proceedings . . . . . p. 267 to 278
- CHAP. XXII. Order for subscription to the articles of religion: And for the teaching and learning of the Catechism set forth by the king's authority. Irish matters. The Duke of Northumberland. Lady Mary's letter to the king. Divers great matches. The king's gift to London, &c. The king's death. His last will. His funerals, &c. His character p. 278 to 306
- CHAP. XXIII. A view of the manners of all sorts of men in these times: Nobility, gentry, ycomanry, judges; the poor, the clergy . . . . . p. 306 to 321
- CHAP. XXIV. Observations concerning patrons; the Universities: the city and court. Taxes in this reign . . . . . p. 321 to 333
- CHAP. XXV. Creations of noblemen. The king's counsellors; Courtiers and great officers . . . . . p. 333 to 341
- CHAP. XXVI. A catalogue of the bishops in this king's reign; with remarks upon them . . . . . p. 341 to 352

ANNIS  
1552,

1553,

- CHAP. XXVII. A catalogue of divers letters, orders of council, commissions, &c. sent and given out in this reign p. 352 to 357
- CHAP. XXVIII. Animadversions upon the History of the Life and Reign of King Edward VI. written by Sir John Hayward . . . . . p. 357 to 377
- CHAP. XXIX. Commissions and proclamations, issued out from the king upon divers occasions, annis 1550, 1551, 1552, 1553 . . . . . p. 377 to 394
- CHAP. XXX. Divers acts of the king's grace and favour, shewed to his courtiers and others . . . . . p. 394 to 420
- CHAP. XXXI. A collection of various letters, warrants, and licences from the king; both to foreigners and his subjects . . . . . p. 421 to 439
- CHAP. XXXII. Collations, presentations, grants, indulgences, and permissions to churchmen; and men of the Universities . . . . . p. 439 to 461
- CHAP. XXXIII. A catalogue of King Edward's free grammar schools, founded by him. More private matters concerning the king's household. The conclusion . . . . . p. 461 to 470

\* \* \* The Original Records, Letters, &c. to illustrate and confirm these *Memorials* may be found in the SIXTH volume of this Work, p. 267 to the end.

# MEMORIALS ECCLESIASTICAL, p. 249.

&c. &c. &c.

---

---

## BOOK II.

---

---

### CHAPTER I.

The Lady Mary's concern with the king and council, for retaining mass in her family. Dr. Mallet her chaplain. The emperor interposes for the Lady Mary to have mass.

**T**HE Lady Mary's zeal for her religion created <sup>1550.</sup> her and her chaplains and servants, this and the ensuing year, no little trouble. An office having been <sup>Mass continued in the Lady Mary's house.</sup> composed for the communion and public prayers in English, which was enjoined by parliament to be used throughout England, all were required, by proclamation, to receive it with due reverence: but the Lady Mary would not admit it by any means in her family, but kept herself to the old mass, notwithstanding many messages and intimations from the king and his council, to dissuade her, and to forbid the use of it.

So it fell out, that in November Dr. Mallet and <sup>Her chaplain indicted for saying mass.</sup> Mr. Barkley, her two chaplains, were indicted for certain things committed by them, contrary to the king's laws; and process for them was awarded forth, and delivered to the sheriff of Essex. And she seeming to defend them, the council wrote to her, requiring

1550. her, as soon as they, or either of them, returned to her house, to surrender them up unto the sheriff, who had a warrant from the king to attach them; or if it liked her not, then to warn them from her house, and not to keep them there to be defended as it were from the justice of the law. Mallet's fault was, that he  
 p. 250. said mass at Newhall to her family, newly removed thither from Woodham Water, she following, but as yet not being there; to whom, in her closet only, he ought to have said it. Alexander Barkley, her other chaplain, was vicar of Much Badow, in Essex; and he, thinking to bear out himself with the authority of his mistress, had said mass in his church, contrary to the king's statutes and proceedings: but he submitted, and, after some months' imprisonment, had his pardon in May, 1551.

The letter of the lords of the council to the Lady Mary, concerning her chaplains, was this:

The council to Lady Mary.  
 Otho. C.  
 10.

“ After our due commendations unto your grace. Where two of your chaplains, the one named Dr. Mallet, the other Barkley, be indicted for certain things committed by them contrary to the king's majesty's laws; for-whom process is also awarded forth, and delivered to our loving friend Sir George Norton, Kt. sheriff of Essex: Forasmuch as we understand, that the one of your said chaplains doth continually attend about you, albeit we nothing doubt but your conformity and obedience to the king's majesty is such, that of yourself you will most readily cause any your servants, whatsoever they be, to obey humbly his majesty's officers and ministers for the execution of justice; yet being desirous, in respect of your grace's honour, to have this process executed in as quiet sort as may be, we have thought good to pray your grace to give order, that your said chaplain, remaining in your house, may be delivered to the sheriff at such time, as he, or any his deputy, shall come for him, to answer to the laws for such matters as he is charged withal. And thus wishing your grace long

continuance of health, we pray Almighty God to have you in his blessed keeping. 1550

Your Grace's assured,

From Westminster, this  
2 Decemb. 1550.

<i>E. Somerset,</i>	<i>W. Northt,</i>
<i>T. Cant,</i>	<i>T. Ely,</i>
<i>J. Warwick,</i>	<i>A. Wyngfeld,</i>
<i>E. Clynton,</i>	<i>W. Wilts,</i>
<i>J. Bedford,</i>	<i>H. Dorset,</i>
<i>T. Wentworth,</i>	<i>T. Darcy,</i>
<i>T. Cheyne,</i>	<i>R. Sadleyr."</i>

Upon this passed several letters between her grace and the council, both in this and the next year (viz. that of 1551), she vindicating her chaplain, inasmuch as he had done no more than what she had bidden him, and so, if any fault were committed, it was her's rather than his. And in justification of herself, she urged a promise, thrice repeated, which the king and council had granted the emperor's ambassador on her behalf, which was, that she should have leave to have mass said before her, and be exempted from the danger of the statute. But they told her, in a letter dated Decemb. 25, 1550, that, "A promise was indeed made a good while ago to the ambassador, that mass in her own closet should be suffered and winked at; but that it was to be but a while, till she were better informed, and only a few of her own chamber to be present with her; but that to the rest of her household, the communion service should be used." She writes in behalf of her chaplain imprisoned

They signified to her moreover, what they said to the emperor's ambassador, that came to intercede for her to have the mass, viz. "That they had only reduced that which was commonly called the mass, to the order of the primitive church, and the institution of Christ; with which the king and the whole realm had their consciences well quieted." They added, "That it had foundation in scripture upon plain texts, and no glosses, and confirmed by the use of the primitive church. That the greatest change was, not in the substance of their faith, nor in any one article of their" p. 251.

The council argue with her about the new communion book.



1550. creed, but only the difference was, that they used the ceremonies, observations and sacraments of their religion, as the apostles and first fathers of the church did : whereas, she used the same, that corruption of time had brought in, and very barbarity and ignorance nourished. She held," they said, "for custom against truth, they for truth against custom. And whereas she had urged earnestly the maintenance of her faith, they asked her, Where her grace had ground for such a faith, to think common prayer in the English church should not be in English ; that images of God should be set up in the church ; or that the sacrament of the body and blood of Christ should be offered by the priest for the dead ? And that though she had no scripture to maintain them, they had plain scripture to forbid them. They took notice also, how she had baptism ministred in her house the old way, in a tongue unknown ; whereby," they said, "the best part of the sacrament was unused, and as it were a blind bargain made by the godfathers." This excellent letter, which I suppose was drawn by the pen of Archbishop Cranmer, is extant in Fox.

Acts and  
Mon. p.  
1215.

The emperor's ambassador  
interposes.  
Coun.  
Book.  
1551.

But all convinced her not ; and she procured the emperor to interpose again in her behalf. For the emperor's ambassador, Feb. 16, put the council in remembrance of their promise made unto them for the Lady Mary, that she should be suffered to use mass in her family ; upon which promise, she had hitherto used it ; wherefore the emperor trusted, she should still do the same, till the king came to years of perfection. Answer was made, that the council would advise, and in three or four days give full answer.

The Lady  
Mary  
comes to  
court,

I do not find, neither in the king's Journal, nor Council Book, what answer the council gave to the ambassador. But March 18, the Lady Mary, being summoned, I suppose, to come up, made her appearance at court, and came to the king at Westminster ; where she with the council was called into a chamber. And then she was told, how long the king had born



with her, and that having now no more hope, as appeared by the purport of her letters, the king could not bear it any longer, without some sudden amendment. But she answered resolutely, her soul was God's, and her faith she would not change, nor dissemble her opinion by contrary doings. It was told her, that the king constrained not her faith; but willed her not to rule as a king, but obey as a subject. And the very next day, March 19, the emperor's ambassador came boldly with a short message from his master for war, except his cousin the princess, as he called her, might have mass. To this no answer was then given. The 20th day, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishops of London and Rochester, were consulted with in this point; who told the council, that to give licence to sin was sin, nevertheless they thought the king might suffer, or wink at it for a time. In the mean time, March 22, Mr. Rochester, comptroller to the Lady Mary, was before the council, and being asked, how many chaplains she had? He said, four; viz. Dr. Mallet, Hopton, Barker, and Richards. The next day, March 23, the result of the council was, that Dean Wotton should be sent to the emperor, to signify, that the king did wholly deny this request to the Lady Mary. And in the mean season it was resolved to punish the offenders that heard mass; first, such as were his own servants, and next, her's. Hereupon, March 24, Sir Anthony Brown was sent to the Fleet for hearing mass, with Serjeant Morgan; and the Council Book sets this note upon Morgan, that he could not excuse himself, because, that being so learned a man, he gave an ill example unto others. And Sir Clement Smith, who had heard mass, though it were a year before, received a reprimand.

1551.

p. 252.

March 25, 1551, the emperor's ambassador came to the council to receive his answer; but they gave none other, but that one should be sent to the emperor within a month or two, to declare the matter. And accordingly, April 10, Wotton had instructions

An ambassador sent to the emperor.

1351. to repair in embassy to the emperor, and to be ambassador ledger there; chiefly to give the reasons of the king and his council, why the emperor's ambassador, and the Lady Mary, were denied to have mass said before them; and to make this resolution before the emperor: "That if he would suffer the king's ambassador with him to use his service, then the king would suffer the emperor's ambassador to use his: but if he would not suffer the king's ambassador, neither would the king suffer the emperor's ambassador. And that as to his sister, she was his subject, and therefore should use the service appointed by act of parliament to be used by all his people."

K. Edw.  
Jour.

The council forbade Dr. Mallet to say mass in the Lady Mary's family; which nevertheless he did, and was forgiven. Therefore, April 29, being before them, they asked him, why, after he had been once forgiven, he would again wilfully offend the laws in saying mass, &c.? He could not deny but that he had done ill in it. But forasmuch as, beside this lewd doing, he had also persuaded others of the king's subjects to embrace his naughty opinions, he was committed to the Tower. This warning was no more than the king had given to his own servants.

Mallet sent  
to the  
Tower.  
Counc.  
Book.

The Lady  
Mary to  
the council  
hereupon.

Hereupon the Lady Mary sent letters to the council, dated May 2 and 11, and June 21, marvelling at the imprisonment of Mallet, her chaplain, for saying mass before her household; seeing it was promised the emperor's ambassador she should not be molested in her religion, but that she and her household should have the mass said before them continually. They answered, "That because of their duty to the king, country, and friends, they were compelled to give her this answer: That they would see not only him, but also all other mass-sayers and breakers of order straitly punished. And that, as for the promise, they had not, nor would give none, to make her free from the punishment of the law in that behalf." But it seems mass was, notwithstanding, continued in her house; which gave great offence.

In the month of July she was at Richmond; where the king, as before he had sent her a kind letter, so now he sent her a gracious and obliging message by the lord great master, the lord privy seal, and one of the secretaries. And on this occasion she wrote the king a letter (which these noblemen seem to be the carriers of) chiefly to shew how unwavering she continued in her formerly declared purpose about religion; and the rather, because some seemed to have informed the king of her inclinableness to conform to the late establishment of it; which letter I think worthy the inserting, and was as follows:

1551.  
p. 253.  
The king  
sends a  
gracious  
message to  
her.

*“ Most excellent and noble Prince, and my  
most benign and good brodre,*

“ I do most humbly thank you for your great goodness, favour and liberality, which, as well by your majesty’s own letters, as by the report and declaration of your counsellors, the lord great master, the lord privy seal, and your grace’s secretary, I perceive it hath pleased you to determine towards me. Whereunto I have no more to answer, but that I shal ever remain your majestie’s most humble suster and servant, according to such letters as I have written to your highness, and to such advertisement as I have given to your grace by your said counsellors; which is correspondent and agreable to my first mind and answer, made at the first opening of the matter to me. From the which, as I neither have varied from the beginning, ne wol vary hereafter; so, if any man have said the contrary, I assure your grace that he hath don it without my consent or commission. Thus I beseech our Lord to send your majesty long life, with good health, and perpetual felicity. From Richmond, the 16th of July.

Her letter  
to him.  
Titus, B. 2.

Your majesty’s humble suster  
and servant.”

August the 9th, there met at Richmond twenty-four lords of the king’s council, to discourse concern-

The reso-  
lution of  
the lords

1551.  
for the  
Lady  
Mary.  
Council  
Book.

ing the Lady Mary; who agreed, that it was not convenient she should be suffered any longer to use her mass against the order of the Book of Common Prayer appointed; and it was resolved, that the officers of the Lady Mary's house should be sent for, and charged not to suffer any other divine service to be used in her house, but such as was permitted by the law. And that the chaplains should be prohibited to say mass, and the servants of the house forbid to hear it. And a letter hereof to be sent from the king to the Lady Mary. And thereof they made an instrument, signed with their hands and seals.

Her officers  
sent for.

August the 11th, a warrant was ordered to be sent to the officers of the Lady Mary's house, to appear before the council on the 13th instant: and a second letter sent to the same import.

They ap-  
pear.

August the 13th (or rather the 14th) at Hampton-Court, appeared before the council Robert Rochester, comptroller of the Lady Mary's house, Edward Waldgrave, and Sir Francis Inglefield. It was to let her know by them rather than by strangers, the less to molest her, that it was their order that the Communion Book should be used hereafter in her family: and to inhibit her chaplains to say mass before her in her house, or in any other place; and neither themselves, nor any of the family to hear mass, on pain of the king's displeasure. This message was given them, with a letter from the king of that purport, to be by them delivered to her. Rochester made many excuses; but was commanded on his allegiance to see the matter executed. And in case her grace should dismiss him out of her service, (as he pretended she would for doing this message) he and the rest were commanded on the king's behalf not to leave the service and the house, but to stay and see the order fulfilled.

p. 254.

The con-  
tents of the  
king's let-  
ter.

In the letter which the king now sent to her, he reminded her of the speeches and letters that he had used with her formerly, to persuade her to obedience; as also the letters of the council that had been sent



to her for that purpose, to reduce her to conformity and agreeableness in religion. He observed, as he wrote, that she was more wedded to her own mind after all this, than she was before; insomuch, as she refused so much as to hear any learned man, to inform her rightly of these matters. He added, that he was minded to take a more earnest regard to the reformation of her family, for the preservation of the authority of the laws thus broken and contemned, and for the glory of Almighty God; which were the causes that he had sent for her officers; by whom should be signified unto her his commandment in respect of her family. He that will read the letter itself, I refer him to the Cotton Library: it is not any where as yet published, as many other of the letters relating to this transaction are. 1551.

What followed upon this, I present as I found it in a manuscript of the said Library.

“ This day (being Aug. 22) Mr. Rochester, Sir Francis Inglefeld, and Mr. Walgrave, officers to the Lady Mary’s grace, were before the lords, and declared unto their lordships, that upon Saturday the 15th of this present, they arrived at Copped-Hall, somewhat before night; by reason whereof they did not the same night execute their charge committed to them at Hampton-Court the 14th of this present. The Sunday following, being the 16th of this present, because they understood that her grace received the sacrament (for so they termed it) they did abstain to deliver their letters before noon, considering that the same would trouble and disquiet her. So as after dinner taking commodity to declare their letters, after that her grace had read them, they made offer to her to declare what charge they had received of the lords to execute; praying her grace to be contented to hear the same. Whereupon her grace made answer, that she knew right well, that their commission was agreeing with such matters as was contained in her letters; and that therefore they needed not rehearse the same. Howbeit then pressing her grace, she was finally con-

Otho,  
C. 10.

Her officers’ message to her, from the council.  
Titus, B. 2.  
p. 68.

1551.  
How an-  
grily she  
received it.

p. 255.

tent to hear them. And when they had don, she seemed to be marvailously offended with them; and charged them, that they should not declare that same they had in charge to say, neither to her chaplains nor family; which if they did, besides that they should not take her hereafter for their mistress, she would immediately depart out of the house. Upon this, as the said Rochester, Inglefeld and Walgrave said to the lords, that forasmuch as she oftentimes altered her colour, and seemed to be passionate and unquiet, they forbare to trouble her any farther; fearing that troubling of her might perchance bring her into her old disease; and besought her to consider the matter calmly with herself, and pass thereupon against Wednesday next, when they would wait on her grace, and know her further pleasure; which, they said, they did, hoping to have found her then, upon more ripe deliberation, and debating of the matter with herself, more conformable. And in the mean time they forbare also to declare to her chaplains and houshold the charge they had received. But repairing to her grace the said Wednesday, being the 19th of this present, they did not only not find her conformable, but in further choler than she was before; utterly forbidding them to make declaration of their said charge and commission to her chaplains and houshold: adding, that where she and her houshold were in quiet, if they would by any means disturb her and them, if any inconvenience did ensue thereof to her or them, she would (attribute) it to the said Rochester, Inglefeld and Walgrave: which thing considered, they thought it better to return without doing their commission, and declare this much to their lordships, without meddling any further, then to procede in the execution of their charge before they had advertised their lordships of the premises.

“The lords having heard this much, commanded them to attend, until they should know further of their pleasures.

“The said Rochester, Inglefeld and Walgrave,



brought with them letters from the Lady Mary's grace to the king's majesty." Thus far, and no farther, the Cotton Manuscript, which is but a transcript out of the Council Book. The rest I supply out of the Council Book and the King's Journal 1551.

August 23. Rochester, Inglefeld and Walgrave, appeared again: and they were severally, one by one, charged with not obeying the king's Injunctions, in not prohibiting the chaplains to say mass, and the family to hear it in the Lady Mary's house: but that, contrary to order and directions of the council, troubled the Lady Mary, by doing the message to herself, and not to the chaplains and family. Hereupon they were strictly charged each one to repair to the Lady Mary's house, and do the charge enjoined them according to the order and directions of the council, upon their allegiance, and by the king's special command. They all refused to do it. Rochester and Inglefeld said, they would endure any punishment or imprisonment: and Inglefeld alledged, that he could not find in his heart or conscience to do it. They were commanded to attend continually the council, until such time as they should know their further pleasure. Her officers again before the council.

The 26th of August, the Lord Chancellor (Rich) Sir Anthony Wyngfeld, (comptroller of the king's house) and Sir William Petre, (secretary) were sent to the Lady Mary with a letter and message: and in default of her said officers, were to declare to her the meaning of that promise made to the emperor in her behalf: and calling before them all her chaplains and household servants, to command the former to use no other service than what was by law established, and the latter not to be present at any other service, upon pain of most strait imprisonment. This message was carried Aug. 28, being Friday. The Lord Chancellor and two other privy counsellors sent to her. Council Book.

Aug. 29, they made report to the council of what they had done: and then it was appointed, that the lord chancellor, lord chamberlain, the vice-chamberlain, and Secretary Petre, should see by all means Her house is appointed to be watched. King's Journ.

1551. they could, whether she used the mass; and if so,  
 p. 256. that the law should be executed on her chaplains.  
 At this very time certain pinnaces were prepared for  
 secret conveyance away of the Lady Mary over  
 sea: the doing of which was practised by the em-  
 peror.

Her ser-  
 vants sent  
 to the  
 Tower.  
 Council  
 Book.

Aug. 31, the Lady Mary's three servants afore-  
 said, who had been two days before committed to the  
 Fleet, were sent to the Tower. And the council  
 ordered the warden of the Fleet to convey them  
 through the bridge to the Tower, to be had there  
 severally: and the lieutenant of the Tower to receive  
 and keep them close prisoners from speaking to any  
 man, and not to let them have pen, ink and paper.  
 And because she might have need of her comp-  
 troller, another was sent by the king to supply his  
 absence.

The empe-  
 ror's am-  
 bassador  
 interposes  
 for the  
 relief of  
 them.  
 King's  
 Journ.  
 The an-  
 swer given  
 him.

Sept. 5, the emperor's ambassador came to the  
 court, and required that the Lady Mary's officers should  
 be restored to their liberty, and that she might have  
 her mass, till the emperor was certified of these things.  
 He was answered, that the king needed not to answer,  
 except he listed, because the ambassador spake with-  
 out commission, which was evident by the shortness  
 of the time since the commitment of the officers, of  
 which the emperor could not be so soon advertised.  
 He was willed no more to move these piques without  
 commission, in which he had been often answered.  
 He was moreover told, that by this time the emperor  
 was advertised, (by the king's own ambassador) of  
 his dealings with his sister, although the matter per-  
 tained not unto him. It was told him also, that the  
 king had done nothing but according to a king's office  
 herein, in observing the laws that were so godly, and  
 in punishing the offenders: and that the promise  
 made to the emperor was not so made as he pre-  
 tended, (that is, that she should always have the  
 liberty of having mass said in her family,) as was  
 affirmed by Sir Philip Hoby, being at that time am-  
 bassador there.

Sept. 27th, Walgrave being sick in the Tower, <sup>1551.</sup> his wife had leave to repair to him for his relief, and <sup>Walgrave is sick in the Tower.</sup> to provide for the recovery of his health. And October 24th, it was ordered, that he should be removed out of the Tower by the lieutenant to some honest house, where he might be better looked to, <sup>Removed. Council Book.</sup> for the curing of his quartan ague: remaining still as a prisoner, and to be forthcoming whensoever he should be called for.

March 18th, Rochester, Walgrave and Inglefeld, <sup>They had leave to go home.</sup> had leave to go out of the Tower, for their health's sake, to their own homes. And,

April 24th, 1552, they were set at liberty, and <sup>Set at liberty.</sup> had leave to repair to the Lady Mary, upon her request. But leaving the said lady with her servants thus restored to her, let us proceed to other matters; looking back upon the year, and taking up several transactions in the state not yet mentioned.

## CHAP. II.

p. 257.

The king writes to King Sigismond, and the Duke of Florence. Payments of the army. Lord Darcy created. Merchants of Calais. The king takes up money. The college of Galway. The council for Wales. Lords Lieutenants. Forts.

**T**HE king, March 25th, 1551, wrote a letter of thanks to Sigismond, King of Poland, on this occasion: some quarrel depending between Robert Helsen, the king's subject, and Ludolph Rull, a stranger, and, as it seems, one of Dantsig, about some matters of merchandize, their cause came before the senate of the said city; who were too partial to Rull, so that the other could have no justice: therefore an appeal came before the said King Sigismond; who gave a more favourable hearing of Helsen's cause. Which being well taken of King Edward and his council, a kind letter was addressed to him. <sup>A letter to the King of Poland.</sup>

A good understanding was maintained between the Duke of Florence and the king. There was now <sup>The king's request to the Duke of Florence.</sup>

1551. found out a new and more useful order of martial discipline in Italy, (which country now bred many good soldiers) and chiefly practised under that duke; which coming to the king's knowledge, he desired of the said duke to have a plat or a scheme of the said new discipline; which he accordingly in two friendly letters communicated to the king. For which the king in March wrote him a letter of thanks. And lest any offence should arise to the duke about a ship of his country which was laden hither with grain, and taken to the king's use (of which the duke had taken notice to him in a letter) it being now a scarce time in England, the king certified the duke, that according to his request, there should be a reasonable price set thereon, to his contentation.

Payments  
for the dis-  
charge of  
the army  
in France.

Though a treaty of peace were concluded with France the last year, by which he parted with Boloign, and other places there, it was not before this year, in the month of March, that he could disband his soldiers in those parts, and ease his great burthens of payments to them. For the payment therefore of these debts, he remitted this March to Sir Richard Cotton, his treasurer there, 2000*l.* towards the charges yet unpaid for Boloign and Newhaven. More to him 1000*l.* towards the defrayment of the king's charges of Newhaven and Blackness. More to him 1000*l.* to be employed by him for the debts unpaid of divers soldiers and artificers, for service and work done at Dover, Boloign, Newhaven and Blackness. More to Sir Maurice Denys (who, I think, was treasurer of Calais) 4000*l.* to be by him employed about the king's payments in his charge, or to be delivered over by him to Sir John Clere, treasurer of the king's army, as cause shall require. More to him 1000*l.* to be employed by him about the king's payments, for the discharge of his soldiers yet at Calais remaining unpaid. To Sir Anthony Aucher (the king's victualler) 1000*l.* towards the payment of provisions at Boloign. More to him towards the preparation of certain presents of cup-



boards of plate, to be delivered, by way of his majesty's reward, to the ambassadors that shall come to the court out of France for ratification of the peace, 1200*l*. More to him in prest for conduct money of soldiers passing from beyond the seas to their countries, 200*l*. To Richard Taverner 333*l*. 13*s*. 4*d*. in prest, to be employed towards the payment of wages of certain English soldiers of the band of Captain Cuff, Coniers, Barry, and others of Boloign, appointed to attend upon the king's person. To Lucas Fringar, one of the commissaries for the Almain soldiers, as well for his pains taking with Mr. Grinston for mustering the 700 Italians and Albanes (Almains) that came from the North, (where they had been, I suppose, in the army against Scotland, with which country peace was lately made) as for conducting them from London to Dover, there to see them transported to Calais: and thence to take their journeys, for twenty days going and coming, after 10*s*. a day, for him and his servants and their two horses, in the whole 10*l*. To the same Fringar several sums to be paid by him to certain captains for their household servants; that is to say, to Captain Hans van Brumswick, for his clerk and his boy, his two halbards, for his chirurgeon and his man, for his interpreter, his cook, his housekeepers; and the like to Captain George Stener. To the Lord Waldeck 557*l*. 14*s*.: which, with the sum of 226*l*. already by him received in prest, amounted to 784*l*. 14*s*. being the full payment of the entertainment of himself at 10*s*. per day, sixteen horsemen and two coritsers, every at 12 gilders, making 4*s*. of sterling money by the month for thirty days; amounting, for a month's payment, to 57*l*. 4*s*.: and so for a month's conduct, and also twelve months and an half of service from the 12th of May, that he hath served with the said horsemen, by the council's order and appointment: and now was discharged.

April 7th, was the creation of Sir Thomas Darcy, Darcy created Lord Darcy. Knt. (a great man in this reign) and the heirs male



1551. of his body, to the title of Baron of Chiche, in the county of Essex, by the voice of the parliament. At the same time, together with his honour, he obtained a noble gift of the king, namely, the house and scite of the late monastery of Chiche St. Osyth, with the appurtenances, in the county of Essex: which house and scite the Lady Mary had during her life, with divers other lands, &c. Together with a further gift unto him of the manor of Lucton, alias Loughton, with divers other lands, &c. in the county of Devon. All which extend to the yearly value of 83*l.* 8*s.* 1 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.*; paying yearly out of the manor of Thorp Kirby, alias Kirkby, and Walton, alias Walton-Hall, in the county of Essex, which he hath in fee tail, 29*l.* 12*s.* 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.*: and for the tenth and tithes of the said late monastery of Chiche St. Osyth, after the death of the said Lady Mary, 1*l.* 17*s.* And for the manors of Thorp Kirkby and Walton, 11*l.* 16*s.* at the court of augmentations. And out of the manor of Lucton, which he had in fee simple, 15*l.* 10*s.* 6*d.* And for the tithes and tenths of the said manor, 5*l.* 6*s.* And for the manor of Shingford Paul, 2*l.* 12*s.* And for a close called Ancars Yngs, 13*s.* 4*d.* And for the lands in Knighton, 5*s.* 8*d.* And to take the profits from Michaelmas last; and to the rest add his preferment to the office of lord chamberlain of the king's household, upon the decease of the Lord Wentworth.

Lands  
given him.

p. 259.

Indenture  
between  
the king  
and Calais.

For the benefit of the king's town of Calais, an indenture was made in April between the king's majesty and the mayor, constable and fellowship of merchants of the staple of the town of Calais, witnessing, that the king hath given licence to the said mayor, &c. for one whole year, from the first of April last, until the last of March then next coming, to ship and transport out of this realm unto the staple of Calais, all these their wools and woolfells, and fells called *shortlings* and *morlings*; and to have like conduct and wasting (wafting) for the sure conveyance of their goods unto Calais, as heretofore

they have had; paying no more, or larger sums of money, than for so much goods of staple merchandize as they shall ship and transport unto the staple of Calais during the said year. And the said mayor, constable and fellowship of merchants of the said staple, covenanteth to pay, to the king's majesty, at the 6th of April and 6th of October, in the town of Calais, to the treasurer thereof, the customs or subsidies of the said merchandize, as they have been accustomed. And if the said mayor, &c. be destitute of any sum or sums of money in Calais, or at the arrival of their goods there, for the performance of their customs and subsidies at their days of payment prefixed, that upon the notice thereof given to the council, they shall have his grace's licence of passport and safe conduct, to convey over out of the realm unto the said town of Calais, for as much money as they shall need from time to time, for that only purpose, and none other. When as otherwise, money *in specie* was not to be conveyed out of the nation. And this indenture was for the king's convenience, as well as the merchants, that he might have his money ready there for his use, without the change and danger of transporting. 1551.

The king's charges were such, that his own revenue would not suffice, but he was fain now, in the beginning of this year, to take up money at high interest of foreign merchants, and chiefly of one Anthony Fugger, a vastly rich man, and his nephews, bankers of Antwerp. For which he gave several recognizances. One was to him and his nephews, for the payment of 381,440 florens, Carols Flemish, at Antwerp the last of February next, or for every floren 20 stivers Flemish, dated April 15th. Another recognizance of the same date to the same persons of 84,000 florens Carols, to be paid at the same place the last of April, 1552. Another of the same date of 272,743 florens Carols, payable May 15th, 1552. Another of the same date of 261,918 florens Carols, to be paid Aug. 15th, 1552. The king takes up money.

1551.  
The king  
founds a  
college in  
Galway.

p. 260.

As good King Edward had been the author of many pious foundations for learning and the service of God in England, so about this time he was excited to such a work in Ireland. There was a grant by him made, April 16th, to the mayor, burgesses and commonalty of the town of Galway in Ireland, and their successors, of the impropriation of the vicarages of Galway, Mary, Rawyn, Moccully, Fowran, More, Roscan, Clare, and Kilcomen, Scowre, Scrine, and one parcel of tithe in Galway aforesaid, called "The Bishop's Quarter," towards the sustentation of priests to minister the sacraments in the college of Galway. And that Patrick Blake shall be guardian of the same, and Thomas French, Darby Choyssen, John Talman, Darby Oucwain, and three more, to be singing vicars thereof. And that the said mayor, after the decease of any of them, may chuse new in their rooms, to minister the sacraments and sacramentals at their discretion: so they be meet and able for the same.

The coun-  
cil in  
Wales.

The king did in this month of April appoint by a commission, a council for the government of Wales, consisting of a president, who was Sir William Herbert, and thirty persons more: whereof the Earl of Worcester, Viscount Hereford, the Bishop of St. Asaph, and the Lord Powis, were of the nobility. To these were given instructions, consisting of twenty-eight articles, by order of the king and his council. And a warrant also was signed to Sir John Williams, to pay to the said president, and others appointed commissioners with him, for their diet, stipend, fees, wages, after a rate there set down; that is, for the diets yearly after the rate of 20*l.* per week. And for their yearly fees, to some 13*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; and to others 10*l.* But to fifteen were no salaries at all assigned. And to have their foreign expences after the rate of 100*l.* a year. And for the wages of William Carter, armourer, for the keeping of the arinour and artillery of Ludlow, 6*d.* per day.

And as the king took this care of Wales, by set-

ting those over that principality, so in the next month he took the like care of all the parts in England, by one-and-twenty commissions, directed to the chief nobility, who were to be the king's justices for the counties, "To enquire of all treasons (as the commissions ran) misprisions of treasons, insurrections, rebellions, unlawful assemblies and conventicles, unlawful speaking of words, confederacies, conspiracies, false allegations, contempts, falshoods, negligences, concealments, oppressions, riots, routs, murders, felonies, and other ill deeds, whatsoever they were; and also all accessaries of the same: and to be his lieutenants also, for the levying of men, and to fight against the king's enemies and rebels, and to execute upon them the martial law; and to subdue all invasions, insurrections, &c. as should chance to be moved in any place, as they should repair to the limits of their respective shires. With commandment to all officers to assist them." These commissions not to be prejudicial to the commissions of Oyer and Terminer, before given out. The names of these lords, justices, and lieutenants were: the Duke of Somerset, for Bucks and Berks; the Earl of Rutland and the Lord Clinton, for Lincoln and Nottingham; the Earl of Sussex, Sir Roger Townsend, Sir William Fermor, and Sir John Robertson (perhaps Robsert) for Norfolk; the Earl of Warwick, the Viscount Hereford, and the Lord Paget, for Staffordshire; the Earl of Arundel, and the Lord La Ware, for Sussex; the lord chancellor, Lord Rich, the Earl of Oxon, the Lord Darcey, and Sir John Gate, for Essex; Sir William Herbert, for Wilts; the Bishop of Ely, for the Isle of Ely; the Earl of Warwick, for Warwick and Oxford; the Lord Marquis of Northampton, for Surry; the Lord Cobham, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, Sir Thomas Cheny, for Kent and Canterbury; the Earl of Huntingdon, for Leicester and Huntingdon; the Earl of Derby, for Lancashire; the Earl of Shrewsbury, for Derby; Sir William Herbert, for the Prin-

1551.  
Commissions for  
justices  
and lieutenants of  
the counties.

Their  
names.



1551

ality and Marches of Wales; the Lord Darcy, Lord Wentworth, and Sir Anthony Wyngfield, for Suffolk; Sir Robert Tirwhyt, and Mr. Thomas Audley, for Huntingdon; the Lord Marquis of Northampton, for Northampton, Bedford, Hertford, and Cambridgeshire; the Earl of Bedford, for Dorset, Somerset, Devon, and Cornwall; the lord treasurer, Earl of Wiltshire, for Southampton; the Lord Paget, and Sir Roger Cholmely, for Middlesex.

Care was also taken, in May, for fortifying the kingdom, and especially in the parts against France, for security against such a powerful neighbour. Two new forts were resolved upon for Jersey. And for the rendering the Isle of Scilly more useful, provision was made for the better peopling and strengthening it. For the effecting whereof, certain commissions were given out, dated in May.

Two fortresses to be built at Jersey.

As one for Jersey, to Helier de Carteret, John Clark, Clement Lemprier, Esqrs.; Ninian Saunders, Gent.; Lewis Hampton, clerk; Charles Mabion, clerk; Richard Dinnarick, Nich. Lemprier, Edw. Denmarick, Laurence Hampton, jurats; Hugh Perrin and Nich. Solomont, gentlemen, or to any six of them, whereof De Carteret and Clark, or one of them at least, to be one. These had power and authority to call before them the inhabitants of Jersey, by the advice of Sir Henry Powlet, Kt. captain there: and to assess every of them to be contributors, according to their goods and lands, towards the building of two fortresses; the one in the Ilet of St. Helier, and the other in the Ilet of St. Obyn (Albin) there. And also for a perpetual pension to be gathered of their lands, for the charges of the safe keeping of them: and to put their said order and cesserment in writing, that it might remain for ever. With an authority also given them to appoint officers, to make all manner of provision for the edification of the said fortresses.

Scilly to be surveyed:

The commission for the Isle of Scilly was directed to Sir William Godolphin, Kt. John Killigrew, and



John Godolphin, Esqrs. The contents whereof was, 1551.  
 for them personally to repair thither, and to make a  
 perfect, diligent survey of all the same isle : and to  
 set out the number of acres of land within the same ;  
 and to divide the same into so many parts, as may  
 serve for tenants and householders of husbandry ; al-  
 lowing them sufficient land for tilling, and sufficient  
 pasture ; and to grant the same for one-and-twenty  
 years, reserving to the king reasonable rents. And,  
 for their better instruction, the king had sent them  
 certain instructions inclosed ; and, lastly, to signify  
 their doings in the chancery, in distinct writing, in  
 parchment, under their hands, within three months  
 after they should accomplish the same commission.

Which was followed by another commission, in June, to John Killigrew, to take up and provide all  
 manner of workmen, and labourers of all sorts, and all  
 such stuff, of what kind soever, as should be thought  
 requisite or needful for furtherance and finishing of  
 the new fortification within the said Isle of Scilly. And a fort  
 built there  
 there.

The king also, in the said month of June, sent let-  
 ters for the survey of Dover Castle, and, according to  
 the defects of it, to set speedily, without delay, upon  
 the sufficient repair thereof. Dover Cas-  
 tle to be  
 surveyed.

## CHAP. III.

p. 262.

Embassies and businesses abroad into Scotland and France, and  
 to the emperor. Dr. Wotton sent. His business about the  
 Lady Mary's mass. The affairs of Ireland. The match with  
 France. The French ambassador comes about it. Herman,  
 Archbishop of Colen.

**T**HIS was a busy year for embassies and agencies  
 abroad with the Scots, the emperor, the Irish, and the  
 French.

Quarrels and contests were continually bred be-  
 tween the English and Scots, bordering so near upon  
 one another ; and so they were now again, since the  
 late treaty of peace concluded between King Edward

1551. and the French king, wherein Scotland was included. Commissioners therefore were appointed, April 6, for the limits between England and Scotland; who were the Bishop of Litchfield, or of Norwich; Sir Robert Bowes, Sir Leonard Beckwith, and Sir Thomas Chaloner. They were to determine with the Queen of Scots, or her commissioners, the controversy lately risen about the borders: and also for taking and delivering of pledges, and all manner of spoils and piracies, and other attempts, done by either of their subjects. The meeting was to be about the 10th of May, upon the limits beyond Barwick, dividing England and Scotland. The commissioners, on the Scots' part, were the French ambassador, Monsieur De Lansac, then in Scotland; the Bishop of Orkney, or of Ross; the Masters of Ruthen and Ayrskine. The council sent to the Bishop of Litchfield, to advertise him of his being one of the said commissioners, and to require him, in case he were in good health (for he was now well aged) to prepare for his journey, and to expect their further instructions. But, it seems, he got himself excused. For, April 13, the Bishop of Norwich was ordered to repair to the borders of Scotland by May the 1st, or within three days after; and the commission, which was sealed April 15, was to Thomas, Bishop of Norwich, and the three other before named.

The French king calls upon King Edward for this commission.

This commission was set on foot by the French king's motion, out of his care for Scotland: who, in January last, sent his ambassador, Lansac, to the king, requesting favours for the Scots, as to determine the debatable grounds for allowance to the Scots peaceably to traffic, and to fish in Tweed, restoration of certain Scots hostages, that had remained in England ever since King Henry's time; and this the French king backed with his own letters. To the which letters and embassy the king gave a favourable answer, both by his letters and his ambassadors, Mason and Pickering; and though he had a right, as he said, to the aforesaid places, yet offered to stand

to conditions to be agreed on by the commissioners on both sides. 1551.

Nicolas Wotton, Dean of Canterbury, was sent ambassador to the emperor this April, and to take the Lady Regent of Flanders in his way. It was intended chiefly to satisfy the emperor, who had interceded for the Lady Mary, to have the use of the mass continued in her family, viz. why it could not be permitted any longer, the laws being in force to the contrary; and because she was a subject, and so could not be exempted from the laws: and to expostulate with the emperor, who had denied the king's ambassador in Brussels the exercise of his religion. In Wotton's credential letters to the emperor, he is said to be one of the king's council, and that the king had sent him his ambassador, for the better continuance and preservation of the old amity and love between them. A letter also was framed for him to deliver to the Lady Regent of Flanders, to this import: That where the king had sent the said Wotton his ambassador, he could not suffer him to pass without visiting of her, and bringing his letters of commendation. For the defraying his expences, a warrant was made to pay to the said Nicolas Wotton, from the 25th of March last past, until his return unto the king's presence, after the rate of five marks by the day for his diet, and to advance him for five months beforehand; and to allow him, from time to time, such money as he shall signify by letter he hath defrayed, for the posting of himself and his servants, with their transportation both outwards and homewards. Wotton went in Morison's room,<sup>3</sup> who now came home from the emperor, and by his discoursing somewhat freely of religion to the emperor and D'Ar-ras, became unacceptable to him, which was the chief reason of his revoking.

Wotton was instructed to deliver himself thus to the emperor, concerning the restraint of the English ambassador in the Low Countries from using his religion: "That setting apart such offence as the em-

Dr. Wotton goes in embassy to the emperor.

p. 263.

Morison revoked.

Wotton's instructions,

1551.  
Concern-  
ing the  
English  
ambassa-  
dor in the  
Low Coun-  
tries.

peror had conceived against the king's former ambassador, by his proceedings herein with the emperor, that had, for divers considerations, so much reason for the king to require it, that he looked not to be denied it of the emperor, as long as he should have any respect of honour or friendship. That as the king required any thing of the emperor, so he was ready to do the like to him, minding to be answerable in any point of good-will and friendship. That he required no otherwise of the emperor, than his ambassador had in England; nor any more than what was granted and suffered by others to his ambassadors in other realms and dominions; and the thing also was such as was usually granted in all policies and commonwealths: nay, that the Christians, where they lived in the Ethnics' subjection, retained their manner of religion; and the Turks, among Christians, retained theirs, and the Jews likewise. Wherefore, that the king did not doubt but the emperor, his good brother, considering that they differed not in any substance of their religion, but only in the form of certain ceremonies and usages, having the same Christ and Saviour, the same books of scripture, that the emperor had, would agree hereunto, as reason and friendship required; seeing the king's request was lawful, and usually granted him in other places, and by the king not denied to the emperor; nor meaning thereby any disquiet in the emperor's countries. Otherwise the king must not think, that the emperor had so much consideration, either of friendship or honour, as others had: of which thought, he would be very sorry to have any such earnest occasion given him by the emperor."

p. 264.  
Concern-  
ing the  
Lady Mary

Another point of the ambassador's business was, about a letter sent by the emperor to the king, importing his motion, that the Lady Mary might use her accustomed religion for a further time, according to an assurance made, as he pretended, by the king to the emperor; concerning which, the ambassador was instructed to say, "That there was no assurance



or promise ever made by the king, but only that he was content to bear at that time, when the motion was made by the emperor's ambassador, with her, and to spare the execution of the laws for a time, until he saw some proof of her amendment; and that nothing else was promised, the emperor's ambassador had seen and heard by several testimonies of the council. And that both the Lord Paget and Sir Philip Hoby, ambassadors at that time with the emperor, were examined upon their faith and honour, and both constantly denied, that ever they mentioned any promise touching the king's sister, either to the emperor, or any other." Moreover, he was ordered to say, "That although the emperor seemed to move this unto the king, yet when he should understand, how much against reason it was to be granted, he would stay further motion: for that such order and form of Common Prayer in the English churches, and usage of the communion, was the very order as the primitive church of Christ used. Besides, that it was established as a law of the realm by the consent of parliament: by the which the whole estate of the realm was ruled; and the king himself, in all manner of causes, being such an universal and high court, as there was none in all the English policy to be compared to it. Further, that the example of breaking this order wittingly, were pernicious and dangerous to all the realm, the reverence of the king's estate, the execution of laws, and the authority of the same, would be utterly gon. Wherefore, that it was the king's desire, that the emperor would turn the case, and to imagin this to be his own. Finally, that all these things considered, the king assured himself, the emperor should cease to move this matter, and would rather give the king contrary counsel, for the love and tender care he bore him.

"Yet, that he assured the emperor, that in all things wherein he might shew his natural affection to his sister, he would heap it abundantly upon her, even



1551. a degree above his natural affection, to demonstrate his earnest desire to gratify the emperor."

Matters of  
Ireland.

In the same month of April, care was taken of the affairs of Ireland. It was thought fit to send for home, Sir Anthony St. Leger, the king's chief officer in that kingdom; the king declaring, by letters, that he intended to make use of him, and to employ him nearer about him; and Sir James Crofts (who came thither the month before) was placed in St. Leger's room, who was made deputy in August last. Besides the main business of fortifying the havens, Crofts, with several others of the kingdom, was appointed to raise money for the king, by farming out his lands there, and selling the wards and marriages of such as were in the king's homage. Orders were also given out to the new deputy, to punish, by martial law, the disorders of the soldiers, who were greatly complained of for their misdemeanors. The Lord Fitzgerald, the late Earl of Kildare's son, to encourage his loyalty and service of the king, had granted to him a good share of those lands that came to the crown by the said earl's death. All this more particularly is set down in the King's Warrant Book, as followeth:

p. 263.

Sir J. Crofts  
made Lord  
Deputy of  
Ireland.

"The office of L. Deputy of Ireland to Sir James Croft, during pleasure, with like authority as Sir Anthony St. Leger had given him in his commission, and a fee of a thousand pounds a year.

A commis-  
sion to  
sell wards  
and let  
lands in  
that king-  
dom:

"A commission to Sir James Croft, Sir Thomas Cusake, Sir George Aylmer, Sir William Brabazon, Knights, and Patric Barnwel, Esq. or to three of them, whereof the said deputy to be one; to demise, grant, and set to farm, for one-and-twenty years, and that under the great seal there, as well all and singular those manors, lands, &c. which may hereafter come into his majesty's hands, as those lands which he now hath within the same realm; and to sell the wards and marriages of all and singular the heirs (of those) that have heretofore died in the king's homage, or hereafter shall die. Provided, that all woods and

under-woods, growing upon any of the said lands so demised, be unto the king's majesty reserved; saving to the tenants sufficient hedge-boot, plow-boot, and fire-boot. 1551.

"Another commission to the said deputy, and to the marshal there, to hear and to determine all causes and complaints against the king's soldiers of his army there, and to punish the offenders according to martial law, upon due proof to be had in that behalf; provided, the said causes and complaints be determined within three months after the same began, if the plaintiff follow his suit. And another to punish soldiers there.

"A letter to Sir Anthony St. Leger, to repair home to the king's presence, and that before his departure he see Sir James Croft placed there; and to leave with him, by bill indented, all such stuff, plate, and other things, which he hath and occupieth of the king's. Sir Anth. St. Leger recalled.

"Four-and-twenty letters were also sent, all of one effect, declaring, That for divers considerations the king minded to occupy Sir Anthony St. Leger about certain his necessary businesses here at home; therefore presently sendeth, to supply the office of deputy there, Sir James Croft, as by his letters patents to them shall more plainly appear. Letters declarative of the same.

"A letter was also sent in favour of the Lord Garret (Fitz-Gerald); to the intent he may be the abler to do the king better service, the king is pleased, that he shall have so much of those lands that came to the king's hands by the death of the Earl of Kildare, his father, as amounteth to the yearly value of 300*l*. And that they cause a certain plain value and survey to be sent hither to the council, warranted and subscribed by them, and such other officers as be required in such cases, to the said yearly value of 300*l*. A grant of lands to the Lord Fitz-Gerald.

"A letter in favour of Sir William Brabazon; to make a sufficient lease in reversion to him, for one-and-twenty years, of all such farms as he presently holdeth, by the demise of the king's late father, there." A lease for Sir William Brabazon.

1551.  
Forces for  
Ireland  
ready to  
depart.

Forces were raised for Ireland, and lay in London ready to depart, and which should have departed before now. Therefore now, in April, orders were given forth by proclamation, that all captains and soldiers that of late had received prest, or had been entertained to pass into Ireland, either by the long seas or by Bristol, should depart forthwith, or before a set day in the said month, toward the same; and that no such person should remain in London after the same day, under pain of imprisonment, or other punishment, at the king's pleasure.

p. 266.  
A surveyor  
of the  
mines and  
money in  
Ireland.

A surveyor also, viz. Robert Record, Esq. was constituted for the king's mines and coin in that kingdom; to whom a commission was directed in May, appointing him surveyor of all the mines of metal and minerals in the said realm; and that he, during pleasure, should as well rule and order the affairs and works concerning the said mines and provisions of the same, as to appoint and take all manner of provision, labour, and carriages, both by land and water, as well in the realm of England as Ireland. And the treasurer, comptroller, and seymaster of the late erected mints, and other officers, in all their alloys, assays, mixtures, meltings, blanchings, shearings, and other their works, to use the counsel of the said surveyor. This for Ireland.

A great  
embassy  
into France

A great and honourable ambassage was now also, in this busy month of April, preparing for France, from the English court, soon after Sir William Pickering's departure thither: it was, to bring the French king the garter; and not only that, but chiefly to treat of a match. There went as chief ambassador, Par, Marquis of Northampton, a person of a very courtly and brave behaviour and gallantry, who had ten pounds a day allowed him for his diet; Sir Philip Hoby, a gentleman of the privy chamber, and often employed in embassies; and William Thomas, Esq. a clerk of the council. There went also in the same quality, Goodrick, Bishop of Ely, accustomed long to publick business; Sir Thomas Smith, a very learned

knight, and Dr. John Oliver, both civilians; besides a great company of other noblemen and gentlemen that voluntarily accompanied: to one of whom the king lent 2000 French crowns, to be repaid at his return; and the loan of 4000 crowns apiece was then offered to all such as were minded to go into France, and would give bond for re-payment, either in like crowns, or gold of like fineness. To the aforesaid ambassadors were also joined in commission, Sir William Pickering and Sir John Mason, ambassadors already in France. In the company went also Sir Gilbert Dethick, Knt. Garter, principal king of arms; on whom attended Chester, herald, and Rouge Dragon, pursuivant. Garter was allowed twenty shillings by the day for his diet, and twenty shillings more for his reward; the herald five shillings a day for his diet, and five shillings a day for his reward; the pursuivant, two shillings and sixpence a day for his diet, and as much more each day for his reward. Garter was also allowed three yards of cloth of gold, two yards of cloth of gold tissue, and sixteen of blue velvet, which were to serve for the banner, the mantle of the helmet, and the lining of the same, for the installation of the French king.

It was not before June this ambassage arrived in France; the 20th of which month, the marquis invested the French king, in his chamber, with the order of the Garter; and the Bishop of Ely made the speech, explaining the purport of the embassy. And the same day, in the afternoon, the motion for the marriage between King Edward and the Lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter of France, was broke, and very well received.

And because a like splendid embassy was expected from France, answerable to this now sent from England, the king being minded to give all honourable reception to those that should come, in this same month of April, caused fifty-eight letters to be directed to divers brave English gentlemen, requiring them, upon the sight of those letters, to put them-

1551.

A match with the French king's daughter propounded.

Persons sent to, to attend the court at the French ambassador's coming.



1551. selves in such readiness and furniture as they might,  
 p. 267. before the day of June, appear at the court at  
 or elsewhere, according to their degree and  
 state, for the honour of the king and the realm, to  
 attend there; for that certain personages of good  
 estate were looked for in ambassage from the French  
 king.

The French  
 ambassa-  
 dor comes.

In July came over the French ambassador, named  
 Claude La Val, intituled, Monsieur Le Marechal St.  
 Andre, upon the same account, with a brave retinue,  
 and landing at Rye, in Sussex, was accompanied with  
 a thousand English gentlemen and their men, on  
 horseback. He was treated, in Kent, by Sir John  
 Baker, and the Lord Cobham, at their houses; met  
 at Gravesend by the lord admiral, and forty other  
 gentlemen, and so conducted by them in barges to  
 Durham Place. One of the king's gentlemen, and  
 another of his grooms, dying of the *sweat*, he removed  
 to Hampton Court: thither was the ambassador  
 brought to the king. July the 14th, he delivered to  
 him his letters, and dined with him; and after dinner,  
 being withdrawn into an inner chamber, he made his  
 speech to the king: to each part whereof the king an-  
 swered *extempore*, most solidly and wisely, beyond  
 his years, as he hath set it down himself in his Jour-  
 nal, whither I refer the reader. Three days after, the  
 ambassador repaired from his lodgings at Richmond  
 to Hampton Court, to present the king with the order  
 of St. Michael. Some days after, he dined with the  
 king again, and saw him shoot, ride, play on the lute,  
 and was admitted into his bedchamber and study.

Hist. Re-  
 form. Coll.  
 p. 30.

The match  
 agreed on.

Matters were soon agreed on, and the portion and  
 dowry settled; the former being 200,000 crowns,  
 and the latter 10,000 marks. I have some letters  
 of this ambassador to Secretary Cecyl; whereby  
 we may understand the matter went chiefly through  
 his hand, he appointing the ambassador his times  
 when to wait upon the king, and to have the speech  
 of him: to whom the ambassador betook himself for  
 the forwarding and conducting his business. Him he



desired to get his memorial finished, which he sent to Cecyl by his secretary; and also, that the ratification of the marriage, and other letters, testifying the consent and approbation of the privy council, might be dispatched: as he had wrote to the master of the king's horse, they should be sent speedily to France, by one of the gentlemen of his retinue. To this conclusion was the matrimonial business brought, as appears by this letter of the ambassador to Cecyl: 1551.

“ Te maxime rogatum velim, amicissime Cecili, ut juxta memorialem libellum tibi ab eo qui mihi est à secretis, hodie mane relictum; rem nostram natures, et quantum poteris festinationem adhibeas. Ea autem de causa illud à te importunius postulo, quod nudius tertius D. Magistro Equitum Regis nostri significaverim, me brevi, una cum literis matrimonii confirmatoriis, literas quoque alias missurum, quibus testatum in posterum haberemus, probantibus et consentientibus regis vestri consiliariis, rem confectam. Utrasque autem ad regem mittere statueram per quendam ex nobilibus meis qui crastino die profecturus est. Bene vale, amicissime Cecili,

Tuus omnino,

CLAUDIUS LA VALLUS.”

About December or January last, Guidot, an Italian merchant, who came from the French court, brought from thence a gilt cup to the king, and presented also the picture of the French king's daughter to him; which the king then delivered to the Earl of Warwick, and bade him keep it. It was thought that Guidot, a person made use of in messages between the French court and this, had secret instructions from the French queen to present that picture to the king, who was the most desirous woman in the world that her daughter might be bestowed on the king. This might give the first occasion of moving for this match with France, that was now in hand, and so forward. And the Marshal of France being this July, as we see, ready to return home, the said Earl of

The ambassador to the secretary. MSS. penes me.

p. 268. The king hath the French lady's picture.

1551. Warwick being then at Otford, sent the picture to the lord chamberlain, to deliver it to the king, with advice that he should shew it to the marshal at the day of his taking leave of the king; which act of the king, perhaps, might much satisfy the queen, when the marshal should tell her of it (whose practice the said earl verily thought it was, to send it), that the same should appear to her not to be rejected.

The articles on the French side, drawn up while King Edward's ambassadors were in France, began in this form and tenor :

Articles of  
marriage  
on the  
French  
side.  
MSS. Fox.

“ Universis et singulis, ad quorum notitiam præsentes literæ pervenerint. Nos Carolus, miseratione divina, tituli S. Cæcilie, sacrosanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ Presbyter, Cardinalis de Lotharingia, Archiepiscopus et Dux Remensis, primus Par Franciæ; Anna, Dux de Montmorency, Par, Constabularius et magnus Magister Franciæ, insignis Ordinis Sancti Michaelis Eques; Johannes Bertrandus, Miles, Sigillorum Cancellariæ Custos; Robertus de la Marche, Dominus de Sedan, Franciæ Mareschalchus, ejusdem Ordinis S. Michaelis Eques; Johannes de la Cheney, Miles, Dominus Deury, Generalis Financiarum, in Sanctiori et Secretiori Concilio Christianissimæ Regiæ Majestatis Consilarii, Oratores, Procuratores et Commissarii ejusdem Christianiss. Regis ad infra-scripta sufficienter constituti et autorizati, salutem.

“ Postquam depositis armis et hostilitate remota per Dei Opt. Max. favorem et gratiam, inter dictum Christianissimum Franciæ, et Serenissimum Angliæ Reges, reconciliatis animis vetus ille et à parentibus suis Regibus felicissimæ memoriæ diutissimè conservatus, et ab illis ad se transmissus, amor et amicitia mutua redintegrata fuit; de nulla re alia prius ac potius deliberandum princeps uterque censuit, quam quibus modis hic amor et affectus fraternus, non solum in perpetuam stabilitatem conservari, verum quo modo augeri etiam, atque adeo indies magis ac magis adolescere in perfectissimum, quantum humanarum rerum natura patitur, necessitudinis statum

queat. In qua deliberatione dum versantur, non suis vehementibus affectibus satis indulsisse sibi sunt visi, quantumcunque magnis alioqui se persecuti fuerint officiis amicitiae, nisi et eo fuerint insuper vinculo copulati, quod à Deo summo parente in paradiso institutum omnium humanorum vinculorum fortissimum firmissimumque habetur. Quod non animos tantum amore, verumetiam corpore consanguinitate conjungit, sanguinem sanguine copulat, et cognationis propagine necessitudinem contractam per multas ætates et sæcula firmissimè transmittit. Hæc est ejus natura sacrosancti ac divinitus instituti matrimonii. 1551.

“ Quod quidem si mox locum habere potuisset, et affinitas tam optata sine ulla dilatione iniri conficique quivisset, nihil utrique principi fuisset antiquius, nihil optatius, ut statim foret orbi testatum, quàm infuscatè ac verè rex uterque alterius amicitiam complectatur quàm cupiant ardenter ambo eandem esse æternam, et per vincula nuptiarum indissolubiliter copulatam.

“ Sed quoniam isthuc nunc ætatis ratio fieri non patitur, quod unum est proximumque quod hoc tempore fieri potest, de matrimonio contrahendo, cum primum tempus ætasque permittet, inter præfatum Serenissimum Angliæ Regem, et Illustrissimam Dominam ELIZABETHAM prædicti Christianissimi Regis filiam natu majorem, communicandum duxerunt.

“ Nos igitur præfati Christianiss. Regis Franciæ Consilarii, Oratores, Procuratores, et Commissarii, sufficienter autoritate de matrimonio prædicto contrahendo, cum Illustribus, præclaris ac Nobilibus Viris Gulielmo Marchione Northampton, Comite Essexiæ, Domino de Par, illustriss. Ordinis Garterii Milite, Magno Camerario Angliæ, et dicti Sereniss. Regis Angliæ Pensionariorum Capitaneo generali, Thoma Episcopo Elien. Johanne Mason Milite, præfati Sereniss. Regis in Lingua Gallicana Secretario, et ad dictum Christianiss. Francorum Regem Ambassiatore, Philippo Hobbye Milite, præfati Sereniss. Regis à Cubiculis, et munitionum bellicarum

p. 269.

4551.

Generale, Wilhelmo Pickering Milite, præfati Regis item à Cubiculis, Thoma Smith Milite, Præposito (Collegii Etonensis) et Johanne Oliver Legum Doctore præfato Sereniss. Regis Angliæ in Cancellaria sua à Libellis supplicatoriis, etiam Consiliariis, Oratoribus, Nunciis et Commissariis ejusdem Sereniss. Angliæ Regis ad infrascripta sufficienter et legitime deputatis et autoritatis, convenimus, concordavimus et conclusimus, atque autoritate commissionum nostrarum, quarum tenores inferius inseruntur, convenimus concordamus et concludimus articulatim prout sequitur.”—And then the articles of the marriage follow, which would be too long here to insert. This is enough to shew in what forwardness this match was, and the form and manner of drawing up such matters; and lastly, who were commissioners on both sides, and their titles and qualities.

And this at last was the effect of this embassy, which began in April, and created work for some months after.

Omphalius  
comes from  
the Arch-  
bishop of  
Colen.

Herman, that pious confessor, late Elector and Archbishop of Colen (who, for adhering to the protestant religion, and setting on foot the reformation of his country, was deprived by the pope and emperor), sent his agent, Dr. James Omphalius, to the king, in October or November, with his letter. And in November the king answered the said letter, and friendly dismissed the agent, granting him a passport to return into Flanders, with three servants, three horses, three hundred crowns, and all other things necessary for his journey. The sum of which message appears not; but I conclude it to be concerning providing for the better state of the protestant interest; and perhaps recommending Melancthon, and some other German learned men, to the king. He wrote also the next summer to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to forward his business with the king, who being then in his progress, the said archbishop sent Herman's letters to the secretary, to be mindful of them.



1551.

## CHAP. IV.

Sir John Gates advanced. Grants to him. Occurrences. The bishopric of Winton diminished. Regulation of coin. Coverdale preferred to Exeter. The sweating sickness. Henry, Duke of Suffolk dies. A dearth. Orders to the bishops. Bishop Scorie's letter to the king. Duke of Somerset's new troubles.

**B**UT return we now again to the month of April, wherein we must remark some other occurrences then happening, though of a more private nature.

In this month of April was Sir John Gates (some-  
times wrote *Yates*) a groom of the privy chamber to Henry VIII. advanced to be vice-chamberlain, and captain of the guards to the king; and being, I suppose, but of mean fortunes, was to be raised by his prince, as were others of his condition; which cost the king dear. So Gates had lands given him to the value of 120*l.* per annum. He was about this year also, or the last, high sheriff of Essex and Hertfordshire, living at Cheshunt, and one of the king's commissioners, when the goods and chattels of colleges and chantries, in considerable proportions, came into his hands for the king's use; which, it may be presumed, he having the fingering of, might convert some part thereof to his own use. But if he did so, of it he got himself cleared by a pardon, signed March 16, when, according to the Lord Chancellor's Ledger Book, it was wrote, "That he was pardoned for all his accounts due to the king, for certain plate, jewels, ornaments of houshold, and other goods; and also, for accounts of certain goods received, appertaining to the Duke of Norfolk, and the Earl of Surrey, upon their attainder: and further, now lately for the plate received of the college of Plecy in Essex, at the time of the dissolution thereof." April 29, a patent was granted him of an annuity of 40*l.* to be assigned by the master and council of the court of wards, out of

Sir John  
Gates vice-  
chamber-  
lain.

Grants to  
him.

1351. the manors of Marden, Bremcham, Smethcote, and the farm of Wilford in Wilts; and all the manors of Mayor, Flotbeck, &c. and other towns in the county of Cornwall; which came to the king's hands by the death of Silvester Davers, and by the minority of John Davers, his son and heir, with the custody and marriage of the said John. Likewise, he obtained a patent of the same date, whereby the king granted him the scite of the college or free chapel of St. Steven's, in Westminster, with all the chapels and precincts of the said scite, except the upper buildings, now called *the parliament house*, over the vault of the college chapel beneath: and also the advowson of the parsonage and church of Rothing Abbatissæ, alias Abbas Rothing, in Essex, belonging to the late monastery of Berking, in the said county: and to have the issues and profits thereof from the time of the attaint of Sir Rauf Fane: and were extended to the yearly value of 13*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*

Two walks  
in Waltham Forest.

In the same fifth year of the king, in the month of October, he gave to the said Sir John Gates the keepership and walkership of two good walks in Waltham Forest, viz. Chapel Hainalt and Le Hainalt, the two former keepers thereof being yet alive, namely, George Doddesworth and John Nodes: who yet, by two patents, dated October 20, were to have the fees, during their lives, of eight-pence a day, and twenty load of fewel wood, to be allowed them yearly by the woodward of the said walks, in recompence of the said offices granted to Gates. But his patents for these walks were not signed till Jan. 29. The said Sir John to have and occupy to him and his assigns during life; reserving unto the said George and John their said fees during their lives: and after their decease, or either of them, to come to the hands and possessions of Sir John Gates.

Manors in  
Essex.

In the same fifth year he surrendered into the king's hands the hospital of St. Thomas, in Southwark; which King Henry had granted him by patent for life. In recompence whereof, the king in the month

of July bestowed on him divers good manors in 1551.  
Essex, namely, Bradwel, Munden and Lawford, and  
other lands, to the yearly value of 208*l.* 9*s.* 9½*d.* This  
hospital the king soon after gave to the city of London  
for their poor.

And in the same month, the Duke of Suffolk dying Offices in Southwark  
of the sweating sickness, Gates was made keeper of  
his great house in Southwark, with the garden, or-  
chard and park, and high steward of the lands and  
liberties thereof for his life ; and also high steward of  
Paris Garden, and the liberties thereof, with the fee  
of 30*l.* per annum.

Still in the same month, the king granted him the Manors in Hampshire and Surrey.  
manors of Sutton and Ropley, in the counties of  
Southampton and Surrey, late lands belonging to the  
bishopric of Winchester, to the value of 145*l.* 19*s.* 9½*d.*  
per annum.

In the seventh and last year of King Edward, he Other lands in Hampshire.  
obtained from him, in fee simple, the manor of Hurs-  
bourn, in the county of Southampton, with divers other  
lands, to the yearly value of 203*l.* 10*s.* 0½*d.* with a  
further grant, that there shall be for ever one market  
and two fairs at Ringwood, one of the towns granted  
him.

And to add the mention of one benevolence more  
to this gentleman, which was before any of these  
above mentioned, viz. in the king's first year. He  
had by patent, dated July 29, the lordship and manor  
of Barwick, with the appurtenances, in the county of  
Essex, parcel of the possessions of the duchy of  
Lancaster, and divers other lands and tenements in  
Essex, Hertfordshire, Norfolk, and Northampton-  
shire ; and this in consideration of service, and for  
performance of the purpose of King Henry VIII.  
his will. And besides all this, we may read of more  
favours shewn him in the process of this history.  
This gentleman, in short, as he was the Duke of  
Northumberland's favourite, so he perished with him  
in the Lady Jane's business.

In April was the warrant to the Lord Chancellor p. 272.

1551.  
Geo. Van  
Paris.  
Warr.  
Book.

Rich, to make out process and writ of execution for the burning of one George Van Paris, a chirurgeon, born in Flanders, having been condemned of anabaptism, averred by him to death, as the words ran in the said warrant. This was the Arian mentioned by the king in his Journal, and said to be excommunicated by the Dutch congregation, and, after long disputation, condemned.

Altars to  
be taken  
down in  
Chichester  
diocese.

The see of Chichester being now vacant, upon Bishop Day's deprivation, the altars remained in many churches a good while after: for in May 1551, a letter from the council was writ into the diocese to this tenor, "That where, notwithstanding the king's general commandment already passed, for taking down all altars within the reahn, divers stand yet within the diocese of Chichester; that substantial order be taken forthwith for the pulling down all altars within the churches and chapels of the said diocese, and for the setting up of tables in their stead, in some convenient place of the chancels again."

A triumph  
at Green-  
wich.

May the 3d, was a great triumph at Greenwich. The king and all the company wore black and white, (being in mourning, perhaps, for somebody;) as the footmen and trumpeters, their hats and cloaks, the banners and the spears in those colours. The other part, which was the Earl of Hertford, and with him a great company of lords, knights, and other young gentlemen, wore all yellow silk; so were their trumpeters' hats, the banners and footmen, and their spears and trappings of their horses, all in yellow: and they ran at the ring and at *tourney* with swords.

An earth-  
quake.

May 25, about Rygate, Croyden and Darking was felt an earthquake, and especially at Darking; inso-much that there, and elsewhere, pots, and pans, and dishes fell down, and moved about.

Two great  
northern  
earls come  
up.

May 31, the Earls of Derby and Shrewsbury came to town out of the North: both accompanied most splendidly with men and horse; whereof the latter was attended with seven score horse, and afore him forty velvet coats and chains, and all wearing his own



livery, unto his own place in London, which was called Coldherber. 1551.

In this month of May, when Ponet was made Bishop of Winchester, after the deprivation of Gardiner, a great alienation was made of the lands and revenues antiently belonging to that bishopric, according as it was required of the said Ponet, when he first came to the see, or rather conditionally to his preferment thither. Then he passed away to the king the manors of Marden, Twiford, Marwel, Waltham, &c. in the county of Southampton, and divers other lands, lordships, tenements, rents, &c. and in effect all the temporalities of that rich bishopric. And to make all sure, letters were dispatched to the dean and chapter to confirm the grant of the said bishop by their full consent and seal of the chapter, as in that case by the order of the laws is required and accustomed. Then did the king give to the bishop and his successors, in consideration of the said bishop's surrender, a great many rectories, as that of Bremmer, and of the chapel of Charford and Hale, and the rectory of Regborn, in the county of Southampton, and divers other lands, to the value of 2000 marks, to be held *in liberam eleemosynam*, and to take the profits from Michaelmas last. He granted him, moreover, for some recompence for all this taken away, that his first-fruits, (which before were charged in the king's books at 3885*l.* 3*s.* 3*¼d.*) should be now reduced to 2000 marks; and that for his tenths, from henceforth he should be taxed at 200 marks, and no more, to be paid yearly; that he should have ten years' space to pay his first-fruits in; that bonds should be taken for payment, from the bishop only, without sureties to be bound with him: and that all the bonds and writings for the first-fruits of his former bishopric, viz. of Rochester, should be delivered him up; which the king forgave him. And for the putting all this into effect, a warrant was issued out to the chancellor, treasurer, and council, and to all others, being officers of the court of first-

A new settlement of the bishopric of Winchester.

p. 273.

1551. fruits and tenths. The king also gave him a license to enter into his bishopric, and to take the profits thereof, without paying any thing therefore, notwithstanding a statute made in that behalf, in the 26th of Hen. VIII.; the import whereof was, that no spiritual person should enter upon his benefice, before he had paid the first-fruits, or given bond and security to pay them. A pardon also was granted him of all pains, penalties, and sums of money that might be forfeited, and due to the king, for entering into the bishopric of Rochester, contrary to the said statute.

The lands  
of the bi-  
shopric of  
Winton  
disposed to  
courtiers.

The king soon gratified his servants with the lands and manors of this bishopric; as Sir John Gates, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Henry Semur, Sir Andrew Dudley, Kts. Henry Nevyl and William Fitzwilliams, Esqrs. : for in July following were these parcels given away :

To Sir John Gates, the manors of Sutton, Ropley, &c. in Southampton and Surrey, of the yearly value of 145*l.* 19*s.* 9½*d.*

To Sir Philip Hoby, the manors of Marden, &c. in the county of Southampton, of the yearly value of 87*l.* 18*s.* 7*d.*

To Sir Andrew Dudley, the manor of Witney, &c. of the yearly value of 180*l.* 0*s.* 7¾*d.*

To Sir Henry Semour, lands to the yearly value of 186*l.* 0*s.* 4*d.*

To William Fitzwilliam, the manor of High Clere, &c. to the yearly value of 84*l.* 17*s.* 3*d.*

To Henry Nevyl, the manor of Margrave, &c. to the yearly value of 114*l.* 18*s.* 10*d.*

Sir Thomas Wroth also had an annuity of 100*l.*

This alien-  
ation to be  
confirmed  
by the  
chapter.

And for the farther confirmation of this alienation made by the Bishop of Winchester, it was thought requisite to have it allowed and consented to by the dean and chapter, under their seal: whereupon, in August, a letter was sent to Sir John Mason, Kt. that he should repair to Winchester, and to agree with the bishop to meet them there at a certain day,

and to cause all the canons, prebendaries, and others whom it concerned, to assemble in the chapter-house, for confirming the said lands, before Michaelmas next; and to advertise the council the day, that order might be given to the king's learned council to be there at the same time. 1551.

And, to take up all these matters together, another letter was sent to this bishop in behalf of the city of Winchester; namely, to take order that the city and citizens, and their successors, might be freed from their suits and services heretofore made to that court, called *The Palm Court*, and all other liberties he had to the same, clearly exonerated and discharged by his sufficient writing, under his seal, and confirmed by the chapter seal, according to his promise. The city of Winchester to be freed from suit and service to the bishop. p. 274.

In this month of July, the king was pleased to grant somewhat an extraordinary license to George Chidley, whether for some remarkable merit in him, or out of the king's special inclination and affection to him; viz. that he should wear his cap in the king's presence, or elsewhere, without let or trouble of any man. An extraordinary license to Chidley.

The king also now took care of his tin, one of the ancientest and choicest commodities of this land. Some disorders arising amongst the tinnerns, he gave order to the warden of the stanneries of Cornwall, who, I think, was the Earl of Bedford, to summon four-and-twenty of the most substantial and discreetest tinnerns of every stannery, into some convenient place, and there to consider and review the laws and customs, and to take notice of the irregularities committed; and to redress and reform the things that were amiss, for the quietness and good government of the tinnerns, the preservation of the stanneries, and the common wealth of the realm: and that command should be given, that the same laws and orders be strictly put in execution. A command to the warden of the stanneries.

Another of his great cares, which employed his thoughts and endeavours all along his reign, almost hitherto, was for the amending of the coarse money Regulation of coin.

1551. of his kingdom, and bringing down the good to a true value. For as the king had taken order for his coin, both gold and silver, in the year 1549, viz. setting a price upon the several pieces of gold, that they should not go above the due value; and for calling in a coarse sort of money, called Testourns or Testons, which passed for twelve-pence, though scarce half so much in intrinsic value; so now this year the king and his council had further cares about coinage, for the further regulation of it, for still the testons went current for above the value. There was therefore, this July, a proclamation for shortening the fall of money to a day. And another proclamation the same month, that the teston should go at nine-pence, and the groat at three-pence in all places of the realm at once. Another proclamation came forth the same month of July, for the punishment of them that would blow rumours of abasing and enhauncing of the coin, to make things dear. And in August (to take up here at once the transactions of this money-business all together) the teston was again cried down from nine-pence to six-pence, the groat from three-pence to two-pence, and the two-pence to a penny, the penny to a halfpenny, and the halfpenny to a farthing. In September there was a great deliberation concerning coin, occasioned chiefly because there were divers standards. For at this time a shilling fine had been reckoned for two shillings. The same month a proclamation was set forth touching the prices of cattle, of hogs, pigs, beeves, oxen, muttons, butter and cheese, which were set after a reasonable price, but not fully so good cheap, as when the coin was at the perfectest; but within a fifth part of it, or thereabouts. The same month a letter was directed to the lord treasurer, the lord great master, and the master of the horse, to meet at London for the ordering of the coin.

The teston.

King's  
Journ.

Proclama-  
tions for  
the same.

Delibera-  
tions upon  
a device for  
money.  
Warr.  
Book.

In the same month of September there was a letter undirected, but I suppose to the aforesaid personages, authorizing them to call before them such expert,



skilful men, as they should think meet: and debating with them such determinations and devices, as before the king's majesty and his council have of late been propounded and purposed for the state of the coin. And if the same shall be most profitable, then to proceed to put the same in ure. And if any other way shall be found more convenient to be followed, in alteration either in part or in the whole of the same determination, then also to proceed in putting the same in execution: whereof they were to certify the king and his council. 1551.  
p. 275.

The same month, the lords abovesaid, at London, tried all kinds of stamping; but of the fineness of 9, 8, 6, 4 and 3, proved, that without any loss but sufferable, the coin might be brought to eleven ounces fine. For whereas it was thought before, that the teston was through evil officers and ministers corrupted, it was tried, that it had the valuation just, by eight sundry kinds of melting. And 400*l.* of sterling money, a teston being but six-pence, made 400*l.* eleven ounces fine, of money sterling. Whereupon they reported the same; and then it was concluded that testons should be eleven ounces fine: the proportion of the pence according to the gold: so that five shillings of silver should be worth five of gold. The lord's  
report  
about it.

In the same month (so close did they follow their business) it was agreed, that the stamp of the shilling and sixpence should be, on one side, a king figured to his shoulders in parliament robes, with a chain of the order: the stamp of five shillings of silver, and half five shillings, should be a king on horseback, armed with a naked sword hard to his breast. Also, that York's mint, and Throgmorton's in the Tower, should go and work the fine work; and in the city of York and Canterbury should the small money be wrought of a baser state: and officers for the same were appointed. And October 1, a commission was signed for the making of five shilling pieces, half five shillings, groats and sixpences, eleven ounces The stamp  
resolved  
on.  
  
And the  
mint set to  
work.

1551. fine; and pence, and halfpence, and farthings, four ounces fine.

A proclamation  
against  
melting  
down the  
king's coin.

This great work also cost divers proclamations. One was dated in September, that none should melt any teston, or shilling, groat, half-groat, penny, halfpenny or farthing, or any other coin of silver, being current within the realm, to make vessel, plate, or any other thing; upon pain of forfeiture of four times the value of the money so molten; and to suffer imprisonment, and other pains.

Another  
for calling  
in testons.

Another proclamation in October was signed for the calling in testons and groats: that they that listed might come to the mint, and have fine silver of twelve-pence for two testons.

Another,  
declaring  
the several  
values of  
gold and  
silver coin.

Another in the same month, declaring, that the king's majesty had ordered and established to be made within his mints, these several coins, as well of silver, in fineness of the standard, as also of gold, as hereafter ensueth; that is to say, one piece of silver monies, which shall be current for five shillings of the lawful monies aforesaid. Another piece, which shall be called *the piece of two shillings and sixpence*, of the lawful monies. The third piece, which shall be called *the sterling shilling*, current for twelve-pence. The fourth piece, which shall be half of the said shilling, shall be current for six-pence. Also, that the king had ordered to have four pieces of small monies made likewise current. That is to say, the first piece shall be called *a penny*, with a double rose, and shall be current for a penny of the lawful monies aforesaid. The second shall be called *an halfpenny*, with a single rose; and the third piece *a farthing*, with a portcullise. (The fourth piece is here wanting, perhaps half a farthing.)

p. 276.

The several gold  
coins.

And of the coins of gold, as here ensueth; that is to say, the *old sovereign* of fine gold: which shall be current for thirty shillings of lawful money of England. Another piece of fine gold, called *the angel*, shall be current for ten shillings. The third piece of fine gold, which shall be called *the angelet*,

half of the *angel*, current for five shillings. And further, a whole sovereign of crown gold shall be current for twenty shillings. The second piece of crown gold, which shall be called *the half sovereign*, shall be current for ten shillings. And the third piece of crown gold, which shall be called *a crown*, current for five shillings. The fourth piece of crown gold, which shall be called *the half crown*, shall be current for two shillings and sixpence of the lawful monies aforesaid.

And the king straitly charged and commanded all manner of persons within his realms and dominions, to receive and pay the said several pieces of money, as well of silver as of gold, at the several rates before rehearsed, upon pain of his high displeasure, and to be further punished, as his highness should think convenient.

And his express commandment was, that all such base monies which his majesty had lately by his several proclamations reduced to the value of a lower rate, should pass and go current in payment in like manner and sort as his highness's last proclamation had declared; until such time as his majesty's mints might with diligence convert the same into his said new coins: which he minded to have done with all possible expedition.

And his majesty signified to all his loving subjects, that if they brought in a quantity of monies now current into his mint within the Tower of London, they should have the same received there by tale at the value, as they were then current, upon bills. And they should, in as convenient time as might be, be repaid for the same monies then current, by tale in other the king's new money afore declared.

Another proclamation was set forth in December following, which charged and commanded all the king's true subjects, not to credit certain vain, false and seditious rumours, concerning certain pieces of his highness's coin, now made, which had been well stricken, that his majesty's arms did not appear in the

Another,  
against  
false ru-  
mours of  
the king's  
new coin.

1551. same; and to be seditiously declared: these persons, it seems, building upon this conceit, that the stamp of the king's arms made the money current; because the antient monies usually had that impression.

Another,  
against  
buying and  
selling it.

Yet another came forth the same month, prohibiting the buying and selling of coin at other prices than the same was current by the king's late proclamation.

And thus, after several months, was that great business of the coinage brought to perfection, in the fifth year of the king: which was one of the glories of his reign. But now to return to the month of July again, which we have not yet done with.

The king  
exercises  
on horse-  
back.

p. 277.

July 6th (that very day two years after, wherein the king died) he rode gallantly through Greenwich-park, accompanied with the Earls of Darby and Warwick, the lord admiral, Sir William Herbert, and other knights and gentlemen, trumpets sounding, and all the guards in their doublets (that is, back and breast in armour) with their horses, and with bows and arrows and halbards, two and two together. Here the king on horseback ran at the ring with other lords and knights. The Earl of Warwick aforesaid had met the king there with an hundred men of arms, and great horses, and gentlemen in coats of velvet embroidered. The same night the king supped at Deptford in a ship with the lord admiral, and the lords of his council, and many gentlemen.

Coverdale  
made Bi-  
shop of  
Exon.

In this month of July, that eminent confessor Miles Coverdale, was placed in the bishoprick of Exeter, and had a license of entry into the same: a wealthy bishoprick before, valued in the king's books at 1565*l.* 13*s.* 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* yearly; now impaired by the last bishop, that it was set in the king's books but at 500*l.* and no more, and the tenths to be 50*l.* hereafter yearly. And Coverdale was to be discharged of that first year's tenths, and of all arrearages in the old bishop's time. To which old Bishop (Veyzy) it was granted, upon the resignation of his bishoprick, to enjoy all annuities granted to him out of the lands of the bishoprick, whereof he had made a



state in fee simple to others, namely, to the Earl of Bedford, and other noblemen. And also, to enjoy certain rents granted out of the bishoprick to certain persons, that were then come into his hands. And that the said bishop might plead in any court by the name of John Veyzy. These conditions he obtained for his resignation; that he might have a subsistence for his life. And all was granted him accordingly, in this month of July. 1551.

The plague of *sweat* was this summer very severe, and carried away multitudes of people, rich and poor, and especially in London: where in one day, viz. July 10th, died an hundred people; and the next an hundred and twenty. And it came even into the king's family about this time, which caused him to retire to Hampton-court. The king had given order to a great many persons, both of the nobility and gentry, to attend the French ambassador, as well to shew the king's magnificence, as the honour he intended for the said ambassador. But in this month of July, a proclamation came forth for all gentlemen to return home again, that were appointed to attend against the coming of the French men, and not to pester the ambassador's lodging, for fear of the sweat. The sweating sickness.

Among the persons this sweat took away, Henry, Duke of Suffolk, and the Lord Charles, his brother, were greatly lamented, not only because of their quality, but their hopes: who, July 16th, died both in one bed. They were both members of the university of Cambridge, and admitted in King's College, and put under the tuition of that accomplished scholar, Dr. Walter Haddon, professor of the civil law, and university orator: to whose memory he dedicated a copy of elegant verses, which began thus: The Duke of Suffolk and his brother die of the sweat.

Et vivos colui meos Alumnos,  
Et nunc prædico mortuos Alumnos.  
Vos, dulces pueri, valere vester  
Haddonus jubet, ut potest jubere, &c.

1551.  
p. 278.

They died both this fatal July at Buckden, at the Bishop of Lincoln's house, whither they were retired to avoid the sickness, being all the male issue of that most illustrious Prince Charles, Duke of Suffolk, and of his second wife Catharine. She had obtained of the king the wardship and marriage of the young duke, her son, and also the wardship and marriage of Agnes Woodhil (or rather Woodvil) I suppose of the right noble house of the Woodvils; Elizabeth, a daughter whereof, was wife to King Edward IV. and her sister to Henry, Duke of Buckingham. This young lady being brought up in her house, with her said son, she seemed to intend to match with him.

The hope-  
fulness of  
these  
young  
noblemen.

The duchess, out of her tender regard to them both, came to Cambridge with them, and sojourned there, about the time that Martin Bucer went thither: to whose inspection and counsel she commended them. Upon their funerals, Dr. Haddon made an eloquent oration before the university. Therein he described Duke Henry, not yet arrived to man's estate, to have been a very excellent person, well learned for his years, and much addicted to literature; that his parts were such, as he imbibed, with the greatest ease, whatsoever he was instructed in: that all his discourses were upon learned arguments, and his delight in the conversation of learned men; good store of whom he had always about him, procured at first by his mother's care; and more he took to him, according as he perceived their parts, and fancied their conversation. His custom was, when he and the rest of his learned retinue were together, to propound some question, of which he himself would first speak, and then desire to hear them, what they had to say about it. He had a prompt and fluent utterance, yet attended with a becoming modesty, which, as it preserved him from boasting and conceit of himself, so from despising others. This style of his, Haddon took notice of, and exhorted him much to read Tully, for the further improvement of it: adding, that by conversing diligently a year or two in

that author, he would prove a better Ciceronian than himself, how well soever the world said he imitated that author. This counsel was given him in the winter, when an ague interrupted this illustrious youth's studies. But as soon as he recovered health, he fell upon the reading Tully with all vigour, according to his tutor's advice, which he called, like a true scholar, his *command*. His younger brother, Charles, was a youth of the like parts and hopes. Both which being thus immaturely cropt off, the honour fell. But the Marquis of Dorset having married the half sister of these noblemen, was in October invested with the title of the dukedom, and the estate was divided among many heirs. For, May 6, 1552, a special livery was granted by the treasurer to Sir Richard Candish, Knt. Sir William Sydney, Knt. Thomas Lovel, Esq. Christine Darnel, widow, Walter Aiscough, Esq. and Elizabeth his wife, coheirs of the late Duke of Suffolk, and the Lord Charles Brandon, to enter into their purpartie of all the lands of the said duke and lord.

1551.

Marquis of  
Dorset  
made Duke  
of Suffolk.

As for the said duke's great capital messuage or mansion in Southwark, the office of keeping thereof, together with the garden, orchard, and park, was, in July, granted by the king to Sir John Gates, for life, with the office of high steward and bailiff there, of all the lands, tenements, and liberties of the same; and also of the office of steward and bailiff of Paris Garden, and the liberties thereof; with the fee of 30*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* per annum.

Sir J. Gates  
made  
keeper of  
the Duke  
of Suffolk's  
house in  
Southwark.

p. 279.

His brother Charles also, by the king's favour, was Steward of the Lordship of Sheriff-Hutton, and Constable of the Castle of Sheriff-Hutton, in Yorkshire; which office and constableness were granted, upon his decease, to Sir William Pickering, Knt. a worthy and honourable gentleman, and employed much in embassies, with all the fees and profits thereunto accustomedly arising, together with the herbage and panage of the park thereunto belonging.

Sheriff-  
Hutton,  
upon  
Charles L.  
Brandon's  
death,  
comes to  
Sir Will.  
Pickering

July 10, by reason of this new sweat, the king

1551. removed from Westminster to Hampton Court: for there died certain beside the court, which caused the king to be gone so soon. The Lord Cromwel, in Leicestershire, died: and the Lord Powis; Sir John Luttrell, Knt.; a noble captain, Sir Thomas Speke, Knt. who fell sick at the court; Sir John Wallop, of the order of the garter, and captain of the castle of Guisnes, a soldier of great worth and desert; and one Sir Peryn Negroo, Knt.; besides the two young dukes: all these died in July, within a few days one of another. As in the next month, within two days, three considerable heirs were carried off with the same infection, viz. August 20, Henry Williams, son and heir of Sir John Williams, after Lord Williams, of Thame: August 22, the son and heir of the Lord Sands; and Sir Richard Lister, son and heir of the lord chief justice of that name.

Many  
other great  
persons die  
of the  
sweat.

From the 8th of this month of July unto the 19th, there died in London of this sweat 872, and no more in all, as was certified in to the lord chancellor.

A dearth.

Another judgment beside this sickness lay upon the nation at this time, and that was a dearth, which continued along this year, there being little prospect of the fall of provisions; and corn remained excessively dear after harvest, which was the occasion (that I may bring it in here a little before its due place) that a commission, in the month of December, was issued out to John, Lord Mordaunt; Sir John St. John; Sir Urian Bruerton, Knts.; Nicolas Luke, Francis Pygot, and Lewis Dives, Esqrs. for the county of Bedford; and thirty-two commissions of the like effect were also issued out to others, throughout the nation, to inquire, by all ways and means, how the enhancing of the prices of corn, victuals, and other things, contained in a proclamation annexed to the said commission, had grown, and daily grew, by the insatiable greediness of divers covetous persons in the several counties; and to punish such as should disobey any thing contained in the same. For the supply of the city of London with corn for the winter, the king ob-

Commis-  
sions for  
inquiry  
into it.



tained leave of the French king to transport 1200 ton of wheat out of his country: so that this scarcity sprang rather from the covetous practices of many, in advancing the prices of things, and hoarding up the fruits of the earth, rather than from any unseasonableness of weather, or thin crop in harvest. And this the state was sensible of, as appeared by the commissions above mentioned, and by this order of council that follows. 1551.

July 18, letters were sent from the council to all bishops, to persuade the people to prayer, and to see God better served: which was upon the apprehension of the judgment of the sweating sickness, then sorely afflicting the nation, and the dearth. Orders to the bishops for prayer. Council Book,

And this summer the king and his council issued out orders to all the bishops, charging and commanding them in their own persons, and that their preachers and ministers in their several dioceses, by their command, should preach against the sin of covetousness, which now grew most insatiable among the people, insomuch that each went about to devour other; and that the bishops and preachers should, for this crime, threaten men with God's grievous plagues, not only such temporal ones as then lay upon the nation, but such as should be likewise inflicted in the world to come. Which order of council, I suppose, was procured by some good men in the court; such as the Archbishop of Canterbury, Secretary Cecyl, or Cheke, of the privy chamber; not only in respect of the monopolizing of corn, but also upon the contemplation of that tearing and rending from the church, the universities, the hospitals of the poor, and from one another, which some of the courtiers and great men practised, together with their inclosures, and by their example spread over the whole kingdom: so that all common justice and honesty was scarce any where to be found. p. 280. And to preach against covetousness.

But notwithstanding this order from the court, soon after was an unreasonable piece of covetousness shewn at the court itself: for William Thomas, a clerk of Thomas, clerk of the council, would

1551. the council (who hath been mentioned before), greedily affecting a certain good prebend of St. Paul's church, and to get it settled upon himself and his heirs, procured some of the king's council to direct their letters to Ridley, the bishop, for that purpose; which occasioned an earnest address from that good man to Cheke, Gates, Wroth, and Cecyl, and some others, whom he took to be men that feared God, to prevent it (having designed this prebend for Grindal, his own chaplain), and expostulating earnestly with them, what a discouragement this would be to the preachers of God's word, if their rewards should be thus ravished from them.

Bishop Scory's letter to the king, concerning ecclesiastical discipline.

To this I add, the mention of a sermon preached the last Lent at court, by a famed preacher, Scory (after Bishop of Rochester), against two evils, among others then very much felt. The one was, the want of ecclesiastical discipline, whereby great wickednesses were committed without any censures or punishments; the other was, covetousness, whereby the poor was so much wronged by the rich, by the means of inclosures, and converting tillage into pasture: for the redress of which evils, with some other, he then made humble suit to the king. And of these two this preacher, being in August made Bishop of Rochester, thought fit to remind the king again, in his letter of thanks for his advancement.

A.

The sickness suddenly abates.

The sweating sickness, though so violent in July, yet the next month it marvellously abated: insomuch that in a letter which the king wrote in his progress, dated August 22, to Fitz-Patrick, he said, that the most part of England, at that time, was clear of any dangerous or infectious sickness.

The French king instilled.

The king went, August 24, from Hampton-Court to Windsor, where the French king was stalled of the order of the Garter, with a great banner of arms embroidered with fleurs-de-lis of gold bossed, and mantle of tissue, and the helmet clean gilt, and so the sword.

The king, on Michaelmas-Day, wore the robes of

the order of St. Michael, with escalop-shells of France. 1551.  
 And the same time was chosen of the order of the Garter, the lord chamberlain, Lord Darcy, who was installed October 3 ensuing; coming in the place of Sir John Wallop, deceased. p. 231. Lord Darcy of the order.

The *month's mind* for the two Dukes of Suffolk, late deceased, was kept September 22; so the more solemn celebration of the funerals of great persons, about a month more or less after their interments, used to be called. It was performed with two standards, two banners (great and large), ten bannerols, with divers coats of arms; two helmets, two swords, two targets crowned, two coats of arms, two crests, and ten dozen of escutcheons crowned: with lamentation that so noble a stock was extinct in them. Month's mind of the two Dukes of Suffolk.

In September, the king granted these annuities to several Frenchmen, viz. Francis de Bignon, 37*l.* 10*s.*; Abraham Parady, John de Len (Loen perhaps), Nic. du Menir, Galliot Tassat, 27*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.* each; and Colin le Cout, 18*l.* 5*s.*: to be paid from the 1st of January last. These seem to have been learned ministers, fled from their own country for the persecution. Annuities to some French.

Now began the Duke of Somerset's new troubles. For, October 15, he and the Lord Grey were sent to the Tower; and the next day were committed to the same place, his duchess, and many more of his friends and servants; as Sir Rafe Vane, Sir John Thyn; and also Sir Thomas Holcroft, Sir Michael Stanhope, Mr. Hammond, Mr. John Seimour, Mr. Walley, Mr. Nudigate, Mr. Banister, Mr. Brayne, Mr. Crane and his wife, Sir Miles Partridge, Sir Thomas Arundel and lady. The 21st of the same month, the Lord Paget was carried to the Fleet by the guard; and the 8th of November following, together with the Earl of Arundel, was sent to the Tower: both whom were charged to have been privy to Somerset's practices, and were fain afterwards to make their submissions. And November 25, the Lord Dacres, of the North, Somerset's new troubles. Vitellius, f. 5. This MS. varieth from the King's Journal in a day.

1551. was committed to the Tower, as it seems, for the same crime.

The city  
command-  
ed to be  
upon  
guard.

Next, the Duke of Northumberland (for so was Warwick newly created) and his party, to make the pretended treasons of Somerset, and the rest, appear more formidable, on the 22d of October, with much shew and ceremony, were all the crafts and corporations of London commanded to repair to their halls; and there it was shewed them, that the Duke of Somerset would have taken the Tower, seized on the broad seal, and have destroyed the city; and then to have gone to the Isle of Wight. After this declaration they were charged, each corporation, to ward at every gate in London, and to have a walking watch through the city.

A commis-  
sion for  
dispatch-  
ing Chan-  
cery mat-  
ters.

The Lord Chancellor Rich, not being able to attend upon Chancery business by reason of his sickness, a commission was dated October 26, to John Beaumont, Esq. Sir William Portman, Sir James Hales, Sir Richard Rede, John Olyver, and William Cook (the first whereof was master of the rolls, the three following judges, and the two last civilians), to hear and determine any manner of matters before the king in his Chancery, between his subjects now hanging, or hereafter to be exhibited; with authority to award out all manner of process that had been accustomed theretofore; and to punish all manner of contempts, and do all other circumstances necessary for the same. And with a commandment to all the officers to attend upon five, four, or three of them. And all things done by them to stand in like force, as if they were done by the lord chancellor himself.



## CHAP. V.

The Marquis of Dorset advanced. Polydore Virgil. A Lasco. The army mustered before the king. The Scots queen entertained. Reports in Germany. Sir James Croft. Lord Admiral goes into France. Barnaby Fitz-Patrick. Guisnes to be surveyed.

**BUT** to go on with the transactions of the state 1551.  
this year.

October 14, the Marquis of Dorset petitioned the king to be recalled from being Warden of the North, by reason of his inability: for, February 15, it having been thought necessary, for weighty considerations, to send a man of honour northward, it was resolved to send the Marquis of Dorset, as Warden-General of the North. The king yielded this nobleman his request, and appointed the Earl of Warwick to succeed him. And October the lord chancellor had commands to make out a patent to that effect, with as much pre-eminence and authority as any of his predecessors ever had, and full fee, and leave to constitute deputy-wardens under him, and he was allowed an hundred light horsemen. But it was not before May 11, 1552, that he was ordered to go into the North; that is, till he had overthrown the good Duke of Somerset, that was in his way, and had made himself the greatest man in the court, save the king, and had even him at his pleasure.

The Marquis of Dorset, as well for his good service, as for that by way of marriage he was like to have claim to the dukedom of Suffolk, was created to that degree. Then was created also, Warwick, Duke of Northumberland; Wiltshire, Marquis of Winchester; and Sir William Herbert, Lord Cardiff, and after Earl of Pembroke; and Secretary Cecyl, Harry Nevil, Sidney, and Cheke, made knights.

In this month of October, some care was taken of each university: for, October 2, a commission went

The Earl of Warwick succeeds Dorset in the North Council Book.

The Marquis of Dorset made Duke of Suffolk.

Orders for the universities.

1551. forth to visit the university of Oxon. And the 12th, Mr. Car was ordered to succeed Mr. Cheke, in the Greek lecture at Cambridge.

A gift from  
the king to  
Polydore  
Virgil.

October 14, and November 1, to Polydore Virgil (who was now about returning to his own country of Italy, having obtained a passport last March for himself and four servants, and three horses and other necessities) 100 marks were ordered, as a gift from the king. November 9, the two former orders of the council, of giving him 100 marks, being made void, this day it was ordered, that 300 crowns, after the rate of five shillings a crown, be given him as a gift from the king; which gift the Duke of Northumberland acquainted him with, and for it he applied himself to Secretary Cecil.

p. 283.

B.

And to  
John a  
Lasco.

And November 19, to Johannes a Lasco, another learned foreigner, were given 100 crowns (the Council Book saith 100*l.*) as a reward from the king.

The king's  
licence to  
Polydore.

But for a farewell to Polydore, these few words: he was an Italian by birth, but had lived forty years in England, and served both the Henries, the seventh and eighth, and was preferred in this church to the archdeaconry of Wells, and to the prebend of Nonington, in the church of Hereford: and wrote the English History in 26 books, and other works. His judgment was for priests' marriage, and against worshipping images; but in other respects an earnest papist. This fourth year of King Edward, he had petitioned for leave to depart to his own country; which was granted him; and an order, by patent, to that effect, dated June 2, whereby he was also indulged to enjoy the profits both of his archdeaconry and of his prebend, during his life. An exemplification of which patent, Mr. A. Wood hath given in his *Fasti Oxonienses*. And besides this licence, the king presented him also with the gift abovesaid. But for the unfaithfulness of his History, especially of the antient Britons, he hath left a stain upon his name: and Henry Lloid, a learned Welshman, in his Description of Wales, gives this censure of him: "Either

he never saw nor read the antient histories of this realm, or dissembled the same, to the praise of himself, and the honour of the Romans, as well spiritual as temporal, and to blaze forth their acts and deeds within this realm: and on the other part, doth either openly slander, or privily extenuate, or shamefully deny, the martial prowess and noble acts, as well of Saxons, Danes, and Normans, as of Britons. That he never saw the antient writers of the British History, as the British Chronicle, the History of Gildas, Ponticus Verunnus, Mat. Paris; and being a stranger born, and ignorant in the histories of this realm, as of those tongues and languages wherein they were written, could never set forth the true and perfect chronicle of the same. But having a good grace, and a pleasant stile in the Latin tongue, and finding himself in a country where every man either lacked knowledge, or spirit to set forth the history of their own country, took this enterprize in hand, to their great shame, and no less dispraise." And Sir John Price writ his British History on purpose against the envious reports, and slanderous taunts, of the said Polydore.

1551.  
A censure  
of him.

Add, that the Lord Coke shews him to err in time, title, and cause, where he is undertaking to relate the original of the court of wards. 1. For the time of the beginning of this court, Polydore makes it to be granted to King Henry III. anno Dom. 1219; whereas Glanvil, who wrote in the reign of Henry II. treated of wardships due to the king, and other lords; and so also did Ockham, who lived in the said king's reign. 2. Polydore makes this wardship to come from the grant of the subject to the king; whereas the truth is, all tenures by knight's service, which since the conquest draweth ward and marriage, were either created or reserved by the king. And, 3. He utterly mistaketh the end of the creation of these tenures by knight's service; which were originally created for defence of the realm, by the king's own subjects; which is more safe than to trust to foreigners. Thus the Lord Coke.

Polydore's  
errors a-  
bout the  
court of  
wards.  
Lib. 16.  
p. 288.

p. 284.

1531.

The army  
to be mus-  
tered be-  
fore the  
king.

The king was minded now to see his standing forces, horse and foot, muster before him; and the rather, that he might be in a readiness, in case any rising might happen, as was apprehended in the month of October, by the discontented Duke of Somerset and his party. So there were ten letters written in October, and directed to certain of the chief officers of the army, to have the gendarmory and bands of horsemen which were appointed there, in a readiness to be seen by his majesty the Sunday following Hal-lon-tide next, being the 8th of November. And a like letter was dispatched to the Marquis of Northampton (captain of the band of pensioners) to have the band, appointed him, in a readiness the same day, with all the pensioners, and men of arms, attending on the court.

Horsessent  
to the  
French  
king.

In this month of October, the king sent to the French king, now, as it seemed, in good amity together, sixteen fine horses, by Sir Jaques Granado; who had a passport for that purpose, to carry them over, and all other necessities for himself and the said horses.

The Scots  
queen at  
court.

In the beginning of the month of November, the Queen Dowager of Scotland was at the English court; where she was entertained by the king and the court with all possible respect, according to her high quality. The king afforded her much of his communication; whereof, when she came home, she gave this testimony, that "she found more wisdom and solid judgment in young King Edward, than she would have looked for in any three princes that were then in Europe." The king at this her being at his court, gave her a ring with a fair table diamond.

Orders and  
letters for  
this queen's  
reception.

The relation of this queen's passing through England from France, is thus set down in the Council Book. Octob. 25, a letter was sent by the council to the Lady Mary and Lady Elizabeth, to signify the arrival of the Queen of Scotland at Portsmouth, and her coming to the king's presence, and her passage



through the realm. Also the like letters were sent to divers noblemen and ladies, to attend upon the Lord Marquis of Northampton, and the lady marchioness his wife, for the receiving of the Queen Dowager at Hampton-Court. Octob. 27, letters also were sent to Mr. Cotton, Mr. Wingfield, and other gentlemen, appointed to receive and attend upon her; and to signify to the council, what they have done in receiving of her, and when she intended to be there. Another letter was sent to Sir Percival Hart, to prepare himself to come up to Whitehall, with his wife, to accompany her into the north parts. Octob. 28, letters were sent to the sheriffs, and other gentlemen of the shires, near the parts where she should pass, to receive and conduct her through their limits, in such wise as might seem best for his majesty's honour, and their own estimation; and to give order for the quiet behaviour of the king's subjects towards her, and her train. Nov. 1, a commission was given to Mr. Dudley and Richard Shelly, to take up horses and carriages, and all other necessities for her journey homewards, and for her usage and entertainment by the way. Nov. 2, the Duchess Dowager of Suffolk was commanded to lodge her at her house at Stamford; Mr. Chester to lodge her at his at Royston. Sir Rafe Sadler was ordered to entertain her, and see her well accompanied, and her train well used, for their reasonable money, at her passing through Hertfordshire. Nov. 16, the Lord Ogle was ordered, as the Scottish queen passed by the borders into Scotland, to complain of the want of justice, that had happened through the default of her ministers, and of a heavy murder committed.

From one of the manuscripts in the Cotton Library, (which formerly seems to have been a Journal of one who belonged to the herald's office) I take this account of the manner of this queen's reception in London, and at court: "Novemb. 3, the Queen of Scots came to London from Hampton-Court, and landed at Bernard's Castle, and came riding to the

1551.

p. 285.

Her reception.  
Vitellius,  
f. 5.

1551. bishop's palace, with many lords, the Duke of Suffolk, Marquis of Northampton, Lord Warwic, Lord Willoughby, Lord Haward, Lord Russel, Lord Bray, and divers more lords, knights, and gentlemen: then came the queen, and all her's and our ladies and gentlewomen, to the number of an hundred. Many great gifts were sent her by the mayor and aldermen, and others, as beeves, muttons, veals, swines, wild fowl, bread, wine, beer, spices, quails, sturgeon, salmon, wood and coals. Nov. 4. the queen rode unto the court, attended with a great train of noblemen, gentlemen and ladies. At the court-gate stood all the guards in their best coats. There the Earl of Pembroke saluted her, and brought her to the hall-door: and there the Duke of Northumberland met her, and brought her into the hall; where the king's grace meeting her, saluted her, and embracing and kissing her, took her by the hand and led her up into the chamber of presence; where was a banquet. And when all was done, she took her horse, and was conducted unto the bishop's palace to supper: and there she lay till the sixth day: at which time she rode through London unto Bishop's-gate, accompanied with the Duke of Northumberland, and an hundred great horse with him, the men arrayed in coats of velvet embroidered, hats of velvet, and white feathers, and chains of gold; together with the Earl of Pembroke, with an hundred great horses, mounted with gentlemen in coats garded with velvet, wearing chains, hats and white feathers; and every man with a new javelin in their hands, and a badge: then came the lord treasurer, with an hundred great horses, and the riders in coats of maile, with badges, viz. the falcon of gold, and javelins; with great numbers besides of lords, knights, gentlemen and ladies. There the queen was presented at the gate by the chamberlain of London with 100 marks out of the chamber, and so went forward on her journey."

Report in  
Germany  
of killing  
the king.

In the beginning also of the month aforesaid, a great rumour ran, and spread as far as foreign coun-

tries, that some of the chief nobility about the king had plotted to lay violent hands on him. From Antwerp the report fled to Strasburg; and the Elector Palatine had it soon brought to his court; who sent to Strasburg to Christopher Mount, an agent for England there, to know of him the truth of it. Mount did what he could to satisfy every one, that it could be nothing but an idle fame. The occasion, doubtless, was the apprehension of the Duke of Somerset, whom his enemies resolving to remove, had raised a noise of his intention of seizing the king's person, and making an insurrection; and that noise easily improved into a report of killing the king; which also, it is not improbable, the conspirators against the duke might studiously give out, to render him the more odious, and to abate that love the people generally had for him. But Mount hereupon writ an earnest letter, Nov. 12, to both the secretaries, informing them of this report, and intreating them to give him the truth of the matter, that he might the better satisfy others, and all good men: concluding there could be no such monsters in the world, to lay their hands upon a prince of so great accomplishments of body and mind. His letter being short, I will here set it down.

1551.

p. 286.

“ Quinta decima præteriti mensis novissimas hinc ad vos dedi literas, magnifici domini secretarii, quæ medio mihi tempore constare potuerunt, modò scribo. Ex Antwerpia ad nos scribitur, magnam esse in Anglia commotionem. Nempe, quosdam inter primos habitos viros vitæ sereniss. regis insidiatos esse. Ego hanc causam ut vanam arbitror. Neminem enim tam immani et belluina natura esse suspicari possum, ut qui hoc jubar exoriens, tantisque virtutibus, animique et corporis rarissimis dotibus illustre et amabile, delere et opprimere in animum inducere possit. Itaque suppliciter vestras magnif. oro et obsecro, ut nos ex præsentis solitudine eripere maturetis. Quotidie enim ab optimis quibusque viris interrogor, an Anglia

Mount's letter from Strasburg to the secretaries. MSS. penes me.

1551. talia monstra aboriri potuerit. Optimè valeatis, Argentina, 12 Novemb. anno 1551.

“Palatinus Elector proprium apud me nuntium habuit, ut hujus rumoris causam disceret. Optimi quique viri solliciti sunt de sereniss. regis salute et regni tranquillitate.

To the Right Honourable Sir William Petre,  
or Sir William Cecil, Knights, principal  
Secretaries to the king's majesty.”

A procla-  
mation a-  
bout cess-  
ing the pri-  
ces of cat-  
tle.

A proclamation was set forth in this month of November, declaring, that the king's pleasure was, that the proclamation set forth for the cessing the prices of cattle, and other victuals, and all pains, forfeitures, &c. therein contained, should from thenceforth cease, and be put no further in execution: (some inconvenience, it seems, being found in this stinting the prices of food.) The proclamation for assessing the prices of cattle and provision, to which this seems to refer, came out 1549; and may be read in the foregoing history.

Sir James  
Croft grati-  
fied.

For the good service that Sir James Croft had done in Ireland, who was sent over thither the latter end of the last year, now in November a letter was sent to him from the king and council, that the king had given him 1000*l.* and had received him into his service in the privy chamber; and that he should have in wages of his household servants forty able horsemen, at twelve-pence per diem, and sixty footmen, at six-pence per diem.

The parlia-  
ment pro-  
rogued.

The parliament, that should have met November 4, whether the cause were the remainder of the sweating sickness or something else, was put off till a further time. Wherefore the king wrote letters in September to the lord chancellor, commanding him to take order for a prorogation until the first of Hilary Term; and to learn how many rooms were void, by the death of divers knights of the shire and burgesses, and to signify the same to his majesty: and that able men might furnish the house, the council, Oct. 28,



made an order, that not young persons, but grave and elderly, should be chosen for the parliament. 1551.

The French king now had a third son born, intituled Duc d'Engoulesme. For him Jarnac, the French ambassador, desired the king, from his master, to stand godfather. To which the king gave this answer: that he was glad of the news, and thanked the king his master, that he should be godfather to his son, being a token of the good will he bore him; and that he would dispatch, for the accomplishment thereof, the Lord Clinton, lord admiral. The French king has a third son.

The Lord Clinton, in this said month of November, was dispatched ambassador into France; Sir William Pickering being ambassador leiger there before, and so continuing. One point of his embassy was, to christen the French king's son in the king's name; for which that lord had a particular commission from the king, under seal: and there was a letter of order writ, to deliver him 500 marks in French crowns, at six shillings the piece, towards his charges in the voyage. What the expences were, when he stood proxy for the king at this royal infant's baptism, may be seen by this warrant following: "A warrant, dated in January, to the lord treasurer, for the payment of 292 French crowns to the lord admiral; which he gave in reward to the governour, the nurses, and other ministers about the king's youngest son, lately christened by him in the king's name, naming him Edward Alexander." At this ceremony, the Lord Clinton presented the queen with two gold flagons with chains, weighing 165 ounces, from the king. And for this office that nobleman was gratified by his master, when he came home, with two good lordships, one in Yorkshire, and another in Somersetshire. The Lord Clinton goes ambassador to France, to christen the French king's child; and

But there was another great point wherein the present embassy of this lord consisted, namely, to transact the matter of the match between King Edward and the French king's daughter. For which there was a commission to him, and to Sir William To transact the match.

1551. Pickering, jointly and severally, to hear all manner of matters with the French king, concerning the marriage between the king's majesty, and the Lady Elizabeth, the French king's daughter, and the confirmation thereof according to their instructions, which they must receive. The instructions delivered them consisted in three articles.

Barnaby  
Fitz-Patric  
sent into  
France for  
breeding.

In the Lord Clinton's company went by order Sir W. Stafford, Sir Adrian Poynings, Sir John Norton, Sir John Terry, Sir Richard Corbet, Mr. Brook, Mr. Nevyl, and among the rest, Barnaby Fitz-Patric, a young Irish gentleman, and one of the chief gentlemen of the king's privy chamber, and much favoured by the king, having been bred up with him from a child. Him the king, taking this opportunity, sent into the French king's court, furnished him with instructions under his own hand, for his behaviour there, which are preserved in Fuller's History ; appointed him four servants, gave him 300 French crowns in his purse, and a letter to the French king in his favour, declaring, that the king had sent him thither to remain in his court, to learn the fashions, for the better serving him at his return. He was instructed to converse with Sir William Pickering, the English ambassador, as much as he could. And when he was there, the king held a correspondence by letters with him.

p. 288.

Letters of  
thanks to  
the French  
king.

Letters were sent this same November to the said Pickering, that it was the king's pleasure, that at his next going to the French court, he would pray the king to permit his majesty to have a thousand tun of wheat, which the citizens of London desired to buy of him ; for the dearth was great in the city. This was readily complied with by the French king ; and more than the king's request, that is, 1200 tun, was permitted to be transported. The said king likewise paid civilities to Fitz-Patric, taking him into his court. This caused King Edward in December to write a letter of thanks to him, both for his liberal grant of 1200 tun of wheat to be bought in France,

for the relief of the city of London, and for his gentle receiving of Barnaby Fitz-Patric into his service, and placing of him in his privy chamber. In February following, I find, orders were given to pay Barnaby Fitz-Patric his annuity of 150*l*. 1551.

A letter in this above-named month of December was sent to the Lord Clinton, to repair, immediately at his return from the French king, to the castle of Guisnes; and there calling to him the captain of the same, to view and consider the same castle, the town, the buildings, and the fortifications, and the wants, decays, or needs there. And thereupon to weigh what buildings and fortifications were already begun, and of what importance; and whether they needed to be altered, or what else might be better devised: and that he should set order with the surveyors there, for the going in hand with the same. This order was sent, I suppose, upon information of some defects of that town and castle. And now the Lord Clinton being in France, it was thought fit to take that opportunity to send this great and expert captain to view the strength and weakness of that piece, and to give his orders for the security thereof; the English court having always a jealous eye upon the French, lest they might, some time or other, take their advantage against those places in France belonging to the English. Guisnes to be surveyed.

There was also, in the same month of December, a commission given forth to Sir Richard Cotton and Sir Richard Bray, Knts. to repair with certain instructions to the said castle and county of Guisnes, as also to the town of Calais, and to certain other pieces on that side of the seas. And there shewing their commission, to hear their opinions and advice, as well of the counsellors in each of the said pieces, as of other officers there, concerning the works, buildings, and fortifications of the said pieces. Such was the circumspection of the king and his council, over their confines upon France, notwithstanding this present appearing friendship with that king. A commission for Guisnes and Calais.

1551.  
The lord  
admiral  
comes  
home.  
Council  
Book.

The lord admiral returned from his embassy, and these other charges committed to him, December 30th, and then delivered to the lords the ratifications of the marriage between the king's majesty and the Lady Elizabeth, the French king's daughter, under the great seal of France. And it was resolved, that the same treaty should be delivered to the lord treasurer, to be by him reposed in the treasury of the Exchequer, to remain there of record in safe keeping.

p. 289.

## CHAP. VI.

The English jealous of the emperor. The Bishop of Ely hath the great seal: delivered up by the Lord Rich. His rise and wealth. Some account of the Bishop of Ely. Richard Turner, B.D. A mint at York. Merchants of the Stilyard.

The empe-  
ror pre-  
pares a  
fleet in  
winter.

IT was hardly practicable for the king to keep all fair at once with France and the emperor: but as the king's friendship seemed to become cordial with one prince, the other grew into jealousy, as though the friendship diminished towards him. And this was the case at this time with the emperor, after these mutual respects with France before mentioned. And the good understanding with the emperor began to be much doubted; especially now in December, upon account of a fleet that was setting forth immediately, by the emperor's order. Mons. De Bever, a sea officer, was newly come to the emperor, and after six or eight days, was dispatched towards Zealand, to rig out, as the speech went, a great number of ships, at this unseasonable time of the year; some reported sixty sail, others, thirty: and that he was to go with the same for Spain in all haste; or, according to others, after Christmas. Skipperius, the emperor's admiral, lay then also in Zealand about maritime affairs. Of this, Sir Thomas Chamberlain, the king's ordinary ambassador, wrote to the lords of the council, in much doubt about it. For he

England  
jealous  
thereof.



could not tell what to make of that bruit, that ships should be sent to Spain; considering, the emperor had as good ships in Biscay, and enow, and meeter ships for the wars, than those in that country: which made him remember the year 1536 or 1537, when the emperor, being then in Spain, a number of hulks were bruited to be sent out of Flanders thither, and after were discovered to have sought landing in England, as he heard then say; praying God they did not mean to attempt again. And to encourage some such purpose of invasion, reports were thrown up and down in the Low Countries, of the weak condition of England at this time. And so did the ambassador inform the lords: "These people (as the tenour of his letter ran) do verily think things to be worse in the realm than, I trust, they shall find to be. God forgive them that cause our poor country to be slandered and talked of, as presently it is." 1551.

But it was certain, whether upon these movings of the emperor, or for some other cause, that the king also was making preparation for the seas: insomuch, that the president of the Lady Regent's council asked Chamberlain the reason of it. To whom he replied, that he had not heard thereof. But if any such were, he supposed it was to keep the narrow seas from rovers. For (he said) these wars were not to be looked for to be other than before had been seen: that when the emperor having war with France, and we neuter, the poor merchants were robbed on each side. And for any other purpose he could not guess. Thus might one see they were in jealousy of England. But to look at home. England fits out to sea. p. 290.

The king was bred up to armes as well as learning. For the royal youth was warlike and active, and loved to exercise himself in feats of armes. December 7th (the king's Journal makes it the 4th) in Hide Park was a great muster in his presence, after this manner: first came the king's trumpeters; and then the Lord Bray, in gilt harness, captain of the A great muster. Vitellius, F. 5.

1551. pensioners, and a great banner of the king's armes. Then all the pensioners, in compleat harness, and great array, in white and black, five and five in a rank. And after them came their servants, in number an hundred, with great horses and harness, in white and black, and spears. The second company was led by the lord treasurer, being an hundred men of armes, with embroidered coats, red and white, with spears: his standard a falcion of gold. The third company belonged to the Duke of Northumberland, being an hundred men of armes, in velvet embroidery, with trumpeters: his standard a lion crowned gold, and ragged staff. The fourth captain was the Lord Marquis of Northampton, with an hundred men of armes in yellow and black: spears, pensils, and trumpeters: his standard the maidenhead. The fifth was the Earl of Bedford, with an hundred men of armes, in red and white: his standard a goat white, a trumpeter, pensils and spears. The sixth the Earl of Rutland, with an hundred men of armes, in yellow and blue: his standard a peacock and pensils. The seventh the Earl of Huntingdon, with fifty men of armes, in blue: spears, standard and pensils: his standard a maunch. The eighth the Earl of Pembroke, with an hundred men of armes: his standard the green dragon. The ninth the Lord Cobham, with fifty men of armes, in black and white: his standard the Saracen's Head. The tenth the Lord Chamberlain, with fifty men of armes, coats of white and red, and spears; their coats in broidery, pensils: his standard the maiden's body. The eleventh, Mr. Treasurer Cheny, with an hundred men of armes; all black; spears and pensils; besides eosterels: his standard the rose in the sun. There is some variety in the numbers of the men, as set down in King Edward's Journal. The horses were all fair and great. They marched twiee about St. James's, and so went away.

On Monday, December 21st, *anno regni Reg. Edwardi VI. quinto*, letters were brought from the

king, and delivered to the Lord Rich, by William Marquis of Winchester, lord treasurer, John Duke of Northumberland, president of the council, and Thomas Lord Darcy, lord chamberlain of the household, at his house in Great St. Bartholomew's. (Sir John Hayward, writer of the reign of this King Edward, adds the Earl of Pembroke, falsely, and leaves out the Marquis and the Lord Darcy, defectively.) And being in an inner chamber there, between the hours of eight and nine in the morning, he delivered them the great seal. About ten of the clock, the same lords offered and presented it to the king, in the new palace of Westminster, in his chamber there, in the presence of divers nobles, and others. The king kept the seal with him till the next day, viz. Tuesday, December 22. On which day, about ten o'clock, the king committed and delivered it to the reverend father in Christ, Lord Thomas, Bishop of Ely, *durante beneplacito*, to keep, exercise, and use it. And then ordained and appointed the said bishop keeper of the great seal: present the aforesaid Marquis of Winchester, Duke of Northumberland, Lord Darcy, William Peter, and William Cecyl, Knts. principal secretaries to the king, Robert Bowes, Philip Hoby, John Mason, Knts. Thomas Powl, comptroller of the hanaper, Thomas Cotton, deputy of John Hales, clerk of the said hanaper, Anthony Skynner, one of the examiners of the court of Chancery, Edinund Walter, and Edmund Day, and others. The same day a warrant came to the chancellor of the augmentations, to pay him for the wages, diet, and livery of himself, and the ministers of the Chancery, in as large manner as the Lord Rich, or any other had, serving in that place.

1551.  
The great seal fetched from the Lord Rich. Chanc. Goodrick's Ledger-Book, Jul. B. 9,

Delivered to the Bishop of Ely. P. 291.

The king's Journal tells us, that the seal was sent for from the Lord Rich, considering his sickness; and that it was delivered to the Bishop of Ely, during his sickness, as though it were designed to be restored him again; and to this agrees, that he was only made

Made lord chancellor.

1551. keeper of it during pleasure. But, Jan. 19, the Lord Rich's indisposition continuing, and therefore he probably desiring to be eased of the office, the bishop was made lord chancellor; and that because, as *custos sigilli*, he could execute nothing in the parliament that should be done, but only to seal ordinary things, as the king writes; and a warrant was sent to the Bishop of Ely, to make out a commission to the lord treasurer, to take the said lord chancellor's oath.

King's  
Journal.

Why the  
Lord Rich  
laid down  
his place.

Hayward imposeth his own fancy upon his reader, rather than the truth, when he frameth the motive that prevailed with the Lord Rich to lay down his place, which he thus setteth down: "That he having built a fair estate, and perceiving what nimble ears were born to listen after treason; also for that a parliament was towards, and doubtful what questions might arise, made suit to the king, that in regard of the infirmities of his body, he might be discharged of his office." If the historian had spoke this as his conjecture, it might have passed better: but to tell us what was in that lord's mind, and to report it the true cause of his abandoning his chancellorship, when he openly alleged another cause to the king, this is scarce allowable. For, surely, that which the said lord asserted, namely, his infirmity, was at least one true cause that inclined him to relinquish it, being not able to attend the business it required. For he was certainly, the year before, visited with a sore sickness, at Lees, in Essex, with forty more of his family, as appears by the king's Journal; which, I doubt not, was some infectious disease, the relics whereof might hang upon him a great while after. And it is certain, in October, the master of the rolls, and three judges, and two civilians, were appointed commissioners, to dispatch the matters of the chancery, the chancellor being indisposed. But if any worldly respects made him incline to quit his place, one might be, that he did not like the proceedings in religion, being himself a favourer of the old superstition; and another, his friendship to the Duke of So-

King's  
Journal,  
p. 19.



merset, now under a cloud, with whom he saw he must fall; and therefore thought best to resign voluntarily, rather than to be forced so to do. It appeared also, that the said chancellor was declining at court some months before, by the anger the king and council had expressed against him; and that for a matter, indeed, which deserved commendation rather, seeming to shew his care and circumspection, how he set the great seal to any thing. For his rule was, not presently, upon a few privy counsellors hands, to seal any important matter with the great seal. It happened, in the month of September, 1551, a letter came to him, signed with the hands of eight counsellors, to pass somewhat under the great seal; but he delayed to do it, and sent the same letter back again, inclosed in one of his, to the Earl of Warwick, requiring more hands. At this, great offence was taken with the chancellor, and a letter was dispatched to him from the king, declaring his mislike of this his doing. The Earl of Warwick, I suppose, was concerned in this, and the broad seal was to be set to somewhat of his procuring for himself, or his friends; and to have this stop put to it by the chancellor, created some impatience in him, and he might resent it.

Yet Hayward saith true in this, that *he had built a fair estate*. A great part of which he had obtained under this king, either by gift, or by purchase; which, as I find them set down particularly in the king's Book of Sales, and partly in the Warrant Book, were thus: *An. Reg. Edw. 1<sup>o</sup>*. for fulfilling King Henry VIII. his purpose, and in consideration of service, the king gave him, by patent, dated June 1, the manor of Hatfeld Broadoak, in Essex, and divers other lands and tenements in the said county, yearly value 80*l.* 9*s.* 8*d.* and 13*l.* 6*s.* 4*d.* reserved.

*Item, Anno Reg. 3.* For 240*l.* and in consideration of divers spiritual promotions (which he had formerly got, but now parted with) the king, by patent, dated February 12, gave him the manor of

1551.

p. 292.

His wealth  
procured  
under King  
Edward.

1551. Wansted, with its rights, members, and appurtenances, in Essex, and the park there, and divers other lands and tenements, parcel of the said manor : yearly value 12*l*.

*Item, Anno Reg. 4.* He obtained of the king, in fee simple, all the house and scite of the late priory of Pretewel, alias Pritelwel, in the county of Essex, with divers other lands, tenements, &c. to the yearly value of 45*l*. 4*s*. to be holden *in capite*, by the tenth part of a knight's fee, paying yearly for the same 4*l*. 11*s*. and to take the profits from Michaelmas last. Dated in March.

*Item, Anno Reg. 4.* Of the king's special grace, and in consideration of service, he granted him, by patent, dated April 16, the manor and lordship of Brainktree, with its appurtenances, in Essex ; and the advowson of the vicarage and parochial church of Coggeshall, in Essex, parcel of the late possessions of the Bishop of London : yearly value 39*l*. 13*s*. 4*d*.

*Item, A gift to the Lord Rich, Anno Reg. 5, September* — (in consideration of his faithful service, and for 500*l*.) of the lordship of East Woodbury, in Essex, with divers other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 67*l*. 19*s*. 2*d*.

*Item, Anno Reg. 7, June 24.* A purchase was made by the same Lord Rich, of the honour of Raleigh, in Essex, with the hundred of Rochford, and Rochford in the same county. Value, yearly, of 113*l*. 13*s*. 4*d*.

p. 293.

This lord (to mention a passage or two concerning him, while we have him before us) was among those that were produced witnesses on Bishop Gardiner's behalf, anno 1550, when he declined the taking an oath, and being sworn in common form, saying, "That honourable personages, being of dignity and office, as he was, were by the laws of the realm privileged not to be sworn in common forms."

His saying concerning swearing persons of honour.

Fox, 1st

edit p. 792

His son and heir was Richard, Lord Rich, born about the beginning of King Edward's reign, who in his younger years travelled to Rome, and was there

in the year 1570. For a testimony whereof, as though it were a matter of religious merit, he procured formal letters testimonial from James, Cardinal of St. Mary, in Cosmedin, the pope's vicar-general, with his seal appendent. In which instrument, the said lord is exactly described,\* "To be of the county of Essex, and diocese of London; to be aged about two-and-twenty, of middle stature, without a beard, having scars upon the joints of two of his fingers of the left hand, and another in the middle of the palm of his right. That he was present in person in the office of the notary of the court; and that George Nevel and Walter Hinton did there see, know, and speak with him." Such narrow notice, it seems, was taken of the English gentlemen that came to Rome. But this testimonial was seized, and came into the hands of the secretary of state, and laid him under a cloud in the English court. But, begging pardon for this digression concerning the Lord Rich, I proceed to enquire into the qualities and abilities of Bishop Goodrick, that succeeded him. 1551.

Hayward hath represented the parts of this bishop, and his merit of so high a dignity, to be very slender. "A man (saith he) if happily able to discharge this place, assuredly no more." But it is agreeable to his ordinary practice, to make very ill representations of the clergy, especially such as favoured the gospel. The Bishop of Sarum, in his History, gives a character of this chancellor, quite contrary to that of Hayward; namely, "That he was a busy secular-spirited man, and gave himself up wholly to faction, and intrigues of state: and that though his opinions always leaned to the Reformation, it was no wonder, if a man so tempered, would prefer the keeping of his bishopric (in Queen Mary's days) to the discharge of his conscience." A hard farewell of a man of eminent figure, a long time in the state. I do

Some account of  
Chancellor  
Goodrick.

\* *Mediocris staturæ, imberbem, habentem cicatrices super juncturis duorum digitorum manus sinistrae, necnon aliam, &c.*

1551. acknowledge it his great failing, that he complied with the religion professed under that queen, if he did so; and he seems likewise to have been of the faction against the Duke of Somerset. For at Ely House they met; which house he had let out, or lent to the Duke of Northumberland, as I conjecture: for he lived not there himself, but in Warwick-lane.

Image of  
both  
churches.

p. 294.

Abating this, according to the collections we can pick up concerning this reverend man, he is misrepresented, and his memory wronged to posterity. In King Henry's days he sided with those that laboured a reformation of corrupt religion; insomuch that John Bale joined him, with several kings, archbishops and bishops, as Archbishop Cranmer, Archbishop Herman, of Colen; Bishop Barlow, Bishop Bird, Bishop Thurlby, Bishop Latimer, whom he took to be prophesied of, Rev. 17. to "Hate the whore," though they were before the horns of the beast. Under King Edward he was one of the learned bishops appointed to purge the public service from the old superstitions, and to frame the Book of Common Prayer. He was in many weighty commissions in this reign. I find A Lasco once applying to him, in behalf of his church of strangers; to whom he was very kind and assistant. He used learned reasons with Bishop Day, and argued with him before the council, for taking away popish altars. And for his abilities in matters of state, he was long nurtured up therein, by being employed both by King Henry and King Edward. In the great embassy to France, in May, 1551, he was one of the ambassadors, with Sir Philip Hoby, and others; and the bishop was the mouth of the rest, and made the speech to the French king; to which the Cardinal of Loraine made answer. Archbishop Parker, who knew him well, praised him for his impartial administration of justice. And in his epitaph, extant in Godwin's Catalogue, it appears he was not only employed by, but acceptable to, the two kings in many actions, both concerning the church and



commonwealth, and was often employed abroad in embassies to foreign princes, and at home a privy-counsellor; and his wisdom, integrity, and abstinence, is there commended. Under King Henry he had two great men belonging to him, *viz.* Thomas Smith, LL.D. (after knighted, and made secretary of state) was his chancellor; and Richard Cox, D. D. his chaplain, whom he preferred to King Henry, to be tutor to Prince Edward. What preferments befel him afterwards, under King Edward and Queen Elizabeth, are sufficiently known. 1551.

To whom I will add, for a third, Petrus Valentius, an honest, learned, French protestant, chaplain to this bishop, and whom he made his almoner in Ely, where he continued for above twenty years. An instance of whose integrity follows: while William Wolsey, of Well, in Cambridgeshire, and Robert Pygot, lay prisoners in Ely goal (afterwards burnt in that town) among others that came to see them, came this Valentius: who calling them kindly by the style of brethren, said, "That according to his office, he was come to talk with them; for that he had been amner there twenty years, and above. He desired them to take his coming in good part; and he promised them, that he would not endeavour to pull them from their faith; but he both required and desired them, in the name of Jesus Christ, to stand to the truth of the gospel, and God's word: beseeching God Almighty, for his son Jesus Christ's sake, to preserve both him and them in the same unto the end. For (as he added, calling them brethren again) that he knew not himself, how soon he should be at the same point with them." These, and such like words, he used: which coming so devoutly from him, caused all to water their cheeks; because it was contrary to the expectation they had of him.

The first use the new keeper made of his seal committed to him, was for the preferment of a learned and painful preacher of the gospel, who had divers years, under King Henry, suffered much for his holy

Petrus Valentius almoner to Goodrick.

A patent to Turner, for a prebend of Windsor.

1551. profession and good zeal, in preaching against papal corruptions, in Kent; well known to Archbishop Cranmer, who nominated him to Secretary Cecyl for Archbishop of Arnagh, and gave this character of him : *Nihil appetit, nihil ardet, nihil somniat, nisi Jesum Christum.* The man I am speaking of, was Richard Turner, B. D. whose patent was sealed December the 24th (two days after the bishop had the great seal) for a prebend in the college of Windsor, which Simon Simons, lately deceased, had. This Turner had formerly been fellow of Magdalen College, Oxon, and the chief occasion of the first Concordance in English, which was done by Marbeck, a singing man of Windsor. Turner, about the latter end of King Henry, seeing him diligently transcribing the English Bible, for his own private use, and well observing him to be an industrious and ingenious man, advised him to set about the framing of a Concordance, with directions to him therein; and he effected it. This Turner died in exile in the following reign.

A mint at York.

Two days after, viz. December 26, he sealed with the great seal the establishment of the king's mint within the city of York, and articles for the same; which patent was delivered to one Mountford, officer in the said mint, who was left behind, and appointed to tarry and receive the same. The establishment of which mint was subscribed and examined by Sir Walter Mildmay, and contained eleven articles. The officers were, George Gale, Esq. under-treasurer of the mint; John Wind, comptroller thereof; Richard Lee, assay master; and John Monnes, provost of all the moneyers of the mint. Between the king and these was an indenture made, that they had undertaken, before the king, to make certain monies after the standard, as in the same was mentioned.

The merchants of the Stilyard put down.

The merchants of the *Stilyard*, called also the *Merchants of the Haunse*, who were Almaines, were put down this year, and their liberties seized into the king's hands; and afterwards remained in like condition with other stranger merchants. These were mer-

chants here in Henry III. his reign, and before, and brought in grain, cordage, and other naval provisions, flax and hemp, linen cloth, wax, and steel; from whence the place in Dowgate-ward, where they dwelt, was called the *Steel-yard*. The Kings of England encouraged them at first, and gave them large privileges; and, among others, of shipping out woollen cloth. They were permitted to have an alderman among them, who was their chief magistrate. The mayor and aldermen of the City granted them divers liberties; as, to lay up their corn in inns, and to sell it in their garners. And they in like manner, on their parts, were bound to several duties; as, among the rest, to repair Bishop's Gate. But at length they brought in so much corn, that it beat down the price of it here, to the injury of our husbandmen in the country. And the English in time grew merchants themselves, and traded abroad in the commodities that these Almaines did: whence arose great envies among them, and many complaints were by the English merchants put up against them, till in the end they were suppressed. But to shew the last rencounters they met with, because it belongs to this time:

“ December 29, the aldermen and merchants of the Stilyard appeared before the council; and to them the information of the merchant adventurers was delivered, and a copy given in writing; to which they were to answer January 20. And an order was sent to the king's solicitor-general, Mr. Goodrick, Mr. Gosnold, and the Recorder of London, to consider and overlook the information of the merchant adventurers, and the answer of the merchants of the Stilyard, and to weigh the cause with all circumspection and wisdom, and to signify their judgments thereupon, and keep their conferences secret. On February 9 the case of these merchants was heard before the council, and referred to a further hearing. In the mean time the Recorder of London, and other learned men in the law, should view the charters and writings of these merchants. February 24, the decree passed

Council  
Book.

p. 296.

1551.

King's  
Journal.Council  
Book.

against the merchants of the Stilyard, and is registered at large in the Council Book." In the King's Journal the decree is briefly set down, and the sum thereof was, That they were no sufficient corporation; that their number, names, and nations, were unknown; that they coloured strangers' goods; that they shipped 44,000 cloths in a year, and all other strangers together shipped but 1100. A few days after, ambassadors came from Hamburgh and Lubeck, on the behalf of these merchants; and, March 2, they were committed for answer to the lord chancellor, the secretaries, Sir Robert Bows, Sir John Baker, Judge Montague, and some others. And (to bring all this matter together, though it fall in the years following) "May 11, 1552, the Lord Chancellor, Secretary Cecyl, Dr. Wotton, Sir John Baker, Sir Robert Bows, Justice Mountague, the Recorder of London, Mr. Gosnold, and Mr. Goodrick, were to reply to the ambassador of the Stede, touching the sentence pronounced against the merchants of the Stilyard, and to devise what may be answered thereunto, so as it may consist with equity, justice, and his majesty's honour. July 8, the ambassador of the Stedes was answered, and satisfied, saving in two things, viz. 1. For licence to take upon the old custom such merchandizes as arrived here since their coming thither; and, 2. For the term of their grant to be prolonged. The same day orders were sent to the customers of London, declaring, that the king licensed the Stedes to carry out a certain number of cloths, and a certain quantity of lead, for their old custom, in consideration that the premisses were provided before the decree made touching the resuming of the privileges into the king's hand." October 11, further proceedings against the merchants of the Stilyard were referred to the Exchequer. The next year, viz. April 23, 1553, the company and fellowship of the Haunses obtained a licence to bring out of their countries all kind of merchandizes, being of their own commodities, as they have heretofore used to bring in, until the feast

Warr.  
Book.



of the Nativity next, and the same to put to vend, 1551.  
 paying the customs as they have done before. And  
 in May, the same year 1553, a warrant was issued  
 to the customers of London, to receive of the mer-  
 chants of the Stilyard, for all such wares as they shall  
 bring into this realm between this and Christmas  
 next, only such customs as they have been wont to  
 pay. This favour was obtained to them, as it seems,  
 by the solicitation of the messenger from the cities of  
 the Stedes, Dr. Apollonius; who had his passport  
 from hence, May 13, to go safely beyond sea, carry-  
 ing also the king's letters to the Stedes with him.—  
 Now to look back again.

In January, the Master of the Rolls; Portman, Persons appointed to assist the lord keeper.  
 Hales, and Rede, judges; Dr. William May, Leyson,  
 Oliver, Bellasis, Cook, civilians; were commissioned  
 to assist the Bishop of Ely in hearing matters of  
 Chancery.

## CHAP. VII.

p. 297.

The king's chaplains. William Thomas, his grants. Thomas  
 Rose, Hugh Goodacre, eminent divines, preferred. The  
 king's deliberations. Annuities for the chaplains. The Bi-  
 shoprick of Bristol fleeced. Enquiry into the king's revenue.  
 Commissions.

IN this month of December, it was thought fit the Six chap-  
 lains ap-  
 pointed for  
 the king.  
 K. Edw.  
 Journal.  
 king should retain six chaplains in ordinary, who  
 should not only wait upon him, but be itineraries, and  
 preach the gospel all the nation over. Two of these  
 six to be ever present at court, and four absent abroad  
 in preaching. One year, two in Wales, two in Lan-  
 cashire and Derby; the next year, two in the marches  
 of Scotland, two in Yorkshire; the third year, two  
 in Devonshire, two in Hampshire; the fourth year,  
 two in Norfolk and Essex, and two in Kent and Sus-  
 sex: and these six to be, Bil, Harley, Pern, Grindal,  
 Bradford, and the sixth, dashed out in the Journal,  
 but probably, was Knox; for he was one of the

1551. preachers of the North, at Newcastle and elsewhere, and had a salary paid him out of the Exchequer. But the number was reduced to four (Bradford also being left out), who were styled *The King's Ordinary Chaplains*.

Warrant  
Book.

Grants to  
Thomas,  
clerk of the  
council.

William Thomas, who the year before had been admitted one of the clerks of the council (of whom before something was said, and more may be hereafter), had his fortunes to make, and so crowded in, with others, upon the king for his liberality. He obtained a patent for life, the 27th of this December, of a toll of all cattle, merchandize, and other customs and subsidies, within the towns of Prestend, Beelth, and Elvel, in the marches of Wales; and of salt-fats, &c. in the county of Worcester; and an annuity of forty marks of the fee farm of the city of Hereford; to have for term of life, after the decease, surrender, &c. of William West. And (to lay these matters together) another patent, May 12, the next year, for an annuity of forty pounds, payable out of the Exchequer, *durante beneplacito*. On which day an annuity of fifty marks was granted to Bernard Hampton, another clerk of the council, payable as the former; and to Armagel Wade, another clerk, fifty pounds yearly. And the next year (viz. 1553), March 31, a custody was granted to the said William Thomas, Esq. of two parts of the manor of Bradesly, and of the parsonage of Cicester, in Gloucestershire, and all other lands and tenements in Bardesly, Weyilswel, Barkley Herons, in the said shire, and in Reding and Windsor, in Berks, by the yearly value and rent of 19*l*. and not above; which lately were Anthony Bouchier's, but now in the king's hand by reason of the minority of Thomas Bouchier, and also the custody of the said Thomas during his minority.

Bernard  
Hampton.

Armagel  
Wade.

p. 298.

Other  
grants.  
Warr.  
Book.

And besides all this, I find that in January, 1550, he had a good pennyworth of the king, viz. the purchase of the manor of Lentwarden, in Herefordshire, with divers other lands; among the rest, the capital messuage and demesnes of the manor of Tedleston.

In September this year, 1551, the king, by way of gift in fee-simple, granted him the manor of Garway, with the appurtenances, in the county of Hereford, and several other lands. In the which year, Thomas was one of those that were appointed to go over in quality of ambassador to the French king, in a most splendid manner, with the Marquis of Northampton, about a match with that king's daughter, as was said before, when he was allowed forty shillings a day for his diet. He was also once employed by the council in a secret journey, for the expences of which they made him allowance. 1551.

January 18, the seal was passed for a presentation to the vicarage of West Ham, in Essex, to be enjoyed by Thomas Rose, that had endured much imprisonment and danger for his godly zeal towards religion; and was so well thought of by Archbishop Cranmer, that he was nominated also for Archbishop of Armagh, at the same time with Turner, before mentioned. Rose, vicar of West Ham.

It was not long after, viz. March 19, that the seal was granted for a plurality to Hugh Goodacre, M. A. vicar of the parish of Shalfleet, in the Isle of Wight, and chaplain to Ponet, Bishop of Winchester, to hold two other benefices, of any yearly value. This man I the rather mention, because of his great abilities in learning, and for being nominated, with the two others mentioned above, for the Irish archbishoprick; which he obtained, and went over into Ireland to *superintend* that province, and died there. Goodacre hath a plurality.

The time of the year being now more proper for deliberation than action, in the month of February the young king had his thoughts, becoming mature years, bent upon the present juncture of affairs, both abroad and at home; and put down with his own hand, in a memorial, divers things to be deliberated well upon. And, first, endeavours having been made by the king to set on foot a treaty of peace between the emperor and the French king, which as yet took Things by the king propounded to be deliberated: About peace abroad;

1551. no place, the king made a note, what was further to be done for the compassing of that matter.

About the  
Deputy of  
Ireland.

Sir James Croft was now Deputy of Ireland. The king, for the better taking care of that kingdom, made it another point of his consideration, whether Croft should still remain deputy, or some person of nobility to be placed in his room; and, for the easier government of that people, whether it would not be convenient to have three councils there? And if so, then to consider, who should be the persons of which those councils should consist, and the properest places where they should hold their residence.

About the  
parlia-  
ment;

The parliament now sitting, and many bills brought in, the king made another note, for him to consult what number of acts should be passed, and which.

About the  
Rolls;

p. 299.

He set it down also, among his matters to be considered, who should succeed Beaumont in the office of the Rolls, that he might be the better and more honestly served in that place? For as for Beaumont, he was now put in prison for forging a false deed, as from the Duke of Suffolk, deceased, to the Lady Powis. And other of his deceits were, not long after, discovered.

And the  
Mint.

Lastly, having set up a mint at York, he thought it fit to be considered, whether any pence of the Tower, or baser standard, should be there coined?

And on the backside of this memorial are these learned lawyers' names written by the secretary, viz. Mr. Saunders, Mr. Dyer, Mr. Attorney, Mr. Solicitor, Mr. Carrel; as fit persons, out of which a master of the rolls might be chosen, to succeed Beaumont.

A procla-  
mation  
against  
frays in  
churches.

A proclamation came forth, February 20, prohibiting frays and fightings in cathedral churches, and bringing in horses and mules into the same: whereby may be gathered, what indecencies and profanations were now practised in the churches.

There was an annuity by patent, dated March 13, of forty pounds, granted to Edmund Grindal, B. D.



and chaplain to the king's majesty, *durante beneplacito*, with a *liberat dormant*. The same annuity, of the same date, was granted to William Bill, D.D. John Harley, B.D. and Andrew Perne, D.D. This I take out of the Lord Chancellor Goodrick's Ledger Book, and the Warrant Book. Whether the two other chaplains, Bradford and Knox, mentioned in the King's Journal, were discharged, or their patents for their annuities were not yet finished, might be doubted. But it appears, though Bradford and Knox were nominated for chaplains, yet the four former were only retained; and Knox had an annuity of 40*l.* for his good service in preaching in the North, till he should have some place in the church conferred on him. It was out of respect to him, I suppose, that one William Knox, perhaps his brother or relation, had, in September, 1552, a passport granted to him, to bring in, or carry out of any haven in England, all such merchandizes as were permitted by the law, to endure for one whole year; and to make the said traffic in any ship of the burden of an hundred tons.

1551.  
Annuities  
for the  
king's  
chaplains.

John Knox

William  
Knox.

Sir George Norton prevailed with some of the council, to obtain the king's letters, which were dated in December, 1550, to Bush, Bishop of Bristol, to get from him the good manor of Leigh, in Somersetshire, belonging to his bishoprick: and in exchange South Petherton, the parsonage thereof, &c. was to be made over to him. To which the bishop would not yield a great while: insomuch that a letter was sent from the privy council to him; marvelling that he had not granted the king's request for Sir George Norton (the same, I suppose, that was high sheriff of Essex) considering he was offered as considerable a recompence; and therefore the king eftsones required him not to deny it. This letter was dated Jan. 7. Another letter was sent to him, that setting apart all excuses, he will send up one to the council to give order in his behalf; having with vain excuses, as the king was informed, abused his highness. On Feb. 8, the Bishop of Bristol appeared before the

A manor  
got from  
the Bishop  
of Bristol.  
Council  
Book.  
Warrant  
Book.

1351. council, touching his answer to be made to this request for this knight, who desired, upon reasonable recompence, to have the said manor. The bishop then affirmed, that he had granted it in lease to his brother Bush, and upon this condition, that if his successor,
- p. 300. the bishop that hereafter should be, would dwell upon it himself, that then Bush should suffer him to have it, taking of him recompence for the charges already bestowed upon it; which amounted to above two hundred pounds besides the rent limited in the lease. And although the council persuaded the bishop as much as was possible, to render the king's request in this cause, yet he would in no wise yield thereto, but departed, refusing to commune of the matter: but afterwards he was wrought upon to part with his lease: for, March 8, the council wrote to him, "That whereas he had accorded to exchange the manor, so he might have it during his life, the king desired him to assure the reversion of it, and not to make any other lease of it than is already made;" which the bishop did perform; and in September the king granted back to him the said manor, with the appurtenances, for his life, without account rendering, in consideration of his gift thereof to the king in fee-simple.

And granted to Sir George Norton.

And then immediately the king granted the reversion of the said manor of Leigh to Sir George Norton, after the bishop's death, to be holden by the hundredth part of a knight's fee, with a grant to him and his heirs, to have like courts, franchises, and perquisites of court, as the said bishop, or any before him, have had.

A commission for enquiry into the king's revenue.

The king's necessity, and the jealousy of the integrity of his officers that handled and received his revenues, made him think fit to issue out a commission in January to the Lord Chancellor, the Earl of Bedford, Sir John Gates, Sir William Petre, and others, to call before them the heads and inferior ministers of the Court of Exchequer, the Court of the Duchy of Lancaster, the Court of Wards and

Liveries, the Court of Augmentations, the Court of First-Fruits and Tenths ; charging and commanding them to make before the said commissioners perfect and full declaration, in writing under their hands, of all the king's revenues, profits, and casualties within their several charges and offices, answerable in the said courts, before the date of the said commission, and of all rents, resoluts, fees, annuities, pensions, and other deductions. And divers other commissions of this nature, for calling to account the king's officers employed in his revenues, or other benefits accruing to him by chantries, church-plate, jewels, bell-metal, &c. and for making certain sales of his lands, were issued out the ensuing year. 1551.

## CHAP. VIII.

p. 301.

Dr. Redman dies. Some account of him. Commissions for making ecclesiastical laws. Bullinger's correspondence in England. Dr. Cox's letter to him. Conferences about the sacrament. The Duke of Somerset's end ; brought about by Northumberland, and some others. Somerset's friends and dependents. Edward Semour restored.

**STILL** to take up a few more scattered matters, happening within the compass of this year, relating chiefly to religion and learning.

In the month of November, Trinity College in Cambridge lost her learned master, and the church of Westminster her reverend dean, Dr. Redman ; one of the solidest and best-read divines in the land ; and to whose judgment great deference was paid by all ; and therefore he was appointed one of the divines to compose the Common Prayer Book. Alexander Nowel, or Noel, the master of Westminster School (afterward dean of Paul's) set forth a little book, containing the said Redman's last judgment of several points of religion in controversy ; especially concerning the doctrine of the sacrament, according as he had received it from the mouth of that learned

The death of Redman

Noel's book of Redman's judgment.

Preface to Noel's Answer to Dorman.

1551. man, a little before his death. The book was drawn into articles; whereunto were subscribed the names of Dr. Yong, Mr. Cratford, Noel's fellow-teacher in Westminster School, Richard Burton, Ellis Lomas, John Wright, Rich. Elithorn, Dr. Redman's servants. These, together with Alexander Noel, subscribed severally their names to every article, before Dr. Cox, then dean of Westminster. The copy was exhibited to certain of the king's privy council; and from them came to the printer's hand. And Fox hath published this tract in his Martyrology.

Redman  
on his  
death-bed  
sends for  
Noel.

The occasion of this declaration of Redman was thus, as Noel sets it down in his Preface to his Answer to Dorman: Dr. Redman, in respect of some of his friends, durst not in his health utter the truth, as he knew in his conscience; but of his own accord, now in the last conclusion of his life, sent for Noel, when he was on his death-bed, and setting all worldly respects aside, as he said, confessed and acknowledged the abuses and errors of popery, in his hearing, to the confirming of Noel's faith.

The papists  
charge  
Noel with  
forgery.

But Dorman charged Noel, for publishing the abovesaid book, as though he belied that reverend man: and that to honest, learned, and good men, then living, it was notoriously known he did so. But Noel, for his own vindication, appealed to the rest that were subscribers, as witnesses, as well as himself. Nay, and Dr. Yong was he that had first laid this charge upon Noel, though this very man subscribed his hand to as much of the Treatise as he heard: and

p. 302.

Noel moreover protested before God, as he should answer it at the dreadful day, that Yong subscribed with him, and others, as was printed in that little Book of the Conference between Dr. Redman and him. Yea, and further, that Dr. Yong of his own accord made offer to Dr. Cox, that he would exhibit to him in writing, subscribed with his own hand, a larger Treatise concerning Dr. Redman's judgment, touching his allowing of the said articles: and also what his judgment was touching other articles then



in controversy. Noel added, that he thought himself for ever bounden to Dr. Redman, and did heartily thank God therefore. And that he was so little ashamed of any infamy that should grow unto him, and so little afraid of any lie by him uttered of Dr. Redman, that he did before God most heartily rejoice in that truth, which he heard of the said reverend man.

1551.

By this it may appear, that Redman was reckoned a papist, however he made a shift to live in the outward communion of the then established church, and was named to be one of those that were to assist at the compiling of the Common Prayer. It is certain, he was accounted by Dorman, and the papists in those times, as one of theirs; and so he was accounted by protestants then also; and therefore his judgment was so much made use of by them; that a man who in all his life before stood so much against the protestant doctrine, particularly of justification by faith, and wrote against it (whatsoever his inward thoughts of it were) should in the last sands of his life revoke this, and disallow so many other popish errors, which he was never known to disallow of before; but now he was going to die, the truth would out. It was not sufficient then to denominate a true protestant, to live in the public communion of the church, because so many papists, it is plain, then did so: nor that he was of the number of those divines that were appointed to prepare a public office of prayers: for Bishop Day, another of them, was a strong papist; and so was Robertson affected; and not much otherwise was Bishop Skip. In truth, in the composing of that office, choice was made, not so much of men with respect to their opinions, as to their great learning and knowledge in the usages and practice of the antient church. And it may be a question, whether these, though nominated to this work, assisted at all in it, any more than Heth, Bishop of Worcester, that was nominated, with others, for correcting of the Ordinal, yet would have no hand in it.

Redman,  
whether a  
Papist.

1551.  
Made a  
sermon at  
Bucer's fu-  
neral.

Redman preached at the funeral of Martin Bucer, when the university buried him ; wherein he bestowed much commendation on him : which was the more remarkable, because he had been no friend to Bucer's actions nor opinions, and there had been some discord between them on certain points. Whence Nicolas Car, in his letter to Cheke concerning Bucer's death, said, that by Redman's oration the glory and esteem of Bucer was augmented. " And so much the more, said he, we congratulate his virtue, that he who sometime opposed Bucer's doings, and was thought to dissent from him, yet could not find any matter with which to reproach or charge him." And again, " That he should be praised and extolled by such as were his antient friends, might seem to proceed from favour and affection ; but to be spoken well of by one whom he did disagree from, and oppose, was a sign of some singular excellency to have been in him." In truth, it redounded much to Redman's integrity, that though there had been some differences between them, yet he would not, now he was dead, say any thing to hurt his good name.

p. 303.

His con-  
dition.  
Ascham,  
Ep. ad  
Sturm.  
Lib. 1.  
Epist.

As to Redman's condition and studies, he was nearly related to the learned and sober prelate, Tunstall, Bishop of Durham ; he studied both at Cambridge and Oxford for some years, and then went abroad, and tarried at Paris a long time : came back well learned in Latin and Greek, about the year 1531, and so improved by a diligent reading of Tully, that Cheke and Smith, both sufficiently known, being excited to imitate him, became afterwards the greatest scholars in England ; and both preferred in the court. Afterwards he wholly addicted himself to the study of divinity ; wherein he excelled, in the opinion of all. He was of an agreeable conversation, modest, kind, and good to all, even enemies ; troublesome and hard to none. Such an artist in his sermons for the forming of a Christian life, as Ascham (one that then lived in the university) professed he hardly ever heard the like. In his opinions

concerning the marriage of priests, and some other controversies, he declared himself to be of a right judgment, in the public schools. He differed from protestants in the doctrine of justification by faith only; but without sharpness: and the great reason why he did so, was because he was afraid of a licentious life, which some would be apt to take up from it, if it should have been taught the common people. But what his last thoughts were of that point, we saw before. 1551.

As yet the realm remained without a body of ecclesiastical laws, the old ones being not proper for a state that had renounced the pope, and his superstitions. Therefore a commission, dated October 22, was directed to Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury; Nicolas, Bishop of London; and Richard Cox, almoner; Peter Martyr, Rowland Taylor of Hadley, Bartholomew Traheron, John Lucas, and John Gosnold; to consider of all the king's ecclesiastical laws, according to a statute of parliament made 3 Reg. Edwardi VI. wherein thirty-two persons were appointed for the same purpose; which might be reduced to eight: and to gather and put in order in writing all such of them as they should think convenient, and other laws ecclesiastical, as they should think meet to be used within the realm; and to deliver the same unto the king, that they might be further considered, according to his statutes. There was also a commission dated in November, to the same purpose, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Ely, Cocks (alias Cox) Peter Martyr, William May, Rowland Taylor, John Lucas, and Richard Goodrick, to confer together concerning the ecclesiastical laws. This commission superseded that made in October; wherein three persons were nominated, which it was thought convenient afterwards to change, viz. the Bishop of London, Traheron, and Gosnold, for the Bishop of Ely, May, and Goodrick. These commissioners finished at last this great work; and the king lived not long

A commission for framing ecclesiastical laws. Warr. Book.

1551. enough to get it enacted; and so it fell, and that great labour frustrated.

Bullinger's  
advice con-  
cerning the  
reforma-  
tion in  
England.

p. 304.

There was a great deference given by our reformers unto the learned in the church of Zurich, and letters of ecclesiastical moment passed between each. As namely, between Bullinger, the chief pastor there, and Dr. Richard Cox, Dean of Westminster and Chancellor of Oxford. That grave man did very earnestly admonish the said Cox of his duty in the church and university, and adjure him to mind the charge entrusted with him; which Cox took in very good part, and as coming from the Spirit of God, as he expressed it in his letter to him, writ in May this year; acknowledging, how slow and heavy men are commonly in God's business, and how diligent and studious in their own. Bullinger also gave him counsel about reforming of the church; advising him to use his interest, that divine worship might not be defiled by popish ceremonies and customs. To which advice, I conjecture, the employment of Cox, in correcting the divine offices to be used in this church, gave occasion. Cox replied, "That his mind and judgment was, that all things in the church ought to be pure, simple, and far removed from the rudiments and pomps of this world. But that his authority was but small; wishing the bishops were of his mind and belief;" and so leaving the care and event of things to God, concluded.

Sends cer-  
tain books  
to Cox,

Bullinger also this year, by an agent hither, named Joannes ab Ulmis, sent the said Dr. Cox, together with a long and kind letter, two books, viz. Calvin's Treatise concerning the Concord between the Churches of Geneva and Zurich, in the matter of the Eucharist; and the other, his fifth Decad of Sermons. Of whose mind in the former matter, viz. that of the sacrament, Cox declared himself to be. Cox, and some others of Bullinger's friends, procured Ulmis a fellowship in St. John's College in Oxford.

And some  
scholars to  
Oxon.

Bullinger in these days sent over divers young men to Oxon, to study there: of whom Cox took particu-



lar care. His answer to Bullinger's letter remains yet in the great monastery at Zurich, bound together with many other choice letters of the same nature, in a volume: a transcript of which answer I here present the reader. 1551.

*“ Clarissimo et doctissimo viro, Henrico Bullingero, domino, et fratri suo charissimo, Ric. Cox, Cancellarius Oxoniensis.*

“ CUM tanto beneficiorum cumulo me exornare atque honestare digneris, Bullingere in Christo frater observantissime, ex devincto sane quam devinctissimum reddidisti. Laconicas et jejunas meas literas, tantum non justo volumine, eoque doctissimo, et legenti mihi jucundissimo, compensasti. Pergis præterea duplici munere me beare, nimirum tractatu D. *Calvini de Christianissimâ Concordiâ* inter vos in negotio eucharistiæ, et V<sup>ta</sup> sermonum tuorum *Decade*: quam nocte hesternâ mihi porrexist Jo. ab Ulmis. Pro utroque munere quantas possum maximas ago tibi gratias. Utroque autem vehementer oblector. O! si det aliquando clementiss. Deus, ut in cænæ sacræ tractatione ad eundem veritatis scopum universa Christi collimet ecclesia: inter legendum libros tuos, maximè cum occurrerit quod me piè affecerit, non desinam tui memor esse, et Deum precibus meis pulsare, ut te ecclesiæ suæ diutissime servet, et Spiritu suo Sancto magis ac magis imbuat. Cum autem me tam candidè et Christianè te officio commonefacis, et ad munus obeundum tam seriò extimulas, et tam religiosè, adjuras, id ego interpretor, à Domini Sanctiss. Spiritu factum esse, nequid in ipsius negotio languidè aut negligenter agamus. Sentio enim in dies, quam simus in domini rebus desides, et quam in nostris studiosi et impigri.

“ Porro, salubre et sanum tuum consilium in ecclesiæ Dei reformatione, eo libentius amplector, quod cum fide mea, qua me benignus dominus in hisce rebus donavit, per omnia consentis. Ego enim existimo in ecclesia omnia debere esse pura, simplicia, et

Ex Archi-  
vis Eccle-  
siæ Tigu-  
rin.

p. 305.

1551. ab hujus mundi elementis et pompis, longè alienissima. Sed in hac nostra ecclesia, ego et eruditione et autoritate infirmus, quid possum præstare? Tantum conari præsulibus nostris eandem mecum mentem et fidem optare possum, et domino interim negotii sui curam et eventum committere. Dignissimus es, mi Bullingere, in quem magna beneficia conferantur qui tam grato animo accipis ea beneficia, quæ vel omnino nulla sunt, vel certè levissima. Juvenes illi duo, qui apud nos aliquanto degerunt, digni sunt sane ob pietatem, et ardens in bonis literis studium, favore et benevolentia omni piorum. Reliquos duos, qui nuper hac adventarunt, et quos tantopere mihi commendares, vel tua causa, quanta possuimus humanitate tractabimus. Non omittam tuo nomine salutem dicere magnis illis heroibus, et tui studiosis. Dom. Jesus te diutissimè servet incolumem, et ecclesiæ suæ restaurandæ animum addat et vires. Vale, Westmonasterii, 5 Majj, 1551.

Tui studiosissimus, et in Christo

frater amantissimus,

RIC. COX."

Bullinger  
sends an  
address to  
Northum-  
berland.

The aforesaid Ab Ulmis particularly applied himself to the Duke of Northumberland, desiring, as is probable, his favour towards those of the religion in those quarters of Switzerland, and presenting Bullinger's commendations to him. The duke received him with all humanity, and professed much favour and kindness toward Bullinger: and for his sake, promised that he would take into his patronage an ingenious young man of that country, named Alexander, whom Cecyl and Cheke had gotten into the king's school at Westminster. But the duke's great and public employs made him neglect his promise for a great while, after he had made it to Ulmis, and others, almost half a score times: such a right courtier was Northumberland. For Cheke had addressed to the duke in this behalf, whom he found very kind, and ready to do it. Bishop Hoper also,

upon the motion of Bullinger, had solicited the duke in Ulmis and the youth's behalf. To whom the duke very lovingly said, *that he would indeed be a friend to them.* But now the next year, Ulmis being to return home, and nothing yet done, he wrote an earnest letter to Cecyl, who, he said, could do much with him, and was so much commended for his favour to such as were studious in good arts, and who before had of his own accord offered him all friendship, and most obligingly given him his hand; praying him now to acquaint the duke, that he being ready to return to Bullinger, recommended Alexander once again to him, being very poor, and destitute of money: desiring nothing of his grace, but that he would at this time, for Bullinger's sake, help him a little with his liberality. And how little soever it should be, they would receive it thankfully, if it were but twenty shillings a year; and that by his means he might have a scholar's place, if it might be. Such a courtier was this great nobleman, promising much, but performing little. But we may see hence, what great countenance and respect that reverend, learned man of Zurich, had in the court of King Edward. But Ulnis being gone, a letter was procured from the king to St. John's College, to grant to this Alexander, under the name of Alexander Smutches, the fellowship there which Ulmis had left.

1551.

p. 306.

On two certain days, the one in November, and the other in December, two friendly conferences concerning the sacrament, were instituted privately, for satisfaction in that great point of the *presence* (the former was held in the house of Sir William Cecyl, secretary of state, the latter in the house of Sir Richard Morison) between divers learned persons of the clergy and laity, of both persuasions. Mention whereof was made in the Memorials of Archbishop Cranmer more largely.

Two private conferences concerning the Eucharist.

P. 269.

We are told by a late author, of a third disputation now held; and that the houses where these

1551.  
And a  
third.  
Arth.  
Oxon.  
p. 178.

disputations were managed, were the Earl of Bedford's at the Savoy, Sir William Cecyl's at Chanon-row, and Sir John Cheke's at the White Friars, lately dissolved. And that Fecknam, then a prisoner in the Tower, was borrowed thence by Sir Philip Hoby for this disputation, to satisfy protestants, who then thought that their religion could not be denied. And that these disputations were afterwards prorogued, and carried into the country; and first into Worcestershire, to Pershore there, where Hoper, the bishop, disputed with Fecknam; and then to the cathedral church of Worcester. But upon what authority he saith all this, I know not.

The Duke  
of Somers-  
set's end.

January 22, the Duke of Somerset, the king's uncle, after a former trouble, out of which he emerged, falling into new misfortunes, was beheaded on Tower Hill, for felony; brought about by a faction, headed by the proud Duke of Northumberland: this being the king's second uncle he saw lose his head in his reign, in less than the space of three years.

It was then reported, that the chief assisters of Northumberland, in bringing this duke to his end, were the Earl of Arundel, the Lord Wriothesly, and Sir Richard Southwel, great papists, and the two former then under a cloud; and therefore very enemies to the duke. These Northumberland useth, soon after bringeth again into the court, and who in such favour now with the king as they? By this means, it is said, many false rumours and forged letters were sent about, to the defamation of the duke, and to make him criminal. And not long after they had done the duke's business, Northumberland had no further need of them, and instead of getting them preferred, as was promised them, they were all kicked off again. Nay, it was said, the Lord Paget was the fourth person assisting in this tragedy. Who, indeed if he were one of these conspirators (as in truth he was a papist) he was guilty of a very base and perfidious act to his old master, who was a great friend to him, and confided much in his counsel, as



we have heard. The account of this secret intrigue was related by one that lived in those days, even Ponet, Bishop of Winchester, that succeeded Bishop Gardiner, when he was deprived, if he be indeed the author of that book, which is said to be published in the year 1556, intituled, *A short Treatise of Politic Power*, and reprinted 1642. His words about that matter are these : “ When Wriothesly, Arundel, and Southwel conspired with the ambitious and subtil Alcibiades of England, the Earl of Warwic, after Duke of Northumberland, to pull the good Duke of Somerset, King Edward’s uncle and protector, out of his authority, and by forging a great many false letters and lies, to make the protector hated, brought to pass Warwic’s purpose ; who then for a while but they three ? Wriothesly, that before was banished the court, is lodged, with his wife and son, next to the king. Every man repaireth to Wriothesly, honoureth Wriothesly, saith unto Wriothesly as the Assyrians did to Haman, &c. And all things be done by his advice, and who but Wriothesly ? Arundel is promised to be next to the king, groom of his stole, and comptroller of his house at the least. Southwel, for his whisking and double diligence, must be a great counsellor in any wise. But what was the end ? The earl, as crafty as the best, seeing that his desires should not take place, if these men might have what they hoped for, so enhaunceth the matter, that Wriothesly is fain in the night to get him out of the court to his own home : where, upon narrow examination, fearing lest he should come to some open shameful end, poisoned himself, or pined away for thought. Wriothesly.

“ Southwel is committed to the Fleet ; where being examined, he confessed enough to be hanged for, and had gone very near it, had not his examiners, upon hope of his amendment, breaking out of his eye, but not out of his heart, obtained the earl’s favour. And at the earl’s suit, Arundel escaped, Southwel. Arundel.

1551. otherwise had his head with the axe been divided from his shoulders."

Paget. What became of Paget we shall hear hereafter. Only let us take up here what the same author writes of this nobleman in the same place. "And now, at length was Paget, the master of *practices*, handled; that will have one part in every pageant, if he may by praying or paying put in his foot.—— But what doth this master or proctor of practices? Doth he not dissemble with the Earl of Warwic, serveth his turn in all that his wits would serve? But what at length becometh of our practising Paget? He is committed to ward, his garter with shame pulled from his leg, his robes from his back, his coat armour pulled down, spurned out of Windsor church, trod under foot, and himself at length, with great favour obtaineth, that he might redeem the rest of his corporal pains with open confession at the bar of the Starchamber on his knees, of his bribery, extortion, dissimulation, ambition, robbing of the king, and such like virtues; whereby he became noble." And in the end, what became of Northumberland himself, the great wheel of all, that procured the Duke of Somerset's death? He also perished, not long after, unpitied by all. And this was the sad conclusion of that once most illustrious prince, and flourishing duke.

The disturbance on Tower Hill.

He was beheaded soon after eight of the clock in the morning; being brought to his execution the sooner, to prevent the concourse of the people, who would be forward to see the last end of one so well beloved by them. And further, to provide against any disturbances, besides the king's guard attending there with their arms, there were near a thousand men, of the liberty of the Tower, present also with their halberds, from Ratcliff, Linchouse, White Chapel, St. Catharine's, Stratford, Bow, and from Hogston, and Shoreditch. Both the sheriffs were also present. But notwithstanding all this guard, a

little before the duke died, there happened on a sudden a rumbling noise, as though it had been guns shooting off, and great horses coming; which produced a very great terror among the people, of whom there was a greater conflux than ever had been observed before on such an occasion, notwithstanding it was so early. They that were on one side of Tower Hill, thought verily that those on the other were fighting with, and killing one another: whereupon the people, guard and all, in their haste, fell down upon the ground, tumbling over one another with their halbards: this increased the consternation and belief in every body, that there was nothing but immediate death to be expected; which made all endeavour, might and main, to escape away. And in their flight, and crowding one upon another, near a hundred persons were thought to have fallen into the Tower-ditch: and many others fell down into cellars, and other dangerous places. But all this fright was groundless. And after, when things were a little pacified, the duke having concluded his speech, piously received the stroke of death. His body was put into a coffin, and carried back to the Tower, and buried on the north side of the choir of St. Peter's.

His royal nephew had made him great, as by many and lofty offices and honours, so by the large possessions he granted him: which it shall not, perhaps, be unacceptable to some, if I number up.

*Anno Reg. 1.* He had by a patent, dated July 23, the town and manor of Marlebridg (Marlborough perhaps) late parcel of the possessions of Catharin, late Queen of England, and divers other lands and tenements in the counties of Wilts, Southampton, Dorset, Somerset, Oxon, Cornwall, Devon, Hereford, Norfolk, Suffolk, Warwic, Wigorn, and Middlesex. The value, *non patet* (commonly it is so set down in the Book of Sales, when the lands passed are of great value; it being, I suppose, thought fit to conceal the value of them, to avoid envy) but rent

1551.  
p. 308.  
His possessions granted him by the king. Book of Sales.

1551. reserved. This grant was, *in consideration of services, and of the promise of Henry VIII.*

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* Another patent, dated July 28th, granting him the manor of Mildenhall in Wilts, and divers other lands, tenements, and possessions in the counties of Wilts, Somerset, Dorset, Gloucester, Devon, and Surrey. The value, *non patet*, with rent reserved. And this, *in consideration of services, and exchange of possessions*, which lately were belonging to the prebends of Newthorp and Wylton, in the county of York; and other lands, tenements, and possessions in York, Somerset, Devon, and Wilts.

*Item, An. Reg. 1. Erectio Ducis* Somerset, with the annual rent of 40*l.* going out of the manors of Crokehorn, Stokegorsey, and Wyke Fitzpain, in the county of Somerset, lately parcel of the possessions of Henry, late Marquis of Exeter. The test of the patent bore date February 26th.

*Item, An. Reg. 1.* A patent, dated July 9, granting him the prebend of Newthorp and Wylton in the county of York, and divers other lands and tenements in the counties of York, Nottingham, Southampton, Norfolk, Suffolk, Kent, Lincoln, Bucks, Somerset and Gloucester. The value, *non patet*; in consideration of the tithes of Ramesbury, in the county of Wilts, and for service.

p. 309. *Item, An. Reg. 1.* By a patent, dated July 16th, the king granted him the lordship and manor of Plympton at Exminster, with the appurtenances, in the county of Devon, lately parcel of the possessions of Henry, Marquis of Exeter; and divers other lands and tenements in the counties of Devon and Middlesex. And this in consideration of his house, scite, and capital messuage of Shene, and other things, in the county of Surrey. The value, *non patet*.

*Item, An. Reg. 2.* July 11th. The king gave him the manor of Wymborn in the county of Dorset, parcel of the possessions of the duchy of Lancaster, and the manor of Stonden, North Stonden, and Okel, with the appurtenances, in the counties of Wilts and



Berks, and divers other lands, tenements, and possessions, in the counties of Dorset, Wilts, Berks, Norfolk, Southampton, and Gloucester: the yearly value 106*l.* 14*s.* 9*d.*; and this in full consideration both of the king's donative and royal benevolence. 1551.

But now all the duke's treasures and lands whatsoever came to the crown, together with his personal estate; one part whereof was granted to John, Earl of Bedford, viz. Covent-garden, and seven acres, called Long-acre. Sir John Gates, vice-chamberlain to the king, who now was grown into great favour, obtained another part: for the king gave him all the duke's rich furs, and much of his costly household-stuff; and withal, the goods and chattels which lately were Sir Ralph Vane's, attainted with the duke. The bedding and furniture of Sion House, of which the king had constituted Sir Thomas Wroth keeper, were bestowed on the same Sir Thomas.

Certain matters, likewise, of the late duke's doing, were now intended to be revoked by parliament: whereof one was, That whereas he, upon his marriage with Anne, his second wife, had by act of parliament cut off the entail of all his estate from the issue of his first, by whom he had John Seimour, Esq. that all might be settled upon the issue of the said Anne; this the said John petitioned might be revoked: and there was an act of parliament intended to be made in February, at the petition of the said John Seimour, Esq. eldest son of Edward, late Duke of Somerset, and Catharine Filol, one of the daughters and heirs of Sir William Filol, Knt. deceased, for the repealing of a statute made at Westminster, 32 Henry VIII. concerning the entailing of all such lands as the said duke then was seised of, or thereafter should be, in fee-simple, fee-tail, or otherwise, unto the said duke, and Lady Anne, his second wife, and to the heirs male of their bodies, lawfully begotten.

And a match being agreed upon to be celebrated between Henry, the duke's son, and Catharine, the Earl of Oxford's daughter, by certain indentures,

1551. signed by the said duke and this earl also, was laboured to be annulled. And a bill was, in April, prepared to be enacted by parliament, that two indentures, made between the said late Duke of Somerset and the said Earl of Oxford, and certain other recognizances, shall be void, and of none effect, concerning the marriage between the Lord Henry, the said duke's son, and Catharine, daughter to the said earl.

His hatchments pulled down at Windsor.

And soon after his execution, his coat of arms in Windsor Castle, set up there as he was one of the knights of the garter, was ordered to be pulled down: for the king, in February, wrote a letter to declaring his majesty's pleasure, that he should repair to Windsor immediately, and take down the hatchments of the late Duke of Somerset, attainted, and put to execution, in sort as others had been in like cases.

p. 310.  
His friends fall with him.  
Lord Paget sequestered from his office of chancellor of the duchy.

The duke fell not alone, but several of his retainers and friends fell with him; and among the rest, his most faithful and trusty friend, the Lord Paget; whom, though they could not find sufficient to put him to death, yet they sequestered from his place of chancellor of the duchy, which was committed to Sir John Gates, a creature of the Duke of Northumberland. For in the Warrant Book I find a letter dated in November (that is, the next month after the taking up of the duke) to Mr. Vice-chamberlain, "That where, by sequestration of the Lord Paget, Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, there is stay made in that court of processes, and other things, that of order and course should pass out of the said court, under the privy seal and great seal, that he should, during the king's pleasure, keep the said privy seal and great seal; to the intent to seal such writs and commissions only, as, by the order of the same court, be accustomed to be granted, either for making of sheriffs, or other justices, for the order of the said lands; so he place the attorney, and others of the said court, thereto: and in any wise to forbear sealing any leases,

without special order and commandment from the king's majesty." This sequestration continued against the Lord Paget, and the office remained in Gates's hands till the next March, 1552; when a commission was given out to him, authorizing him still to keep the great and privy seals of the duchy, and to dispatch all things pertaining to that office, with authority to appoint a vice-chancellor. And soon after Paget surrendered his place, and was fined deeply in the Star-chamber. 1551.

Sir Michael Stanhop was a relation and friend of the duke's, and was attainted, and died about his business. He had a house, well furnished, at Bedington, in Surrey: the goods and chattels remaining there, Thomas, Lord Darcy, obtained. Sir Michael Stanhop.

Sir Ralph Vane, or Fane, was another that fell with the duke, and was attainted and executed. He had the honour of Penshurst, the manor of Ensfield, and other manors and lands in Kent; all which were granted to Sir William Sidney, one of the gentlemen of the privy chamber, together with the park of Penshurst, and all the chattels, lead, utensils, vessels, horses, mules, and other things, upon the said manor. Sir Ralph Vane.

Sir Miles Partridge was likewise another that sunk under the duke's calamities. To him belonged the great messuage called Kew, in the parish of Mortlake, in Surrey: this, with all the issues and profits of it, was granted to Sir Henry Gates, another gentleman of the privy chamber, brother to Sir John Gates; and to him also came the goods and chattels in or belonging to this house. Yet for the subsistence of his widow was somewhat granted: for I find a grant to the Lady Jane Partridge, for life, of the manor of Kenne, in Devon, of the yearly value of 57*l.* 12*s.* 0 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* But this not before April, 1553. Sir Miles Partridge.

Sir Thomas Arundel perished also with Somerset, a west-country gentleman, though it were the next day (the jury being shut up all night) before he was found guilty. His mansion-house, which was the college or chantry of Slapton, in Devon, was pur- Sir Thomas Arundel.

1551. chased of the king by John Peter, of Exeter, gentleman, the father, perhaps, of Sir William Peter, secretary of state; together with the manor of Norton, and other possessions, belonging to the said Arundel. Other of his possessions, viz. Kingston, in Somersetshire, and Chiselborn, in Yorkshire, two manors, the Lord Clinton obtained.
- p. 311.

Lands  
given to  
Sir Edw.  
Seimour.

As most of the Duke of Somerset's estate was dispersed away from his posterity and relations, so a small part of it was granted to Sir Edward Seimour, his son, who had been, almost a year after his father's attainder, neglected, and no provision made for him: but about the month of September, 1552, the king gave him, by patent, divers lordships, part of his father's possessions; namely, Walter, Shedder, Stowey (with a park thereunto belonging), and the hundred of Winterstock, in Somersetshire. In February, 1552, the same Sir Edward became ward to the Earl of Warwick, the Duke of Northumberland's eldest son.

Care taken  
about Seimour,  
the duke's son  
by a former  
venter.

The duke's eldest son, named Edward (miswritten, perhaps, for John) Seimour, also, by a former wife, viz. the Lady Catharine Filol, or Filocks, a daughter and heir of Sir William Filol, or Filocks, of Woodlands, in Dorsetshire, had this right done him, wherein his father, the duke, seemed to have done him wrong: That a patent was granted him to be restored to as many of the lands as were his mother's, and sold away by the duke without her consent; and that this should be made good to him out of the lands that the heirs begotten of the body of the Lady Anne, his second wife, should have. This was in conformity to an act made in the fifth and sixth years of this king, intituled, "For the Limitation of the Duke of Somerset's Lands." And the letters patent directed to the Lord Marquis of Winchester, master of the wards, to take order with him, according to the said act, to have to the said John Seimour, the lands in like state as he should have had the foresaid lands of his mother, in case no sale thereof had been made.



Let me add, that March 25, 1553, a bill was ordered by the king and council to be prepared, that it might be enacted by parliament, for the restitution in blood of Edward Seimour, son and heir of the late duke, attainted, and begotten of the body of Catharine Filol. 1551.

## CHAP. IX.

p. 312.

The king's debts. More's Utopia, in English. Epistles of Bucer's death; and other books printed now. Bible printed in folio. Bishop Ridley's ordination of ministers. A parliament. Private acts. A bill for apparel. Forins of wills and testaments.

THE king's debts now ran high. He had taken up great sums from banks, and persons beyond the seas; and was indebted, this year, to them the sum of 132,372*l.* 10*s.* Of this sum, one thousand pounds was for a diamond. Besides debts within the realm, 108,807*l.* 4*s.* 10*d.* The total sum amounted to 241,179*l.* 14*s.* 10*d.* The particulars whereof may be seen in the paper following: The king's debts.

*A Brief of all the King's Majesty's Debts, external and domestic, Feb. 1551. Anno 6 Edw. VI.* MSS. penes me.

## DEBTS BEYOND THE SEAS.

Payd	{	<i>Imprimis</i> , To the Schetz	10,700		
		To Lazarus Tucker .	10,700		
		To the Fuggars . . .	26,700	£	
		Payable 15th Nov. 1552.	————	48,100	0 0
Payd	{	<i>Item</i> , To the Fuggars	20,000		
		Th' interest thereof .	1,400		
		Payable 15th Feb. 1553.	————	21,400	0 0
		<i>Item</i> , To the Schetz }	. . . 14,000	0 0	
		And Rentleger }			
		Payable 20th July, 1553.	————	£83,500	0 0

1551.

Brought forward . . .	£83,500	0	0
<i>Item</i> , To the Fuggars . . .	24,000		
Th' interest thereof . . .	2,360		
Payable 15th Aug. 1553. ———	27,352	13	4
<i>Item</i> , To Schetz, for a diamond . . .	1,000	0	0
<i>Item</i> , To Francis Van Hall . . .	17,426	13	4
Payable ult. Aug. 1553.			
<i>Item</i> , To John Rauntzow, Knt. . .	3,093	3	4
Payable 1st Sept. 1553.			
Sum Total . . .	£132,372	10	0

p. 313.

## DEBTS WITHIN THE REALM.

To the household . . . . .	£28,000	0	0
To the chambre . . . . .	20,000	0	0
To the wardrobe . . . . .	6,075	18	0
To the stable . . . . .	1,000	0	0
To th' admiral tie . . . . .	5,000	0	0
To th'ordinaunce . . . . .	3,134	7	10
To the surveyor of the works . . .	3,200	0	0
To Calleys . . . . .	15,000	0	0
To Barwyck . . . . .	6,000	0	0
To the revels . . . . .	1,000	0	0
To Silley and Alderney . . . . .	1,000	0	0
To Ireland . . . . .	13,128	6	8
To Winter, for his voyage to Ireland	471	4	6
To Barthilmewe Campagni (the king's merchant). . . . .	4,000	0	0
To Portesmouth, and th'Isle of Wight	1,000	0	0
To the men of armes . . . . .	800	0	0
To the Lieutenant of the Tower . .	997	7	4
	£108,807	4	10

*Summa totalis* of the debts  
*externe*, and within the } £241,179 14 10  
 realm . . . . .

For the king was forced to take up great sums of money sometimes from the Bank, or some of the rich merchants abroad in the Low Countries: as of the Schetz, that is, one Jasper Schetz, and his brother; of the Fuggars, that is, one Anthony Fuggar, and his nephews, Tucker, Rentleger, Van Hall, Rantzow, Rolinger, &c. And when the king borrowed money, he often made use of the credit of the city and citizens of London; sometimes the mayor and city; and sometimes some of the eminentest men therein, for reputation and wealth, were bound for payment, and the king gave them his security. So I find a recognizance, anno 1551, to Jud, mayor, and the city, to discharge them, and their successors, and their goods, as well beyond the seas as on this side, for the payment of certain sums of money they stood bound for, to the Fuggars, for the king; and a grant, anno 1552, to the mayor and city of London, to discharge them, their heirs, and executors, of 103,707 florens carols, money of Flanders, to Guolphango Rohlingero, to be paid to him at the payment of the gold mart, anno 1553. Of that Anthony Fuggar the king this year bought a very fair jewel, containing four rubies, marvellously big, one orient and great diamond, and one great pearl: it cost the king 100,000 crowns.

1551.  
The king  
took up  
money  
abroad  
upon the  
city's cre-  
dit.

Warr.  
Book.

But, to be punctual in his payments, and keep up his credit abroad, the king, in the month of February, dispatched Sir Philip Hoby to the lady regent in embassy, but indeed chiefly to pay his debts to the Fuggars, and to borrow more money. His instructions, in short, were:

Hoby sent  
in embassy  
to pay the  
king's  
debts.

“ For the discharge of such debts as the king owed to Anthony Fuggar and his nephews, beyond the seas.

p. 314.  
His in-  
structions.  
Galba,  
B. 12.

“ The said Sir Philip shall, at his said ambassade to the lady regent, take in good safety with him, at the hand of the Marquis of Winchester, Lord Treasurer of England, the sum of an hundred fourscore one thousand, six hundred fourscore and five crowns

1551. of the sun, as of his majesty's treasure : and shall see the same sum well and duly, and as secretly as he may, conveyed to Antwerp ; so that he may have the sum there before the last day of this month of February.

“ And at his coming thither, shall, with all secrecy, understand the value current there, of the said crowns of the sun. And that done, he shall consider the sum that his majesty shall owe to the said Anthony Fuggar, at the last of this month ; which is, three hundred fourscore one thousand four hundred and forty florens *carols Flemish* : every floren at twenty stivers.

“ And for the remnant of the debt, to take and borrow of the merchants, ten thousand pounds Flemish, upon the interest of seven in the hundred, for the space of six months, or such reasonable interest as he may. And his majesty's bond, under the great seal of England, and the bond of the city of London, being for the same, upon the payment duly made, he shall instantly receive both the said bonds.

“ *Item*, The said Philip Hoby shall receive of William Daunsel, the governour of the English nation there, or such other as shall be appointed by the letters of the above-named treasurer, such bullion and silver, as he hath there until this time, for the king's majesty's use : and the same he shall cause safely to be brought into the realm, to his majesty's use, upon a warrant of a license to also received by the said Sir Philip Hoby of Jasper Schetz, and his nephews, for the value of 3000 marks weight : and to reserve to himself, for reward of his charges and expences for this his ambassade, the sum of 200*l*.” After this business done at Antwerp, he was to repair to the regent, then at Bruges, and shew the wrongs done by their ships to the English merchants, and other the king's subjects.

Taking up  
money of  
foreign

This practice of taking up money of foreign merchants, was first begun by King Henry VIII. And



these debts, that now lay heavy upon the king, were either such as his father left, or were contracted by his uncle the Duke of Somerset. 1551.  
merchants  
begun by  
K. Henry.

Febru. 20, anno reg. 6, an indenture was made between the king and the mayor and burgesses of the town of Kingston-upon-Hull; wherein the king granted them and their successors, the custody and government of the castle there, and two block-houses, standing upon Drypole side, in the county of York, for the more surety, preservation, and keeping of the said town, together with all the lands, gardens, and waste grounds, lying within the walls of the said castle and block-houses, with all the profits and commodities thereunto belonging, without any account making unto the king. And the said castle and block-houses to be from thenceforth exempt, and clearly distinct from the county of York, and reputed and taken as part, and parcel, and member of the town of Kingston. And in consideration hereof, the said mayor and burgesses covenanted with the king, at their proper cost and charges, to repair and maintain the said castle and block-houses, with the jettiez, and all the banks, as often as need should require; and to keep safe, and maintain all such munitions, ordinances, and implements, as they should require of his highness, for the defence of the said castle and block-houses. They were also empowered, from time to time, to make and ordain acts, ordinances, and constitutions, for the preservation and keeping of the said castle and block-houses: and that the mayor and burgesses should have the nomination, election, and assignment of such persons as should have the custody, rule, and charge of them, and the putting in and removing of every such person without interruption, let, or impediment. And the king gave them, towards the maintaining and supporting of the said, &c. 50*l.* to be taken of the rents and issues coming out of the manor of Myton, in the said county of Kingston. The king also granted them the advowson, gift, and presentation, and right of patron-

A grant to  
the town of  
Kinsgton.

p. 315.

1551. age, of the Hospital of the Holy Trinity, near unto the town of Kingston. And they covenanted with the king to put into the said hospital, as often as it should be vacant, an able and honest person, to be master and incumbent there, and to provide and foresee, from time to time, that the issues and profits of the said hospital should be employed and bestowed upon the maintenance and relief of the poor people there, according to the foundation thereof. And for the performance of the premises, the mayor and bailiffs were bound unto the king in 200*l.* forfeiture.

Archbishop Cranmer's Answer to Gardiner.

This year Cranmer vindicated his book of the sacrament, set forth the last year, and replied unto by Gardiner and Smith. This answer was called, "An Answer of the most Reverend Father in God, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate of all England, and Metropolitan, unto a crafty and sophistical Cavillation, devised by Stephen Gardiner, Doctor of Law, late Bishop of Winchester, against the true and godly Doctrin of the most holy Sacrament of the Body and Blood of our Saviour Christ," &c.

Utopia printed in English.

This year also was translated and printed in English, that famous book of Utopia, writ in Latin by the ingenious Sir Thomas More: entitled, "A fruitful and pleasant Work of the best State of a Public Weal." Printed by Abraham Vele, at the Lamb in Paul's Church-yard, in a small octavo. The translator's name was Raphe Robynson, citizen and goldsmith of London, as he styles himself; done at the request of George Tadlowe, citizen and haberdasher of London. Not, as I suppose, that Robynson followed the occupation of a goldsmith, or was of any other occupation in the city, whereby he got his livelihood; for he was a scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxon: but it was usual in those times for gentlemen, that were no traders or artificers, to take their freedoms of some of the companies, and held it as a matter of credit and reputation, to be freemen

Translated by Robynson.

of London. And the companies would sometimes give the freedom of their societies to certain persons, to whom they intended to shew a respect. This book the translator dedicated to Secretary Cecyl. It is replenished with excellent reading, and pleasantly carried on, by way of dialogue, feigned to be between the author and a great traveller and philosopher at Bruges, while More was ambassador there from the King of England. 1551

By a passage in the book, it appears, the author, Sir Thomas More, was bred from a child in the family of a very eminent statesman, Thomas Morton, Cardinal and Archbishop of Canterbury, and Lord Chancellor of England: for so he writes: "The pleasant remembrance of that cardinal (Moreton) in whose house I was bred up of a child." In this family, we may conclude More gained much advantage in learning, and wisdom, and state policy: for that great man thus he describes: "He was a man of mean stature, and thorow stricken in age, yet bare his body upright. In his face did shine such an amiable reverence, as was pleasant to behold: gentle in communication, yet earnest and sage. He had great delight many times, with rough speech to his suitors, to prove (but without harm) what prompt wit, and what bold spirit were in every man. In which, as in a virtue much agreeing with his nature, so therewith were not joined impudency, he took great delectation. In his speech he was fine, eloquent, and pithy. In the law he had profound knowledge. In wit he was incomparable; and in memory wonderful excellent. These qualities, which in him were by nature singular, he by learning and use had made perfect. The king put much trust in his council. The weal public also in a manner leaned unto him. In the chief of his youth, he was taken from school into the court; and passed all his time in troubles and business, and was continually troubled and tossed with misfortunes and adversities. And so by great and many dangers he learned the experience of the

p 316.  
The author,  
Sir Thomas  
More, bred  
up in Abp.  
Morton's  
family.

1551. world." In the family of so complete a man, was the author of Utopia bred up.

Cheke's  
Epistle of  
Bucer's  
Death.

Besides the Utopia, these books also were printed this year : An Account of the much-lamented Death of Martin Bucer, in certain Epistles, viz. An Epistle of Sir John Cheke to Peter Martyr, of the said Bucer's Death, dated March 10 ; and another Epistle of the same person to Walter Haddon, of the same subject. And a third Epistle wrote by Car to Cheke, of the same reverend Person's Death, dated from Trinity College in Cambridge, the ides of March. Also Epigrams upon the Death of the same, in quarto.

Bucer's  
book, *De  
Regno  
Christi*.

The said Bucer presented his book in manuscript, *De Regno Christi*, to King Edward, as it seems, about New-Year's tide, as his New-Year's gift; himself being then sick, and dying the next month. In his Epistle there to the said King, he thankfully acknowledged his liberality to him, and Fagius, his fellow, lately dead; for receiving them, being exiles, placing them in the university of Cambridge, and assigning them so liberal salaries, and ordering the commencement of the same, some months before either of them could enter upon their function in the said university, by reason of both their sicknesses: he acknowledged also the king's beneficence to him, in taking pity of his indisposition, and granting him 20*l*. for a stove, for the relieving of his poor body, broken with age and sickness. The book itself treated of the *Kingdom of Christ*: what it ought to be in this world; what things it peculiarly claimed; and what things it had, common with worldly kingdoms; and how salutary, or rather necessary, it was, to all orders of men, to have it established among us: lastly, by what ways it may and ought to be restored by kings, princes, and magistrates. This book, indeed, was not printed till the year 1557, when Bucer's children procured the press at Basil to be employed in it, dedicating it to Christian, King of Denmark, Therein they gave the reason why their father dedi-



cated the book to King Edward; namely, that that king had an ardent love to the glory of Christ, and the welfare of his realms; and endeavouring to excel others in all kinds of virtue, he sent for men endued with learning and piety, to come into England, offering them ample rewards. Among whom, Bucer, their father, was none of the least: for him the king made much of, above the rest, received him into harbour, and took care he should teach divinity in one of his universities, and preach Christ's gospel. Therefore the king's love of religion, and his subjects, which appeared most singularly in that prince, and the study of good arts, to which he was wholly devoted; these excellent qualities, and his great good-will towards men of learning and piety, moved their father, that he intended, under his name, to publish his book. 1551.

Another book came forth, published by another learned foreigner, and dedicated to the king. It was Sebastian Castalio's Latin Bible, with his Annotations. Printed at Basil, in folio. Castalio's Bible.

And yet another printed there, with an Epistle Prefatory to the said King, being *Julius Firmicus's Astronomicon*, in Eight Books. Firmicus's *Astronomicon*.

At London also was printed, "*Liturgia Sacra, seu Ritus Ministerii in Ecclesia Peregrinorum profugorum propter Evangelium Christi, Argentinæ. Cum Apologia Vallerandi Pollani.*" Octavo. *Liturgia Sacra Peregrinorum.*

Lastly, "A most sure and strong Defence of the Baptizing of Children, against the pestiferous Sect of the Anabaptists. Set forth by that famous Clerk, Henry Bullinger, and now translated out of the Latin into English, by John Veron Senonoyes. Imprinted at Worcester by John Oswen, 1551." A Defence of baptizing Children.

The Holy Bible, of Tho. Matthews's translation, with all the Prologues and Annotations upon every Chapter (which had been once complained of by the popish bishops to King Henry, and so were left out in a former edition) was now printed in folio, for Tho. Petite. The Bible printed.

1551.  
Erasmus's  
Para-  
phrase.

Erasmus's Paraphrase on the four Gospels, and the Acts, now came forth in a second edition, printed by Edw. Whitchurch.

Two fo-  
reign print-  
ers privi-  
leged.

Let me add here, now we are upon the mention of books printed, that in April this year two foreigners, printers, the one an Italian, the other a Dutchman, had privileges granted them to print certain books, which, it seems, our English printers had not skill or learning enough to do: for one Laurence Torrentinus, printer to the Duke of Florence, had a privilege here, for seven years, to print the Digests and Pandects of the Civil Law of the Romans; and that none should print the same during the said time without his license. And John Gipkin, a Dutchman, lately made free, and now bookseller of London, for a privilege for ten years to print, or cause to be printed, the Herbal, compiled by William Turner, doctor in physic: which Herbal is the ground-work of Gerard's Herbal.

Countess  
of Pem-  
broke's  
burial.

On the 28th of February was buried, the noble Lady Countess of Pembroke, and sister to the late Queen Katharine. She died at Bernard's Castle, and was carried unto St. Paul's in this order: first there went an hundred poor men and women, in mantle freez gowns; next followed the heralds, and then the corse, about which were eight banner-rolls of arms: then came the mourners, lords, knights, and gentlemen; after them the ladies and gentlewomen mourners, to the number of two hundred in all: next came, in coats, two hundred of her own, and other servants. She was interred by the tomb of the Duke of Lancaster; and after, her banners were set up over her, and her arms set on divers pillars.

p. 318.

Lady Eli-  
zabeth  
comes to  
court.

March 17, the Lady Elizabeth, the king's sister, rode through London unto St. James's, the king's palace, with a great company of lords, knights, and gentlemen; and after her a great number of ladies and gentlewomen on horseback, about two hundred. On the 19th, she came from St. James's, through

the park to the court; the way from the park-gate unto the court spread with fine sand. She was attended with a very honourable confluence of noble and worshipful persons of both sexes, and received with much ceremony at the court-gate. 1551.

These ordinations passed this year, under Bishop Ridley's hands, zealous to furnish his diocese with faithful, honest, and evangelical pastors, which, in these early times of the reformation, were very scarce. His first ordination was celebrated May 19, when seven deacons were ordained, and five priests. Their names, for brevity, we omit. The next ordination was Aug. 2, at Fulham, when only one was ordained, and he a deacon, and a Frenchman, named John Veroneus, *Senonens. Dioc. in Gallia; i. e.* of Sens, in Champaign. Again, Aug. 24, in his chapel at Fulham, were ordained one deacon and three priests; whereof the foresaid Frenchman was one. The said Veron was minister of Ludgate, and wrote divers tracts in English, and was taken up for religion in the beginning of Queen Mary's reign. Again, Sept. 29, were ordained seven deacons, whereof one, named William Clark, M.A. of Littlebury, was then of the age of fifty-seven; and another was Robert Crowley, who was, after an exile, and under Queen Elizabeth, minister of Cripplegate, and wrote some things. In the Bishop's Register he is styled *Stationer of the parish of S. Andrew Holborn*. Again, Octob. 4, were ordained three deacons, whereof one was Christopher Dixe, of S. Mary Somerset, London, Taylor, and one priest. Again, Novemb. 2, were ordained two priests, and two deacons: of the priests Crowley was one. Lastly, March 6, in the oratory of Robert Bishop of St. David's house, in Gracechurch-street, at the sign of the Cross-Keys, the said bishop ordained one priest, named Alexander Leighton, of Pembroke-hall, Cambridge, by allowance and order of the Bishop of London.

Ordina-  
tions of  
Bishop  
Ridley.

The parliament holden by prorogation began to sit January 23, and continued sitting till April 15, fol-

A session  
of parlia-  
ment.

1551. lowing; this being the fourth session; where, besides many public acts printed, were these private acts made:

Private  
Acts.

An Act for assuring Lands to the City of London.

An Act touching the Marriage of the Marquis of Northampton (whereby his marriage was declared lawful, as by the Law of God indeed it was, any law, or canon ecclesiastical to the contrary notwithstanding.) This bill was brought in by order of council, viz. "That it be enacted, for legitimating, as well the Marriage of the said Marquis, and Elizabeth his Wife (his former wife yet living, from whom he was divorced) as the Children born between them." Dated in February.

An Act for the Foundation of a Grammar School at Pockington.

An Act for frustrating Assurances to the Duke of Somerset, made by the Earl of Oxford. (Of which somewhat was said before.)

- p. 319. . An Act for St. Peter's Church in Westminster.

An Act for the Limitation of the Duke of Somerset's Lands.

The Act  
for Treason.

One of the public acts made in this parliament was for the punishment of divers treasons; in which act it was provided favourably for the subject: as, that there should be two witnesses in case of treason; and that the witnesses, and the party arraigned, should be brought face to face; and that treason should not be adjudged by circumstances, but plain evidence. This Bill, before it passed, was learnedly argued by the lawyers in the house, and especially Sir Nicholas Hare, and Mr. Stamford; the former whereof was one of the judges, and the other the queen's serjeant, at the trial of Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, who was arraigned in Queen Mary's reign, to have been in Wyatt's treason. This Trogmorton was in this parliament, and heard this argument debated by them; which he made use of afterwards at his said trial. He then said, there was a maxim and principle in the law, which ought not to be violated, "That no



penal statute may, ought, or should be construed, expounded, extended, or wrested otherwise than the simple words, and nude letters of the same statute doth warrant and allow." And he told Serjeant Stamford, that among divers good and notable reasons, then by him in that parliament declared, he noted this one, why the said maxim ought to be inviolable; which was, "That considering the private affections, many times both of princes and ministers, within this realm, for that they were men, and would and could err, it would be no security, but very dangerous to the subject, to refer the construction and extending of penal statutes to any judge's equity, as he termed it; which might either by fear of the higher powers be seduced, or by ignorance and folly abused." By which means Throgmorton escaped. 1551,

There was a bill prepared (as it seems, this sessions of parliament) for the restraining of the excess of apparel. A bill of apparel. and for directing people's habits according to their qualities; though it took not effect. And the king's own royal pen drew it up; after the example of his noble father, who used to draw up many bills to be enacted in parliament, and to supervise, correct, and interline many more. And because our design is to preserve as many of the writings of this young and blessed prince as we can, I shall transcribe it from the original, and present it here.

*The rough draught of a bill for the restraining and directing of apparel; drawn up for the parliament by the king himself.*

No man, but of the blood royal, to wear cloth of gold, of purple colour, or any other purple. E MSS. Guil. Petyt. Armig.

Under a duke, no man to wear cloth of gold tinsel.

Under an earl, not to wear sables, or black jennets, or cloth of silver.

Under a baron, no man to wear cloth of gold, or cloth of silver, or Luzarnes furs, or any embroidery

1551. of gold and silver, or damasken work, or goldsmith's work.

Under the degree of a knight of the garter, no man to wear blue or crimson velvet, nor any cloth made out of this realm, nor embroidered of silk.

p. 320. No man under the degree of a knight (except gentlemen that may dispend 500*l.* lands, or gentlemen of the king's chamber) wear any velvet, or furr of maternes or buge, or any furrs growing out of the realm.

No man to wear satin or damask, except he may spend 100*l.* during life, or else be a gentleman, and the king's sworn servant. Nor yet to wear any ostrige feathers, nor furrs of conies.

No man that is not worth 200*l.* or else 20*l.* in living certain, to wear any kind of chamblet.

No serving man, under the degree of a gentleman, to wear any furr, save lambs furr; no taffata, nor sarcenet in his hose, nor no velat in his cap, scabberd, girdle, &c. nor any cloth above 10*s.* the yard.

No man under the degree of a knight, to wear any gilt thing.

No man, under the degree of a gentleman, to wear any silk points.

No husbandman, shepherd, &c. to wear any cloth above shillings the yard.

Their wives may wear that their husbands do: and so may their sons and daughters, being under their tuition.

The forfeiture is, to all that be gentlemen, the loss of apparel, and the double value thereof. To all others, it is the loss of the apparel, and sitting five days in the stocks.

In the court, the usshar may seize the apparel. And if he commence not his action within fifteen days, then the lord chamberlain. Likewise on the queen's side, her usshar and chamberlain.

Any man to seize apparel worn out of the court.

Proviso, that all mayors, bailiffs, &c. and all others

that have accustomed one certain apparel of their office or vocation, to wear the same still. 1551.

Proviso, for ambassadors, that their men coming from beyond sea wear their masters' livery that they wear beyond sea, till their masters give them new. Likewise for all such as be in service beyond sea.

Proviso, for all to whom the king giveth any livery or apparel.

Proviso, for players.

Provided, that upon coming of great embassades, or foreign princes, the lord great master for the household, the lord chamberlain for the chamber, may give license, and assign unto those that be under their charge in the king's service, whether they be ordinary, or else extraordinary, to wear for the time of that present occasion, such array as to them shall seem convenient.

The value of their lands or goods to be tryed by the valuation of his subsidy going last before, if there were any within three years before : otherwise to be tryed by their oaths.

No husbandman to wear any dyed cloth, nor leather tanned or dressed out of the realm.

No man under the degree of a baron, to wear any gold that weigheth not one whole ounce.

They may wear in the trapping of their horse, none other than they may wear in their own apparel.

The act to take place after Whitsuntide.

No man to wear any chain that weigheth less than ten ounces of gold.

For the close of this year, I cannot but observe, how wills and testaments now ran, and how different the wording of a will in King Edward's days, was from one drawn up in the reign of King Henry his father. Whereby we may gather, how at this time of day, by the knowledge of the gospel, superstition generally wore off in the nation. Now testaments ran in this tenor : " I commend my soul to God my maker, faithfully believing to be saved by the shed-

p. 321.  
Forms of  
wills and  
testaments.  
Cranm.  
Reg.

1551. ding of Christ's blood, and my body to be buried in order as a Christian." Which words were in the will of John Norton of Dedford, in the fifth year of King Edward, 1551. And in the same year, this was part of the last will of John Byshop, of Skraptoft in the county of Leicester: "First, I give and bequeath myself to Almighty God, beseeching him to accept it, of his mercy. Second, my body to be buried in the parish church of Skraptoft aforesaid: and for my mortuary, according to the custom of the realm." Whereas before, I meet with wills thus worded. In the year 1536, Richard Bockland, bur-gess of the town of Ross, made this will: "First, I bequeath my soul to Almighty God, to his mother Mary, and to All Hallows in heaven, and my body to be buried in the churchyard of Ross. *Item*, I be-queath to the cathedral church of Hereford, *xii d.* I bequeath to the high aultar of Ross, *xii d.*" In the year 1538, John Holder, of the parish of Churcham, made this will: "First, I give and bequeath my soul to Almighty God, to our blessed Lady, and to all his saints. I also bequeath to the high aultar of Churcham for Obiit-Tith. *xii d.* *Item*, I will and ordain that a priest sing for the health of my soul, and my father's soul, and all Christen souls in Churcham, for the space of a quarter of a year." John Myllenhop, of the parish of Ey in Hereford diocese, made these bequests: "First, I bequeath my soul unto Al-mighty God, and to our Lady his mother, and to all the celestial company of heaven; and my body to be buried in the churchyard of S. Pyturs (Peter's) of Ey. *Item*, I bequeath to the mother church of Here-ford, *iiii d.* *Item*, to the high aultar of the church of Ey, two tapers of the weight of two pound of wax, there to bren before the blessed sacrament. *Item*, to Sir Hugh Holder, my ghostly father, to pray for my soul, and all Christen souls, *iiis. and iiid.*"



## CHAP. X.

p. 322.

France and Cesar apply to the king. The king congratulates the Elector of Saxony. Gresham, the king's agent, in Antwerp. The French successes against the emperor. The English incline to the emperor. Jealousies of France. Steukley's intelligence thence. Minutes of council for breaking with France. Fitz-Patric sent for home. Steukley committed. French commission for sea affairs.

**L**ET us now look abroad. This year, 1552, (into which we are entering) was an ill year for the emperor; who had at once upon him, the Turk, the German princes and states, and the French king: and war waxing very warm between him and the emperor, applications were made by both princes to the king. It was about the close of the last year, that the French king had made a league, offensive and defensive, with divers of the princes of Germany; as Duke Maurice of Saxony, the Duke of Mecklenburgh, the Marquis Albert, or Albright, of Brandenburg, the Duke of Anhalt, Duke Augustus, Count Mansfield, and other princes. And both the French king and the princes, in the beginning of this year, invited the king into the league. But he, at the audience he gave the French ambassador, put off entering into a war, by a speech he made to the ambassador, which he had penned before. And he sent Sir Philip Hoby and Sir John Mason to the said French ambassador, to declare at more length the king's mind in that matter. Nor would the king grant the French king's request, delivered by his ambassador in April, to carry the provisions for his army by sea to Calais, and so to Ard, for convenience and safety; that is, through the king's territories; because it was against his league with the emperor. And on the other hand, upon the motion of De Corrier, the lady regent's ambassador, the king readily renewed a promise he had made before, that

1552.  
The king's  
carriage  
with re-  
spect to  
France, and  
the emper-  
or.

The French  
king's mes-  
sage.

1552. the emperor's ships might take harbour in his havens, to be sheltered, upon occasion, from the French.

The king  
carries it  
fair to both.

For the king now kept himself unconcerned from the quarrels of each prince, and carried a fair face to both. It was observable, that when the French ambassador, Seigneur De Sulpice, had in June advertised the king of his master's success in the said month, in winning the castle of Robdemac, and mount St. Anne, and taking the strong town of Du Villers, wherein was much booty and ammunition; the king sent a letter of gratulation to that king, for his prosperous successes in the present wars; and another to the French queen, for the said successes, advertised by her letters. And when in the said

p. 323.

month, by the emperor's letters, the king had intelligence of an invasion into Champaign, insomuch that the Dauphin had been like to have been taken, and the queen being in those parts, was glad to send away some of her stuff to Paris for safety; and the town of Guise was taken, and the country spoiled by the Flemings; the king in like manner sent letters of congratulation to the said emperor by Seigneur De Corrier, ambassador in England, now going home; and likewise other letters gratulatory to the lady regent of Flanders for the same.

The emper-  
or's de-  
mands.

The emperor being put to great straits, and the French having now invaded Luxemburg, in July he required the king's assistance of 5000 footmen, or 700 crowns a day during four months, according to a treaty made with the king's father at Dort, 1542. But the king's principle still was to keep himself from engaging in war, as much as he could; which made him decline granting this to the emperor, by urging that his father's treaties did not bind him: that he had sworn amity with the French, which he could not break: and that the emperor had refused to aid him, when in the year 1549, the French foraged in the low country of Calais. But he offered himself, if the emperor pleased, to be a mediator for a peace between both. Yet it was not long after, namely, in

in the month of September, the king disliking the French's successes, and growing more and more in jealousies of that king, changed his mind, and was disposed to fall in with the emperor against France, could he but find out a fair and just way to do it; which we shall see in the process of our story. 1552.

John Frederic, the good Duke of Saxony, who had been the emperor's prisoner, was in July discharged: who sent a letter to the king, the same month, signifying his liberty; which, on the 27th of July, the king answered with all humanity, congratulating him heartily on his delivery out of prison. To him, in September, the king wrote another letter in Latin; the import whereof seemed to be, that which about this time was in chief consultation at the court, viz. to strengthen the king's interest in contracting a friendship with the Germans, such especially as were protestants. The king congratulates the Duke of Sax's liberty.

Thomas Gressham, Esq. a merchant in London (famous to posterity for the Royal Exchange, which he was the builder of, and for the College and Lectures of the Arts and Sciences, in the same city, which he founded), had been sent over to Antwerp the latter end of the last year, about February or March, to transact matters of money between the merchants there and the king: for the king was fain to make that shift, to uphold himself and his affairs, by borrowing great sums of money at high interest: some whereof the king paid by his said agent at the day, and for some he desired forbearance. April 31, a debt of 14,000*l.* was paid to the Fuggars. And again, in May, Gressham was sent over, to make a payment of 20,000*l.* to the said Fuggars, who required to have this paid, and then they would be willing to stay longer for the rest that remained. At this voyage the king, to gratify his agent (unless, perhaps, it were for the king's own use), granted him a license to carry over fifty quintals of copper, in bullion and plate, within the space of one year. In August, certain other payments (in all 56,000*l.*) became due to those Gressham sent to Antwerp.

1552. rich bankers, Anthony Fuggar and his nephews and  
partners, and Jasper Schetz and his. Gressham was  
p. 324. sent again, with a commission to take up monies of  
others for those payments, but could not: so now he  
was ordered to deal with them for forbearance for  
some time longer. Of which counsel, the Duke of  
Northumberland and the Earl of Pembroke, as well  
as others of the lords, were the chief authors. But  
these monies having been taken up for the king by  
Gressham's agency, and in part by his credit, he being  
an exact merchant, was exceeding uneasy at this fail-  
ing of payment, as looking upon it as a great reflec-  
tion, both upon the king, and upon himself too. The  
king owed in the whole at Antwerp, at this time, an  
hundred and eight thousand pounds.

His memo- But to understand more particularly this affair, I  
rial. shall here present the memorial given to Gressham  
in this journey:

“ That whereas the said Thomas had commission,  
of late, to put over certain debts due by the king's  
majesty the 15th and 20th of August, that is to say,  
48,000*l.* Flenish, to the Fulkers, and 12,000*l.* to the  
Schetz; wherein, although he travailed, he could not  
hitherto accomplish the purpose of his commission:  
Therefore his majesty's pleasure is, that the said  
Thomas shall return over the seas thither again, and  
see what more good he can therein do, for the per-  
formance of his former commission, and follow the  
same to the most advantage of his majesty. And if  
he can so do, then shall he repair to the Fulkers, or  
their agents, in Antwerp, and delivering to them such  
letters as be there prepared, shall declare unto them,  
how desirous the king's majesty would be to have  
now, at their day, made ready payment of the money  
due; but that in this troublesome time of the world,  
it behoveth his majesty so to consider his estate, that  
for divers great and weighty considerations, his ma-  
jesty otherwise is moved to employ the same money  
which was prepared for this payment. And therefore  
his majesty doubteth not but the said Fulkers will be



content to think this consideration reasonable, and not forget the benefits and good bargains they had had of the king's majesty, with good and true payments at all times made; and assure themselves, that were it not for weighty causes, his majesty would not at this time defer any such payment. Whereof his majesty the rather hopeth of their contentation, for that Antonio Fulker himself, being herein conferred with by his majesty's ambassador with the emperor, seemed ready to gratify his majesty, not only in this such a matter, but also a greater." These humble and gentle words was the king fain to use to his creditors, to incline them to defer his payments, and to keep up his credit with them.

1552.

Gressham, August 21, which was the day after his arrival at Antwerp, wrote to the Duke of Northumberland, wishing that God would give him such success, that the king's honour and credit might not be touched: for that it would be no small grief to him, that he being agent, merchant strangers should be forced to forbear their monies against their wills; advising earnestly, that such a matter should for the time to come be well foreseen, or else in the end the discredit would lie upon his neck, if it should go otherwise than well with the duke, and the Earl of Pembroke: but he doubted not, if God gave them both their lives, they would foresee in time. He spake of two things, wherein he feared the king and council had disobliged these merchants, and so they might be with more difficulty brought to deal with the king for the future: the one was, that when he, the said Gressham, had lately offered a fine jewel at 8000*l.* to sell, which, if the king would have bought, they should have lent him 52,000*l.* for a year, the Lord Wiltshire, Lord Darcy, Lord Warden, Sir John Gates, and Secretary Cecyl, of the privy council, undervalued the jewel, as though it were worth nothing. And at another time he offered, in the name of the Fuggars, a bargain of fustians to the king of 5000*l.* for the prolongation of 25,000*l.*; which also

Gressham  
writes to  
Northum-  
berland.

p. 325.

1552. did not like them. But the council would have these bankers continue their money for another year, without taking any merchandize or jewels. This, as Gressham said, did abash him, considering how things went heretofore, when the king's father, who first began to take up money upon interest, did use to take his fce-penny in merchandize, either jewels, copper, gunpowder, or fustians; and that so it was accustomed ever since, to take wares, when the king made any prolongation, until the charge of this business, as he said, was committed to him.

And therefore, he added, if there were not some other ways taken for the payment of the king's debts, but to force men from time to time to prolong them, the end thereof, he said, would neither be honourable nor profitable for the king. In consideration whereof, if there were no other ways taken henceforth, he beseeched that he might be discharged of his office of agentship; for otherwise, he saw in the end he should receive shame and discredit thereby, to his utter undoing for ever: which yet, he added, would be the smallest matter, if his majesty's credit should not be spotted thereby, specially in a strange country, where, at that present, his credit, he said, was better than the emperor's; for the emperor had offered 16 per cent. and yet no money could be gotten.

Gressham's  
commiss-  
sion.

Gressham was also, in this mission, to deal with the Fuggars for prolongation of 43,000*l.*; and on that condition, he was to signify, that the king was content to take 6000*l.* in fustians; and with the Schetz, to prolong 10,000*l.* that would grow due to them November 20 next.

His device  
to bring  
the king  
out of debt.

And being sensible of the king's growing debts, and the great inconveniences that at last would follow, he projected, that in case this agency of his for the prolongation of these payments succeeded, to find out a way to bring the king wholly out of debt in two years, in case the king and council would assign him 12 or 1300*l.* a week, to be secretly received at one man's hand, that so it might be kept secret; and he

would so use that matter in that town of Antwerp, that every day he would be seen to take up, in his own name, 200*l.* sterling by exchange, which would amount in one year to 72,000*l.* ; and thus doing, it should not be perceived, nor administer any occasion to make the exchange fall. He projected also a great benefit to the king, if all the lead were in the king's hands, and the king to make a staple thereof, and to make a proclamation, or to shut up the custom-house, that none should convey out of the land any parcels of lead for five years : whereby the king might cause it to rise, and feed them at Antwerp from time to time, as they should have need thereof. By which he might keep his money within his realms, and bring himself out of the debts, which his father and the late Duke of Somerset had brought him into. 1552.

But in conclusion, as to this continuation of money upon usury, he assured the Duke of Northumberland, that it would prove a marvellous great hinderance to his majesty ; but if these his counsels were taken, he mistrusted not to save the king 20,000*l.* in the payment of his debts, ere the year went about. This may serve to shew the pressing state of the king's debts abroad, and, by the way, to display somewhat the abilities of this brave English merchant. p. 326.

C.

The said Gressham, September 23, gave in a very fair and large account during the time of his being at Antwerp this year, between the king and him, which he intituled, “ A brief Declaration of the whole Account of your Majesty's Servant, Thomas Gressham, Mercer, of all such Sums of Money as he hath received and paid in the Town of Antwerp, for your Majesty's Behoof, since the 1st of March, Anno 1552, until the 27th of July, 1552, as hereafter shall more plainly appear to your highness. Gressham's account of money received and paid.

“ *Imprimis*, Received by the hands of Sir Philip Hoby, Knt. the 1st of March, 1552, in French crowns of gold, the sum of an hundred fourscore thousand two hundred twenty-five pieces, at six shillings and sixpence the crown, amounts to the sum of

1552. “Received of Jasper Schetz, the 1st of March, 1552, which was taken upon interest by Sir Philip Hoby, and me, Thomas Gressham, for three months, after the rate of twelve upon the hundred,”

Money also was mentioned to be taken up of Anthony Relinger and Condrat Relinger; and much more, and at several times, of Jasper Schetz. At last, “*Item*, Paid for a supper, and a banquet, that I had made to the Fuggars, and to the Schetz, and others, that I have had to do with for your majesty, since the time that your highness hath committed this great charge unto me, 25*l*.”

“The sum total of all my whole payments amounteth to 106,301*l*. 4*s*. 4*d*.”

The English like  
not the  
successes  
of France.

We will now look out again over the seas, into France and Germany, according to whose successes it must necessarily go with England. As the Turk had prospered against the emperor this summer, so had the French also, and Germans, ravaged and spoiled, and greatly distressed him, in his Low Countries; whose ill successes the English began to take to heart, for they cared not that either the one or the other should be too prosperous. Chamberlain, the ambassador residing then at Brussels, spake his thoughts in a letter to the lords, about the beginning of September, That he did right well weigh with himself the present time (thinking England to be in danger by the French successes), and he did earnestly wish he might have occasion to certify of some exploit done by Cesar, who was then on foot again: a matter, he believed, that would be a means to make England's other neighbour (France) deal more gently with us: “For, to say the truth (as he further explained himself) the game had not gone indifferently, having too long gone on the other side.”

The emperor was hastening now, in September, to face these triumphing Frenchmen, who carried all before them. The foresaid ambassador wrote to the council, That according to the secret talk, the emperor was, September 12 (the day on which he wrote



his letter) at Spire or Strasburgh: from whence, it <sup>1552.</sup> was thought, he would direct an army to enter France <sup>The emperor is coming against the French.</sup> by the way of Burgundy, and make the Prince of Piedmont general thereof, who was come to the emperor in post. And others did think, that his majesty himself would pass by Loraine and Luxemburgh, and seek to enter France that way; meaning so to cause the enemy to divert his power from the Low Countries, especially from Artois, where, it was said, that the French did at that present burn and spoil greatly, and were then before a place of Mons. De Reux, called Renty, where he did not a little lament, that he might not set upon them as he would; which the emperor had forbidden, until such time as he was clear out of Germany. It was then commonly reported, that the emperor was now strong, and reckoned out of all danger among the Germans, and that his power daily increased, by good numbers of men of war that drew unto him: so that in that court where the English ambassador was, they said, that, ere it were long, the world should hear that his imperial majesty was revived, and not so much put to the worst as men thought. But for all that, others there were, that thought the emperor not so well furnished of money, presently to do so great feats withal. And indeed, in the burse of Antwerp, money was never so scanty; where he ran, as the ambassador was informed, martely great and excessive interest for large sums already had, and most part spent, as it was thought, by the queen regent, to defend those Low Countries. And so men did conjecture, the emperor should have two impediments: the one, the year being spent; the other, want of money. But in the midst of these expectations from the emperor, at this juncture the French took two places of importance in Piedmont, the name of one whereof was Crescentia.

In the midst of these turmoils of the emperor, he still shewed his zeal to popery, even at this present, when thereby he did but more irritate and provoke the Germans against him. The before-mentioned <sup>The emperor Ioseth himself more in Germany.</sup>

1552.

ambassador wrote hither, that every man there wished that the emperor, to win the Germans, would dissemble, and shew them best countenance at this time. But, it seemed, he took the contrary way; having made Don Lewis D'Avila, of his privy chamber, captain of all his light horse; which the nobles of those Low Countries did much mislike, being a stranger; and so it was thought the Germans would too. And upon conference the ambassador had with divers, he found that most part did then mislike in the emperor, that he could not play the part which he was wont to play so well, being a chief principal with the Spaniards, among whom his majesty was brought up for a good part of his youth; that is, to dissemble, and temper with the times. For when he passed through Augsburgh, he had expelled some of their preachers, taking for colour that their preachings tended more to sedition than religion. In which the ambassador said, that in his conceit he had much overshot himself. For, as some persons of virtue and good judgment said, if ever he could dissemble, it behoved him now to do it, and to make fair weather with the Germans; shewing them the best countenance he could, whatsoever he meant besides. And so, indeed, there went a talk, that the emperor would forget and forgive all unto Marquis Albright (who was the chief of the German protestants that confederated with France, and made havoc in the emperor's countries) and rather reward him with good livings besides, to win him from the French king's devotion. Which, as the ambassador went on, and expressed his judgment, whether they said as they would have it, or what was thereby meant otherwise, he knew not: but that a man would not think it the worst means to reckon, having made so fair a *skapada*, as they called it there.

p. 328.

The Low  
Countries  
suffer  
much by  
the French.

The Low Countries were all in a great disturbance at these ravagings of the French, beating down all before them. But at the emperor's being now on foot, and coming down towards them with the forces

he had gathered, they grew more easy, and the court at Brussels was presently reduced to some quietness, over what it was before : every one expecting, with the present fair weather that happened this latter end of September, to hear of some good exploit to be done by the emperor, upon some places which the French had gotten in his absence. And this also the English would inwardly be glad enough to hear of, not liking these French proceedings; and therefore Chamberlain, the ambassador, promised the lords to get all the intelligence he could, and hoped to acquaint them with matters worthy his writing: beseeching them to assure themselves, that of his part should no negligence be shewed, for lack of advertisement; for that he knew the same to be the best service he could do; and did consider how much he was bound to employ himself thereto, without refusing any pains or labour. 1552.

The news out of Germany, as the ambassador now sent it to the lords, were, that Monsieur De Bossu, general of the emperor's army, was repairing to the emperor with part of the forces of the countries where the said ambassador was; and that he was, September 26, at a place called Gelven, within 18 leagues of his majesty. That the soldiers of Marquis Albright, of Brandenburgh, the chief enemy of the emperor on the German side, and that had pillaged and plundered extremely the emperor's towns and places, finding themselves wealthy, and rich of the branskating and spoil, did daily slip away from him, and leave him. And a bruit was, how the French king should ask reckoning of Albright, of that he had branskated; and that Albright had yet to receive 200,000 florins from the city of Treves: which, it was to be thought, the emperor now coming, would keep him from at this time, albeit he had threatened to burn the city if he had it not. That the bishops of Cologne and Treves did furnish Bossu's camp with victuals, and did send unto the emperor 1500 horse, and six ensigns of foot.

News out  
of Ger-  
many by  
the English  
ambassa-  
dor.

1552.  
The Eng-  
lish lend  
the empe-  
ror gun-  
powder.

The king lent the lady regent, for the emperor, 112 barrells of gunpowder, lying then at Antwerp, upon her desire to borrow it for three or four months. And Damsel, the English governor there, delivered it to Corrier, one of that queen's council.

How the French about this time dealt with King Edward, and his subjects, which served more to cool the affection of the English to him, I proceed next to shew.

The Eng-  
lish mis-  
used by  
the French.

p. 329.

The French king having been complained to by the king, for the great wrongs done on the sea to the English by his men, to pacify him somewhat, commissioners were, in September, sent into England from France, to hear and determine such maritime matters. But as Chamberlain, the ambassador, wrote to the Duke of Northumberland, that the report was there, that while the French did send his commissioners into England, to understand the spoliations his subjects had committed upon the poor merchants, they did not stick to take still at the sea, what they could get of ours. Whereupon the said ambassador gave his own judgment, "That for his part, he wished that fortune would shew herself a little indifferent, and turn another while on the other side, and then he would well hope, we should have good restitution; and so if she would dally now on the one side, and then on the other, for a year or two, he would verily believe, we should dwell by good neighbours on each side a good while after."

The French  
continue  
their pi-  
racies.

It was now the 24th of September, and these commissioners from France, though in London for some days, yet had not yet been at the court, by reason, as was said, the ambassador had been lately sick, and disordered of a rheum; but, being amended, that day they desired access; which was granted them. Yet at this very time the Frenchmen upon the seas continued their depredations on the merchants, and had lately taken certain passengers towards Calais; alleging, that unless certain pirates of their's, taken and detained at Calais for notable



piracies, were set at liberty, the same passengers should not be delivered, but should be used as the English should use their's. And this the council signified to Sir William Pickering, ambassador with the French king. 1552.

At this juncture, one Steukley, once the Duke of Somerset's servant, who, upon his troubles, fled to France, and there abode, came now over, and brought with him this intelligence, as he pretended to have from the French king himself, viz. that the said king intended, upon peace made with the emperor, to besiege Calais, and to invade England about Falmouth, and more to that purpose; as the invading it at the same time on the north, by the help of the Scots. This information startled the court.

There went also rumours abroad of the French's design upon the king: which was, that the French ambassador should invite the king to a banquet on board some French ships; and having him thus in their hands, to convey him away. This report fled over to Antwerp, by a merchant that haunted England, and came lately thence with the said news. And withal, that the ports and passages were stopped; an hundred sail of French ships arrested in the west parts; and the French ambassador forbid to approach to the court; which perhaps might be true enough, upon the displeasure taken at the French, as for other matters, so particularly for Steukley's discoveries.

Concerning which, to be the better satisfied, and that they might not seem too credulous, the council wrote to Pickering, ambassador in that court, especially because Steukley had pretended to have imparted something of this to him. Their letter ran to this tenor:

“After our hearty commendations unto you. Ye shall understand, that Thomas Steukley returned hither into the realm about the latter end of August; and since his coming, upon some demand made, hath uttered certain matters of great importance: alleg-

Steukley's intelligence concerning France.

Rumours about seizing the king.

The council writes to the ambassador concerning Steukley. Galba, B. 12.

1552. ing, that he did disclose some part of the same to  
 you : whereof he enquireth, whether you have at any  
 time advertised ; that is to say, that the French king  
 understood certain advantages for the taking of Calais,  
 p. 330. by the surprizing of Newenham Bridge, the taking  
 of Ricebank, and so consequently Calais. Which  
 thing, he saith, he understood of the French king  
 himself. The matters he telleth be of great moment;  
 which, he saith, he hath had of the French king him-  
 self, with whom he entered into such credit, as we  
 here be somewhat amazed, how to interpret the tales,  
 and how to judge of the man. For some trial of  
 whom, we thought to understand certainly, whether  
 he hath uttered any like matter to you at any time,  
 as he saith he hath : and thereof we do not remember  
 that ye did ever write any thing to us, as we know :  
 surely ye would, if he had. We remember ye wrote  
 to me, the Duke of Northumberland, in the man's  
 favour, for his return into this country, with the king's  
 majesty's favour. Wherefore, for our better judgment  
 of the man, and his strange tales, we pray you to  
 certify us what intelligence he hath at any time given  
 you of these manner of matters, and of others also :  
 and the same to send in cifer to us, as ye shall think  
 needful, &c. From Windsor, Sept. 24, 1552.

Your loving friends,

<i>Winchester,</i>	<i>T. Darcy,</i>
<i>Northumberland,</i>	<i>G. Cobham,</i>
<i>J. Bedford,</i>	<i>Rich. Cotten,</i>
<i>W. Northampton,</i>	<i>John Gate,</i>
<i>E. Clynton,</i>	<i>W. Cecyl."</i>

Consulta-  
 tion of  
 breaking  
 with  
 France.  
 Galba,  
 B. 12.

What answer the ambassador gave to this letter,  
 we shall see by and by. But how weary the English  
 court already grew of their friendship with France,  
 and how busily it was employed at this very juncture,  
 to fall in with the emperor, will appear by this deli-  
 beration, contained in these minutes of council fol-  
 lowing :

" I. To consider by what means the emperor shall be induced to demand aid again of the king (who had some months ago denied him.) 1552.  
Minutes of  
council.

" II. If that cannot be compassed, then to consider, how the emperor shall understand the king's contentation to aid him, and what personages shall execute this, either with the emperor, or with the regent.

" III. To order, that upon this opened to the emperor, our ambassador with the French king may withdraw himself secretly.

" IV. To consider how the princes protestant of Germany, may have some intelligence and accord with the king.

" V. To devise to practise with the Scots, to further their discontentation with the French.

" VI. Whether Steukley shall return into France, and continue his practice there, for more intelligence.

" VII. To see the estate of Calais, Guisnes, and the Marches, well ordered and guarded with officers, and helps of other lacks there: and therein to consider the report of the commissioners (viz. Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Richard Cotton, and William Berners, Esq. who were sent to view the condition of those places in June last.)

" VIII. The like order for Barwic, and other frontiers upon Scotland.

" IX. To give order, that the passages at Dover be well look'd unto.

" X. To see to the guard of the Thamise. Mr. Gonston and Mr. Winter, to take two pinaces, and to keep the Thamise." p. 331.

A Discourse was also drawn up by Secretary Cecyl, upon two questions, serving for this present occasion: The secretary's discourse on that argument.  
Galba,  
B. 12.

" I. Whether the king's majesty shall enter into the aid of the emperor?

" II. Whether he shall only declare the French king his enemy, without sending aid according to the treaty?"

1552.  
Vol. II.  
Appen.  
p. 82.

The Discourse in answer to the former of these is printed (but with some variation) in the History of the Reformation; which endeth with the reasons against the conjunction. But this is thus continued in the manuscript I make use of:

“ A third opinion upon this, whether it were best to impart to the emperor, by the ambassador, that the king’s majesty meaneth not to neglect the emperor’s estate, but will herein, for the help and defence of the Low Countries, do that he may.

“ And likewise to cause Mr. Chamberlain (ambassador in the Low Countries) to practise, that the Imperials may require and provoke him to make this motion; forasmuch as they have already begun the like talk with him: and in the mean season, to permit indirectly our merchants to reprice upon the French, and to hear the French commissioners.

“ To proceed in the mean time, both for money, and likewise the fortifying and guarding of the frontiers, with such other things fit for to enter the war withal.

“ Move the emperor indirectly, that where the French king induceth the Turk, it might be considered by his majesty, and other princes of Christendom, how the said French king might be impeached from this enterprize.”

#### REASONS FOR THIS.

“ First, By this means we shall enter with more than the emperor: as with the Germans, and such other. And so, though the emperor should die, (being aged, and much afflicted with the gout, and last year dangerously sick) yet the band should not be without parties.

“ Secondly, It shall be also most honourable to break with the French for so common a quarrel, for the faith of Christendom.

“ Thirdly, We shall hereby avoid the costly and chargable aiding of the emperor according to the treaty.”



These were the secret debates and consultations in the council, for the effecting this design against the French; which as yet they had no mind the French should so much as suspect. In the mean time the king shewed his love to his schoolfellow and friend, Barnaby Fitz-Patric, that was now in the French king's court, sent thither in the summer, to learn experience and see the fashions. The king was now desirous that he should come home: and that his revocation might be without giving any suspicion or offence, Pickering, the ambassador, was by the council ordered to give him advice and furtherance to obtain leave, as of his own disposition, and not taking knowledge of the king's pleasure. And therefore Barnaby was to be instructed by the ambassador, that he might pretend that he was of himself very desirous to return now, and see the king's majesty this winter season, the wars being for the season of the year suspended: and that he should so use his coming away, as the same might not be any ways taken suspiciously. The council prayed the said ambassador further, to give him his good counsel and advice for his like demeanor.

1552.  
Fitz-Patric  
sent for  
home from  
France.

p. 332.

By this time Pickering had returned his answer to the council's letters concerning Steukley; the sum of which was, that whatsoever the said Steukley had told them, he had declared nothing to him of all that he had informed the council; and, moreover, that it was his thoughts and belief, that he never heard the French king speak such words as he reported, nor was in credit with him: upon which Steukley was committed to the Tower. And this the French ambassador was advertised of, that the king had committed him thither for unruly slandering his master; which was told him the rather, to suspect the English renegades that were in France, as the king himself notes in his Journal.

Pickering's  
answer  
concerning  
Steukley:

The lords of the council also, in their letters to Chamberlain, ambassador at Brussels, informed him, that things were fair between the French and English,

Which the  
lords ac-  
quaint the  
ambassa-

1552.  
dor in the  
Low Coun-  
tries with.

as to the jealousies raised by Steukley's information, the ambassador at the French court having satisfied them of the said person's falsehood and imposture: whereat all the answer Chamberlain gave was, that he thanked God that all things were so well as the lords' letters reported. Letters also of great weight were now sent to Sir Richard Morison, ambassador with the emperor, bearing date the 24th of September, which Chamberlain conveyed out of hand, with diligence and surety, as he was commanded: of which we shall have account by and by.

The French  
commis-  
sioners  
about sea  
affairs.

The French commissioners, being two lawyers, that came hither about the spoils done to the English, gave little satisfaction. They gave an account how the matters of the English merchants were examined and transacted at their courts in France. Secretary Petre, Dr. Wotton, and Sir Thomas Smith, were appointed to treat with them. These shewed, how the merchants' losses amounted to 50,000*l.* and upwards; for which they expected satisfaction. To which the French commissioners gave little answer, but that they would make report of it, when they came home, having no commission for the consideration thereof. In the beginning of October came over Mons. Ville Andre in post from the French king about these matters. His message was, that though certain ships and goods of Englishmen were justly condemned in France, yet the French king was contented, out of respect to the king, whose servants the owners were, to restore them *gratuitò*: but this was refused; and answer was made, that the king desired nothing *gratuitò*, but justice and expedition. And when Ville Andre signified, that it was his master's desire, that some agreements were made between the English and French concerning the ordinances and customs between England and France in maritime affairs; it was answered, that our ordinances were nothing but civil law, and certain antient additions of the realm: and they thought it reason, not to be bound to any other laws, but the old laws, where no fault was to

be found in them. And whereas the king had under confinement certain Frenchmen, that robbed on the sea-coast, this messenger required a release for them; it was told him, that they were pirates, and should be punished according to justice: yet clemency should be shewed to some. Upon his departure, letters were writ, and sent by him to that king, answering other letters which he brought from him; therein particularly thanking the French king for certain edicts he had lately issued out, which would for the future serve to the benefit of our merchants. To this indifferent understanding were the two crowns already come.

1552.

p. 333.

## CHAP. XI.

An embassy to the emperor. Morison's address to him. The king offers aid against the Turk.

WE have seen what were the consultations at the council-board concerning the assistance of the emperor; now let us hear how the English court proceeded in the resolutions they had taken. It was the 7th day of September, that John Weston, servant to Morison, ambassador with the emperor, had his passport and letter to all kings, princes, &c. to suffer him to pass safely by them to the emperor's court. He brought with him instructions and a memorial, to enter this communication with the emperor. It was the desire of the lords of the council, that the emperor should be so managed, as to be brought to require their aid before they offered it; which they thought he would be ready to ask again, having but the last summer denied it; for which the ambassador was now instructed to make excuse. A great difficulty to this their falling in with the emperor, was the amity lately entered into with France. Therefore, for the preserving and covering that, they thought it best to offer him aid against the Turk: yet were desirous to

Instructions sent to the ambassador resident with the emperor.

1552. have a special messenger sent from the emperor hither, to hold some further and more secret conference; not liking the emperor's ambassador that then resided here. Thus then orders came to Morison, for addressing himself to the emperor, in this month of September, upon the king's return home from his progress, and upon the emperor's advance for the defence of the Low Countries.

Morison's  
address to  
the emperor.

p. 334.

For the managery of which address, he was instructed, "To seek to have access to the emperor's own person, and to declare to him, the king's affectionate commendations, with such other friendly words of office, signifying the king's hearty love to his said good brother; and so to enter into the matter of his charge. And first, To shew the emperor, that the regent, his sister, sent to the king her letters about the latter end of July; by the same making declaration of the French king's attempts, and proceeding in hostility against the countries of his said good brother the emperor; and in the end remembring to the king the treaty of alliance heretofore made between the king's father and the emperor, she, the king's said sister, by her letters required, in following the tenor of the said treaty, to declare the French king, and his confederates, the king's enemies. The which letters came to him, being in his progress and pastime, having then very few of his council with him, (the greatest part, and that of his trustiest counsellors, being severally dispersed for his service into the remotest parts of his realm) the matter being of itself great and weighty, and the like being moved to him as strongly as could be. Nevertheless, upon some consideration, such as, for the time and place where the king then was, could be no other, he caused his answer to be made to his said good brother's ambassador, in such sort, as he thought in reason should content him; which was this summarily: That he was right sorry of the ill chance of these wars, and especially of the extreme continuation thereof, between his good brother and the French king, with both



whom he was at peace: and therefore, considering the ruin that might thereby come to Christendom, besides his own private friendship and love to his said good brother, he was content, if his said brother would so think good, to travail the best he might, to bring the matters in controversy to a treaty and friendly composition (as, indeed, so he meant) and was desirous, with his whole heart and mind. Secondly, He let his said good brother's ambassador understand, his earnest and constant abiding in the same."

He was instructed further, that finding the emperor not satisfied with the king's former answer, he should descend into this open and manifest declaration of the king's great love and amity, and say, "That now upon the king's return from his progress, and the assembly of his counsellors together again, his former answer, and the whole matter, was newly considered, and conferring together divers reasons, with the king's hearty love towards the state of his good brother, he resolved not to forbear the demonstration of the same his love; notwithstanding the great extremities which might much move him to the contrary, if he did not prefer honour, truth, and perfect amity, before all other worldly matters. And, together with his council, considered the antient, old, inviolate, and natural amity between his realm and the House of Burgundy; feeling himself as naturally moved to the tuition and confirmation of the same, as if it were his own pawn-money." And with all this preface and protestation, was brought in the king's offer of assistance of the emperor, and the other states of the empire, with forces for the repelling of the Turk, if he could bring to pass some league against the Turk and his confederates. The ambassador concluded he had nothing more in commission: but if the emperor would send somebody into England, he might know more. And herein the policy was, to check the French, to keep fair with the emperor, and to procure more friends in Germany.

1552.  
Overture  
made to  
the empe-  
ror, to  
assist him  
against the  
Turk.

In the same manuscript volume where I find the memorial, with these instructions above said, there is also another memorial of the charge committed by the king to the said ambassador, dated September 24, with lines drawn under many of the words and sentences, and a note of Secretary Cecyl's hand, that what was so underlined was to be put in cypher: so that I conclude, this was the authentic memorial sent to the ambassador, the drawing up of the other above specified being not so well approved of. This other memorial then ran to this tenor:

p. 535.

“ That he should with all diligence procure audience of the emperor, and at his access deliver his letters of credence, with the king's most hearty commendations, and earnest declaration, that he was most glad to have understanding of his good estate and health; and that the king, understanding his good and honourable avauncement towards his Low Countries, to the great comfort of the same, and having the same love and good-will towards the prosperous success of his said countries, that his late father, and other his progenitors, had many years past, willed him, his ambassador, expresly in his name to congratulate his coming thotherward, and to shew him, that the good success which the king wished to him, and his affairs and enterprizes, was as much as he would to himself, and his own countries and patrimonies.

“ That when the ambassador had opened thus much, with as good words as he could devise, he should begin to descend to this that follows: Using his earnestness and frankness as he should see, by his former sayings, occasion given to him by the emperor's acceptation thereof, either by his good words, or other behaviour in his gesture, he should say, that where the king had lately understood of the great murders, spoils, and cruelties, done and committed both in Hungary and upon the coasts of Naples, and other parts of Italy, by the Turks, the old common enemy to the name and religion of all Christianity,

like as the king could not but from his very heart lament the same, so he would, for his part, as might be thought expedient for the weal public of Christendom, shew himself willing to accord with his said good brother, and other Christian princes and states, for the repulse of the said Turk: and if any such good means might, by the great wisdom and policy of the emperor, be thought good and devised, to bring the same to some good purpose and effect, he, for his part, would shew himself so ready and well willing thereto, as his said good brother should well perceive, that he had not only that zeal to the conservation and surety of Christendom, which in a Christian prince is duly required, but also such consideration and regard to his said good brother, and ancient amity with the House of Burgundy, as to honour and reason appertained.

“ This being spoke by the ambassador in such good sort as he should see occasion require, he was instructed to stay and pause a while, as it were looking for some answer to be made thereto by the emperor; and that, if the ambassador perceived he took it in thankful part, then might he entertain the talk modestly, with such good words as might seem to him best, to confirm the king's good affection, to the continuance of the amity, and his great offence and grief for the entry of the Turk into Christendom; and that, if he perceived the emperor did in so good part receive this the king's overture, that he should shew himself willing to enter any further talk or device for the further proceeding, the ambassador might, as of himself, shew his readiness and good-will to do all that he any wise well might, as a good minister, for the bringing this purpose to some profitable effect: which, he should say in his own opinion, should the better take good entry and success, if by some special man to be sent hither, the king might understand more fully the emperor's mind in this matter.

“ But if he should perceive the emperor did not regard this overture, either in not liking the matter it-

1552.

self, or not regarding the king's amity, as reason would, and as it was on his part offered, then the ambassador might use himself more coldly, and diminish the declaration of the king's earnestness, in like sort as the emperor shewed himself; and conclude, that he had thus done the message committed to him, and would leave the consideration to the emperor, as he should think good.

“ That if, in the opening of the premises, the emperor should make any mention or interpretation against the French king; referring the Turk's invasion to the said French king, as some occasion hereof; and so should demand, directly or indirectly, whether this overture be meant to extend toward the French king, or any other of Christen name, that should join in league or amity with the said Turk; the ambassador might thereto say, that he had no more in charge presently than he had said; and therefore, for further opening of the king's mind, he thought the same might be best had here.

“ That if at any time of this his talk, the emperor should gather occasion to ask the ambassador, what the king would do, for giving aid against these invasions made by the French king upon the Low Countries? he might answer, that as he had nothing to say therein, but that he thought the answer which the king declared to his ambassador here resident, upon the letters sent to the king from his good sister the Queen of Hungary, had both been signified to him long before this time, and also, as he trusted, in reason contented her. And that in this point, although the ambassador knew what was answered, yet the king would not he should enter into the dispute thereof; meaning in this, and the rest of things to be treated with the emperor, that he should rather procure the sending of some special man hither, than to treat any thing by the emperor's ambassador, then resident in England, who hitherto had not appeared the fittest man to increase or enlarge the amity betwixt the emperor and the king.



“ Finally, it was the king’s pleasure, that the ambassador should, in the execution of this present charge, wholly extend his good policy and wisdom, to mark and well advise all such words of moment as the emperor should utter to him in this talk ; by what order, behaviour, gesture, or other passion of joy or grief, the same should be spoken ; so as the king might simply, plainly, and very orderly, have the true declaration thereof from him : wherein he desired so express and special a report of this matter, as upon the same he might better conceive, what should be expedient to be further done in this and other his weighty affairs.”

1552.

Together with these instructions the council wrote this letter to Sir Richard Morison, wherein may further particulars of this transaction be seen : The council to the ambassador.

“ After our hearty commendations, with our like thanks and commendation of you, for your good diligence in advertisements : We do at this time send with this packet a certain charge, articulated in a memorial sent to you from the king’s majesty, and signed with his gracious hand ; in the execution whereof we doubt not but you will use good wisdom, considering the importance of the matter ; and where his majesty, in the last clause, requireth your diligence in observation, and to have the report made orderly and simply, the meaning is, upon the same to consider here the consequence of more matter. And at this time we send this *depeche*, not by thorow post from hence, because we would avoid the suspicion of the French, who, giving us lately many causes to doubt them, may perchance be the more jealous of our sending thither. Herein, we know, you may add matter of weight ; and yet, we pray you, take no more knowledge than in the king’s majesty’s instructions you are certainly prescribed ; for it behoveth, in these manner of matters, to use great secresy and foresight. The French king’s commissioners come hither to the court, with the French ambassador, the

p. 337.

1552. 27th of this September; of whom we shall hear what restitution is to be made for our depredations.

“ The emperor’s ambassador’s wife hath here a son born, to whom the king’s majesty is pleased to be godfather. We pray you, either let us have certain answer by the bearer hereof, or by some of your own, and that with as much diligence as may be. Any other thing we have not of importance; and therefore end with wishing you there such success as we have need of, and after these your late turmoils, to have some more rest.—From Windsor, the 24th of September, 1552.

Your loving friends,

<i>Winchester,</i>	<i>Rich. Cotton,</i>
<i>Northumberland,</i>	<i>John Gate,</i>
<i>J. Bedford,</i>	<i>William Petre, S.</i>
<i>F. Huntingdon,</i>	<i>W. Cecyl.”</i>
<i>G. Cobham,</i>	

The effect  
of this  
embassy.

When Morison had delivered the aforesaid message to the emperor, according to his instructions, the emperor thanked the king for this offer, and said, he would cause the regent to send a man to the king for the said purpose, and to know the king’s further meaning in that behalf. And so the ambassador signified to the king, in the beginning of October.

p. 338.

## CHAP. XII.

The king’s military exercises. A splendid muster before him. The dearth. The Lady Mary. The king’s progress. Occurrences. A monstrous child born. Strange fishes taken in the Thames. The king consults for the estate of religion, and the realm.

**N**OW let us look upon matters at home. In the month of May, behold some of the king’s martial exercises and recreations! On the 12th day, he rode

through Greenwich Park unto Blackheath, with his guard armed with bows and arrows, in their jerkins and doublets. Then the king ran at the ring, together with other lords, knights, and gentlemen.

The last year the chief lords of the land, and such as waited on the king, had appointed under themselves a considerable body of men, well armed and horsed, to be for service upon any emergence or summons of their prince. On the 16th day of the month aforesaid, the king rode into the said park, to see the goodly musters of the lords' men: where every lord's men marched in several companies, a trumpet blowing before each; and they had each their standards, with pensils; their coats in embroidery of their lord's colours, their spears of the like colour, and their footmen attending. The first band was of the king's pensioners, the Lord Bray being their captain, and the king's great banner of arms, borne of four, of damask, blue and red; the king's trumpeter blowing, and the pensioners in goodly array and harness from top to toe; having goodly bosses on their coats, and their men in like colours of cloth. The second band of men of arms was the Lord Treasurer's, Marquis of Winchester, having a white standard, with a faulcon of gold; their coats white and red: who, two days before, had mustered in Moorfields, being a goodly company, consisting of an hundred men, well furnished, provided with great horses, and a trumpeter blowing before them. The third captain was the Lord Great Master, with his men of arms: his standard of red damask, a lion silver, crowned gold, and ragged staff; the coats all black velvet in embroidery the half, and the other half in cloth embroidered, white and red. Fourthly, the Duke of Suffolk, with his men of arms, and his standard an unicorn, silver ermine, in a sun-beam gold, white and murrey, and his pensils Flanders colour. The fifth, the Lord Privy Seal, his men of arms: his standard of three colours, a white goat, the standard powdered with escalop-shells; his coat red and white in embroidery,

1552.  
The king  
rides with  
his guard  
armed to  
Black-  
heath.  
A splendid  
muster be-  
fore him.

1552. and pensils of the same. The sixth was, the band of the Lord Great Chamberlain, Par, Marquis of Northampton: his standard yellow and black, a maidenhead crowned gold; his coats yellow velvet, half the men, and the other half wearing cloth: footmen in yellow velvet, and pensils. The seventh  
 p. 339. band was, the Master of the Horse, Lord Warwick, his men: his guydon of red damask, a white lion crowned gold, and powdered, with ragged staves of silver, and pensils. The eighth captain was, the Earl of Rutland, with his men: his standard of yellow and blue, with a peacock in pride gold, and pensils with a peacock; coats blue in embroidery. The ninth was, the Earl of Huntingdon, with his men: his standard a baboon (which, indeed, is the crest of the Lord St. John's) the coats blue embroidered velvet; and pensils, with a bull's head crowned, about his neck. The tenth band was the Earl of Pembroke his men: his standard of three colours, red, white, and blue; and a green dragon with an arm in his mouth, and pensils. The eleventh was the Lord Admiral with his men: his guydon the Cross of S. George, black, with an anchor of silver; coats black, and broi-dered with white. The twelfth, the Lord Chamberlain Darcy, his men: his standard a maid with a flower in her hand; coats red, broi-dered with white, and pensils. The thirteenth, the Lord Cobham, with his men: his standard white and black, and a Saracen's head in it; his coat black garded with white, and pensils. The fourteenth belonged to Mr. Treasurer Cheny, Lord of the Cinque Ports: his guydon a red cross, and half a rose in a sun-beam, black; spears and pensils. Some of these bands of men and arms consisted of an hundred, and some of fifty.

Care taken  
 for the  
 dearth.

Provisions of food continued dear, notwithstanding a proclamation the king had lately set forth, fixing the prices of victuals; which was not so well observed in London, as it was expected, upon such a command, it should be. Though, in this month of May, a cart-load of beef was brought away from a



butcher, as forfeited, because he refused to sell it according to the proclamation. But this would not remedy the dearth, but people were forced to buy at high prices. Whereupon, June 7, the Duke of Northumberland, and divers other lords of the council, came into London, and sat at Guildhall; where being waited upon by the lord-mayor, and his brethren the aldermen, they were severely reprehended, as for certain other causes, so chiefly because the mayor looked no better after the provisions in the city, and for the reasonable selling of the same. 1552.

The parliament having given the king a subsidy, this summer, the officers were busily employed in collecting it. But here a remark must be made, of the king's grace and charity towards the poor godly strangers that were fled hither. For, in this month of June, he made a grant to divers of these aliens, being born out of his dominions, to detain every sum of money taxed on their heads, for their relief, as of the king's free gift. The king's favour to poor strangers.

The Lady Mary's Grace came June 11, on horseback, through London unto St. John's, with a goodly company, both of gentlemen and ladies; and, two days after, rode from St. John's to Tower Wharf, and took her barge to Greenwich, where her brother then kept his court, and in the evening she returned again by water. Her visit seemed to be, to take her leave of the king, ready to take his progress. The Lady Mary goes to court.

June 16, the Duke of Northumberland took horse at five of the clock in the morning, intending towards the North, to look after the marches against Scotland, of which he was constituted lord-warden; accompanied with a gallant retinue of lords and knights, to bring him on his way. He took in by the way, at Sempringham, the lord admiral's: thence to Lincoln and Hull, where he spent eight or ten days. He declined York, because of the plague there; and so northward. We shall hear more of him hereafter. Northumberland goes into the North. p. 340.

June 27. The king removed from Greenwich, by

1552.  
The king  
begins his  
progress.

water, unto Putney, and there he took horse unto Hampton Court on his progress; and lying there ten days, he went forwards to Oatlands, and so to Guildford, and other places southward, as we shall read hereafter.

Religious  
cheats.

This time was not without religious cheats. There was one Greg, who once counterfeited himself a prophet, set on the pillory, July 1, for cheating, in selling pots of strawberries filled up half-way from the bottom with fearn. And, in the same month, were whipped publicly, a young man and two women, for pretending to signs and visions. One of these women endeavoured to poison her husband, and admitted her servant to her bed; therefore, the morrow after the whipping, she was set on the pillory.

A monster  
boru.

August 3. In Oxfordshire, in a town called Middleton Stony, eight miles from Oxford, the good wife of the house known by the sign of the Eagle, was delivered of a double child, begotten by her late husband, John Kenner, deceased. The form whereof being so monstrous, there were printed relations of it, and multitudes of people were curious to see it. It had two heads, two bodies, four arms, four hands; but downwards one body, one navel, one fundament, at which they voided both urine and ordure. It had two legs, with two feet on one side, and on the other side one leg with two feet, having but nine toes. The 18th of August following, one of these children died, and on the 19th died the other.

Divers  
great fishes  
taken in  
the Thames

August 10, were three dolphins taken up between Woolwich and Greenwich. One was sent to the court for the king; the other were sold in Fish-street, to them that were minded to buy them. And, on the 16th day, were taken up at Broken Wharf, three other great fishes; and, in three other places, three more, and sold in Fish-street. And, to put these matters together, on the 10th day of the next month, were three great porpoises driven up to London Bridge, with a great number of boats; some with nets, some with bills, and some with morice-pikes.

And then they returned down again, and the boats after them, between four and five of the clock in the afternoon; there had been great rains, after which they were seen. The 9th day of the next month, viz. of October, were taken and brought through London, and under London Bridge, two great fishes, and so to Paris Garden, and next unto Westminster; whereof the one was the male, and the other the female. 1552.

August 15. Died at Bethnal Green, that noble knight Sir Anthony Wingfield, comptroller of the king's house, and of his privy council, and knight of the garter; and Mr. Cotton was advanced to be comptroller in his stead. And on the 21st of the same month, was the aforesaid knight buried at Stepney, with a great company of mourners, with priests and clarks singing, and an herald. The order of the funeral was after this manner: the corpse was carried from Bethnal Green over Mile-end Green, with his standard, and a great banner of arms, and his helmet, target, the garter, the sword, the crest, a bull of gold and sable. There was a communion, at which preached the Vicar of Shoreditch, a Scot (named Makebray, if I mistake not, afterwards an exile.) Afterwards was a great dinner made for all comers. And, after dinner, were set up over the place where his body lay, his helmet, his target, his sword, his standard, and his banner of arms, having all, piece by piece, been before offered to the priest. p. 341.

August 26. Departed this life, Sir Clement Smith, Kt. a gentleman of Essex, uncle unto the king, having married Queen Jane's sister. And Sir Clement Smith.

September 5. A proclamation went forth, that the butchers in London should sell beef, and mutton, and veal, the best, for a penny farthing the pound: and necks and legs at three farthings the pound; and the best lamb eight pence the quarter. And such as refused to sell after these rates, were to forfeit their freedom for ever. Prices set upon meat.

Things at this time were not over fair between England and France, as may appear by this skirmish A fight at sea.

1552. at sea, first began by the French ; who with two great ships came down upon a little English bark, called The Little Ager, bound for Spain, which suffered sore by them, striking down her great mast. But in the fight another ship, called The Great Bark Ager, following her, rescued her, and overcame them both, and brought them to Portsmouth. This happened September 26.

Great  
horses.

October 8. A proclamation was issued forth, commanding that no men that had great horses, fit for service, should sell them ; lest by the furnishing of France, or the emperor (who, no question, offered tempting prices) England might leave herself dis furnished.

The king  
bends his  
thoughts  
for the  
good estate  
of his  
realm.

The king being returned from his progress to Hampton Court, Sept. 28, began now, after his pastime, to set himself, like a wise and conscientious prince, to the serious thoughts of his kingdom ; and by this that I am now going to relate, will appear, to what maturity of understanding, and wisdom, far beyond his years, he was already arrived, being now in October fifteen years old ; in which month he exercised his thoughts on three weighty matters for the public good. The first was, for religion. The second, for the security and prosperity of his kingdom. The third, for the procuring a sufficient quantity of money to clear himself of debt, and to raise a treasure for all events. And for each of these he drew up with his own hand Memorials, consisting in divers particulars : which were as followeth :

His de-  
vices for  
religion.

And first, for his care of religion, he digested this into several articles. I. “ For an uniformity of doctrine, to which all preachers should set their hands.” This was intended to establish the church in a truth of doctrine, as it was already in a sober, decent form of worship in the public addresses made to God ; and to put a check to the old errors, and popish opinions, that yet remained in the heads of many priests, still officiating in the church. And this good purpose of his he brought to effect before his



death, by setting forth the Book of Articles of Religion, entitled, "Articles agreed upon by the bishops, and other learned men, in the convocation held at London, anno 1552, for the avoiding diversity of opinions, and establishing consent touching true religion." They were in number forty-two, and are most-what the same with the Thirty-nine Articles established in Queen Elizabeth's reign. 1552.

II. "For the abrogating the old canon law, and establishing a new." There was so much popery and superstition mixed with the ecclesiastical laws, and such a multitude of popish canons and decrees, that they became a snare and a burden: being also very injurious to the state and dignity of princes, extolling so immensely the papal power, and subjecting kings in their own dominions to the bishops of Rome. In-  
somuch that the king's father procured an act of parliament for the purging those laws, or rather for the framing a body of good laws in their stead. This was, after divers years, by the indefatigable labours of Archbishop Cranmer, and the countenance of this king, brought to perfection, and wanted nothing but the king's longer life, and an act of parliament, to bring them into force and practice. p. 342.

III. "A Catechism to be set forth, to be taught in all grammar-schools." This the king thought very needful, for the bringing up youth in Christian principles, and knowledge of true religion. And this he saw finished in his lifetime. A short Catechism in Latin coming forth not long after this, by the king's authority; Alexander Nowel, master of Westminster-school, and prebendary of the church there, being the author thereof.

IV. And because the age was so loose in their manners, and many gross sins were ordinarily and openly committed, to the scandal of the Christian, especially the reformed Christian religion, and because ecclesiastical discipline was so necessary for the good estate of the church, therefore did the good king set it down in his Memorial, for another material thing

1552. to be regarded in religion, "That commissions should be granted those bishops that were grave, learned, wise, sober, and of good religion, for the executing of disciplin." There were still many that filled the episcopal sees, that were old popish bishops, but made a shift to comply. These the king was minded to exempt out of this commission, not thinking it fit to entrust discipline with them, but only with those that were grave, learned, wise, sober, and of good religion. And,

V. Because the incumbents of churches, and those that had livings and benefices, and the cure of souls, were very negligent in their office, and non-resident, and followed other callings, and took little regard of the people committed to their charge, leaving their churches sometimes destitute, or putting in ignorant curates, that could scarcely read, much less edify the people by sober instruction in preaching of the word of God; and many bishops took little regard of all these defaults in their clergy, and kept but few preachers themselves: therefore, for the reformation of this, he seemed to determine another royal visitation; and therein, "To find fault with the slothfulness of the pastors, (*i. e.* bishops) and to deliver them articles of visitation; willing and commanding them to be more diligent in their office, and to keep more preachers."

VI. "For making more Homilies, and more Injunctions, for the service and supply of ministers, who were ignorant, and could not preach; or negligent and superstitious, and did not sufficiently observe the rules and institutions of the reformation." But this came to no effect in his reign.

VII. The king did also at this time make Memorandums for certain bishoprics, namely, for the filling of two then vacant, viz. an archbishopric in Ireland, and the bishopric of Hereford. For which latter he noted down Mr. Harly, one of his own preaching chaplains, who soon after was accordingly preferred to that see; and Tunstal being deprived of the

bishopric of Durham, the king made a Memorandum for dividing that rich bishopric into two, and for placing fit men in them. These were King Edward's Thoughts and Memorials for Religion. 1552.

Secondly. His deliberation for the security and prosperity of the realm, as it appears under his hand, consisted in several particulars. His devices for the nation's security.

I. The former, namely, the security and safety of his kingdom, he found very necessary to be consulted at this juncture. For he was, in effect, come to a resolution of breaking with France, which had dealt so injuriously with his merchants and subjects, and trifled with him in making that reasonable satisfaction he required : and which, as soon as a peace should be made with the emperor, intended, as the king had intelligence, to fall upon his territories in France, and upon England, by the help of the Scots. And, in this month of October, it was also discovered how that king practised in Ireland with the Earl of Desmond, and other Irish lords, by one Paris, an Irishman, who now revealed it, and got his pardon.

Therefore the king first made a remembrance of things to be done, for the strengthening of his territories bordering on France, viz. “ 1. For the fortifying of Newenham Bridge ;” which place, as Steukley had discovered, the French king intended to force. “ 2. For amending the Gitty of Calais. 3. For making store-houses at Guisnes.”

Next, for the providing for his realm at home, he made these remembrances : “ 1. To strengthen the havens of Falmouth and Dartmouth :” about which places the said Steukley had informed, that the French king intended to invade England on the West. “ 2. To amend the peer of Dover, and repair the castle there, and the haven of Sandwich. 3. To fortify Portsmouth, another haven lying towards France ; and then for securing the parts of England bordering upon Scotland. 4. To accomplish the fortifying of Berwic, and the reparation of Beaucastel in Tyndal, and the fortification of Black Bank.” And still fur-

1552. ther, for the strength of the nation, “ 5. To make more great ordnance of the copper in the Tower, and the bell-mettal. 6. To provide more armour, and more pikes, hagbuts, staves, bow-staves, bills, &c. 7. To send commissioners for viewing the state of the realm, for keeping of great horses; and whether they did observe the statutes made concerning the same.” For which purpose, at this very time a proclamation was issued out, dated October 5, admonishing all persons that were bound by the statute made an. 33 Hen. VIII. to keep great horses, to have the same in a readiness at all times, to be mustered by such commissioners as the king should in every country appoint for that purpose, upon pain of the forfeitures in the said statute expressed.

II. For the prosperity and wealth of the nation, the king made these two Memorials: “ 1. The device of two marts;” one at Hull, for the northern parts; and the other at Southampton, for the southern. For the better making himself master of this project for the marts, he penned another distinct discourse: “ First, of the reasons and causes why it was then most necessary to have a mart in England. Secondly, how the mart would be brought to pass. Thirdly, the discommodities and lets to the mart to be kept in England. Fourthly, the remedies and answers thereto.” His writing concerning every of these particulars, are published in the History of the \* Reformation. “ 2. To bring more arts into the realm; so that all may not stand by clothing.”

p. 344.  
\* Vol. II.  
Append.  
p. 78.

His device  
for raising  
money.

His third consultation was as weighty as any of the former, namely, for the procuring of a quantity of money, to enable him to pay his debts, and to make a fund for any future service; for indeed the king found himself now sinking deeper and deeper into debt, by borrowing money at high interest, more than he could well pay; for I find him this year taking up money thrice at Antwerp, by his agent, Gresham; that is to say, in May.



	Flor. Car.	1552.
Of Wolf Rechelinge . . . . .	64,000	
Of Jasper Schetz, and his partners .	64,200	
Of Anthony Fuggar, and his nephews	160,500	

whereof the two former sums were payable in December, and the latter in November. Again, in July, the king took up

	Flor. Car.
Of the Schetz, and his nephews . . .	44,640
Of Conrad Raylinger, and his sons .	36,860

both sums payable in July, 1553; for which the mayor and city of London were security; and to them the king gave a recognizance, therein discharging them, and their heirs and successors, lands, possessions, and goods, both on this side the sea, and beyond. Again, in September the king took up

	Flor. Car.
Of Francis Van Hall . . . . .	185,560
Of Anthony Fuggar, and his nephews	164,116
Of John Rantzow, Knt. . . . .	18,559
More of the Fuggars . . . . .	128,500

whereof the two former sums were payable in August, 1553, the third in September following, and the fourth in February the said year.

By this frequent taking up of money, it appeared, his debts were great, and his treasure was low: so that upon any emergent necessity, he might be put to pressing streights; which the king well considering, contrived with himself for the composing of two things; viz. the discharging of his present debts, which amounted now to 300,000*l.* and to get a treasure for all events, whatever chances might happen, whereby he might have present occasion of a mass of money; which treasure, he concluded, should be 50,000*l.* For the effecting of both which, he laid this scheme: viz.

I. For the getting himself out of debt, to retrench

1552.

p. 345.

his expences: “ 1. By diminishing the charges of the pensioners’ table, of the lord privy seal’s, of the physicians’, and of the master of the household; giving them reasonable recompences.” As the month before, viz. in September, the king began that course, when the young lords’ table was taken away, and those of the masters of requests, the serjeants at arms, and divers other extraordinary allowances, as the king noted in his Journal. “ 2. By providing for the wardrobe, that the charge might be the less. 3. By discharging of the admiralty. 4. And of the posts. 5. And of certain bulwarks on the sea-side, thought to be superfluous.” And accordingly I find a letter in this month of October, to the lord chamberlain, for his warrant, to discharge the unnecessary bulwarks in the county of Essex, according to a schedule of the same, signed by the privy council. And hereupon the bulwarks of earth and boards, in Essex, which had continual allowance of soldiers in them, were discharged: by which was saved presently, 500*l.* per annum, and hereafter 700*l.* more, as the king notes in his Journal. “ 6. Discharging likewise of 1000 men in Ireland, besides what had been already discharged. 7. Of 500 men at Barwic, when his forts should be repaired; and 200 at Guisnes, for the winter. 8. By bringing the augmentation court into the exchequer, and so likewise the court of first-fruits and tenths, and saving all those fees that might be spared. 9. By examining, whether the receivers of the king’s monies, and such like officers, had portage-money allowed them by their patents. And if they had, how they gat it:” it being something, it seems, not formerly allowed. By which portage-money, they had good consideration allowed them, for the bringing or sending of the king’s money to the exchequer, or elsewhere. This the king made a note of, to retrench. “ 10. By discharging likewise of superfluous fees in the duchy and the wards.” And as these were the king’s thoughts of good husbandry, and for cutting

off what expences might be spared, for the saving 1557.  
money to enable him to pay his debts: so,

II. For the gathering of a treasure, and getting a mass of money, he devised this course: “ 1. To gather and coin the church-plate.” For which there were soon after commissions issued out, to persons of the chiefest eminency in the several counties, to take away, and to convert to the king’s use, all such plate as was more than necessary for the celebrating the communion. “ 2. To sell some lands, for the making up the sum of 5000*l.* namely, the lands of certain chantries, colleges, houses, and Beaumont’s lands,” late master of the rolls, forfeited now to the king. “ 3. To redeem the leases pertaining to the liveries at Westminster, Waltham, Reading, and St. Albans. 4. To call in for the remnant of the king’s debts. 5. To take account of all those that have had to do with the king’s money, since the 36th of King Henry VIII.” For this also a commission was issued out. “ 6. The stay of lead.” This was Gresham’s counsel to the Duke of Northumberland, as may be seen before. “ 7. To sell the bell-metal. 8. To execute the penal laws touching horses, plows, &c. for riots, oppressions, planting and grafting of trees, for the size of wood and billet, forestalling and regrating.” I find divers commissions issued out for these purposes; which, no doubt, created sometimes oppressions and hard dealing towards the people. And I am apt to think, the hand of Northumberland was with the king in this, whose father had put it into the head of this king’s grandfather, to take his advantage upon his subjects, for the breaking of old obsolete laws, which had pecuniary penalties annexed to them; but it cost him his head. “ 9. To take the advantage of the offences and forfeitures of the merchants of the Stilyard. 10. To call a parliament, to get a subsidy in respect of the defence of the English robbed by the French. 11. To sell certain jewels, to the sum of 15,000*l.* 12. To examine how the sale of the

1552. fustians was made, and also of the copper;" which the king had bought of the Fuggars, and the Schetz, according to the custom of those that borrowed money of them, to take some part in commodities. " 13. To borrow money of the staplers." Which the king did this month, to the sum of 40,000*l.*; that is, p. 346. twenty shillings upon every cloth exported. And there was at a shipping this month of October, carried out 40,000 broad cloths. " 14. To call in for Sir Anthony Guidot's obligations." For there were some dealings between the king and him, the king granting him, being a stranger, a liberty of trade, and he entering into obligations to the king for that privilege. I find also, the king granted him a protection. Lastly, " To take order for the mines in Ireland;" for there were mines lately found out there, and several Almaines, expert in mines, were procured, to search and dig in them; but I think this turned but to little account, and the king, not long after, had thoughts of discharging these Almaines.

Commis-  
sions issued  
out for  
raising  
money.

According to these devices of the king for raising money, there were in December and January divers commissions issued out: and some of them somewhat oppressive. As for that, for requiring of all church plate (excepting what was requisite for the administration of the sacrament) the king, it appears, was moved to do this upon these considerations, as he wrote himself: "That he thought that way best, because it should make things to be looked for, that else peradventure would be lost; as church-plate, which, as men said, was daily conveyed away. And hereby the bullion might remain still (and be for a further reserve) and the land not sold (which was appointed so to be, for raising money;) which the king thought better to be bestowed upon those that had served him (in places of trust, and offices about his person) than sold to auditors and pen-men (such, he meant, as were in places of account, and receivers of the king's revenues) who, having store of money, would buy it." And as for the com-



mission to examine the breakers of laws, which were to be punished by pecuniary mulcts and forfeitures, to alleviate this, the king wrote, “ That the forfeits being demanded of such as had willingly devoured their neighbours, and broken the law, would do much good.” He meant, by making the laws better observed for the future, and to pacify many people that had suffered by their oppressions. And lastly, for the commissions, whereby the king’s officers, and receivers, and those that were intrusted with the king’s money, were to be called to account, he intended, that what monies should be recovered of them, should be set apart for a stock for any future event. For so he wrote in his book, “ The arrearages of the surveyors and auditors of the courts, shall be left for a treasure, or not dismembred.” 1552.

In fine, it was not far from this time, that the king applied himself to compute his own debts, and his own treasure, thus : The king’s computation.

Debts owing beyond sea . . . . .	£200,000
Debts owing to him . . . . .	£100,000
The subsidy, which he reckoned at	80,000
Superfluous church-plate . . . . .	20,000
	<hr/> 200,000

Besides this he had,

In the houshold . . . . .	£20,000
Of the mints . . . . .	10,000
Michaelmas rent . . . . .	10,000
Treasure . . . . .	100,000
Bullion . . . . .	34,000
Lands to be sold . . . . .	3,000
Fustians . . . . .	14,000

p. 347.

Thus did this young prince mind his royal estate, and look after his treasure, as knowing it the very nerves and marrow of the flourishing condition of a kingdom.

## CHAP. XIII.

Matters of Ireland. The emperor raises money in the Low Countries. Antwerp. The English merchants there. Buckholt's process against the king.

1552.  
Disturbances in the north of Ireland pacified.

**M**ATTERS in Ireland about this time stood thus : There had been lately some disturbances and commotions in the northern parts, by O'Connor, and some other Irish lords, blown up, as it seems, by the French and the Scots : making use of the practice of one George Paris, a discontented Irishman ; who at length, in hope of his lands, made discovery, and had letters promising him pardon, and more favour ; which coming to the knowledge of the Queen of Scots, he was clapt up in Striveling Castle, when he was about coming out of Scotland into England. Seasonable opposition being made against these stirs, by some of the nobility and chief men in that kingdom, and by the cities of Dublin and Drogheda, under the Lord Deputy, things were appeased, and set at quiet. Whereupon, in October, the king sent several letters ; one to the lord chancellor and council ; another to the master of the rolls there ; another to the master of the ordnance ; and a fourth to the Earl of Desmond ; signifying, that as the lord deputy there had advertised his majesty of their diligent service done to him in the expedition northwards, so he would not neglect to keep the same in good remembrance to requite when occasion should require. And two other letters of the same effect were sent to Drogheda and Dublin. The king was now busy for settling the whole state of Ireland in good order.

The lord deputy sent fir over.

At this juncture the king sent for Crofts, the lord deputy, over to his presence, the letters importing, That forasmuch as certain articles sent unto the privy council, could not be resolved and answered,

without present conference with him, by his majesty and the council, he should repair thither, leaving the charge of that realm, during his absence, to the chancery there, the two justices of the Bench and Common Pleas, and the chief baron of the Exchequer, jointly to minister the affairs of that realm, by the advice of such other counsellors there, as they should think needful. This letter was dated October 27th. Yet, counsels altering November 7th following, letters came from the king to the said lord deputy, to nominate and appoint Sir Thomas Cusacke to supply the place of chief governor of the realm, during the absence of him the said deputy, together with Sir Gerard Aylmer, justice of the Bench. And another letter, of the same date, was sent to the Earl of Desmond, to aid and assist them, together with thanks given him for his former service. But upon some new advice, it was not safe for the deputy as yet to be absent from Ireland; for November 26th, letters were sent to him, to stay his coming away for a while, till the king's pleasure should be further signified unto him. 1552.  
p. 343.

The reason whereof was this: letters had been seized in Boloignois, by some Burgundians in the emperor's service: which letters were writ from the Queen of Scots to the French king: importing, how she had sent O'Connor's son into Ireland, to comfort the lords of Ireland, who had lately been defeated, and to encourage them to attempt new disturbances. These letters being brought to the queen regent, she ordered Mons. De Langie, the treasurer of Flanders, to acquaint Mr. Gresham, the king's agent (then at Antwerp) with them: who, November 24th, arrived at the English court, and shewed these matters there. Whereupon counsils were taken to send letters by Henry Knowles, a special messenger, in post, to stay the deputy, if he met him in Ireland, that he might watch these intended mutinies, and be provided against them; with advice that he should pretend his own private affairs for his present stay, and to

But stayed.  
And why.  
King's  
Journ.

1552. prolong his going from week to week, lest it might be perceived. Knowles also carried with him articles concerning the whole state of that realm; which the deputy was willed to answer. For the which purpose he had been sent for over, to give satisfaction thereunto by his own mouth. For this discovery and intelligence, a letter of thanks was written to the regent; signifying withal, a desire of further amity.

Coinage of  
monies in  
Dublin.

In November some stop was put to the coinage in Dublin, upon the death of Martin Pirry, Esq. treasurer of the mints there. But December 25th, letters were wrote to the council, to give order to the officers of the mint to proceed to the coinage of such further portions of bullion, as ought to have been coined by the grant made to the said Pirry, so the same exceeded not the value of 8000*l.* more than was already coined. For it was but in July last, that an indenture was made between the king and this Pirry, witnessing, That for divers urgent causes and considerations, the king minding for the present to coin a certain mass of bullion within his mints, erected in the city and castle of Dublin in Ireland, had ordained and made the said Martin to be master or treasurer of his said mint, Oliver Daubeney to be the comptroller thereof, and William Williams to be assay-master: and where his highness had delivered to the said Martin the quantity and sum of 1500 pound weight of fine silver of Troy weight, his majesty willed, granted, and agreed, that the said Martin Pirry, his executors and assigns, with the comptroller and assay-master of the said mint for the time being, and with such monies, ministers, and labourers, as to them should seem good, should melt, work, and make in the foresaid mint, the said quantity and sum

p. 349.

of 1500 pounds weight of fine silver, into one manner of silver monies, which should be called *pieces of six-pence*, running for six-pence of lawful money of England; and should be of such weight, as sixty and twelve of them should weigh one pound weight of Troy; and that every pound weight of the same



monies should hold and be three ounces of fine silver out of the fire, and nine ounces of allay: which his majesty had ordained to be standard. 1552.

In the winter of this year, great preparations were making for carrying on the war between the emperor and the French, who was somewhat too hard for the former the last summer. And what means were made in the Low Countries by the queen regent, for the raising of money, the nerves of war, and which the emperor had extraordinary need of, Chamberlain, the king's ambassador, informed the council, in a letter writ Jan. 8th, "That on Thursday last, the proposition to be made unto the states, both temporal and spiritual, assembled at Bruges, arrived from the emperor, to whom it was sent to be seen; and it was immediately propounded there. Wherein the queen herself, as it was said, played the jolly woman, exhorting the states and burgesses at this time to help the emperor, being provoked to a war against his will. Whereto the pre-eminence of answering fell at this time to Flanders, because the demand was there made. They of that town answered for all Flanders before Brabant, which else ought to have had the preference; and so declared themselves to be willing to aid the emperor's majesty, like good subjects, according to their power. Forthwith the next day her majesty had all the commoners of the towns of Brabant and Flanders before her, in her privy chamber, where all men were put out, officers of the household, and others, except the council. The day on which the ambassador wrote his letter, the rest for Holland and Zealand, Artois, and Henault, Freezeland, and others, were before her majesty in the same place.

The emperor raises money for the war.

"The demands made by the queen were, from Flanders 480,000 gulderen, from Brabant 400,000. Henault and Artois did pay less always, because they were nigh the enemy, and should feel the war more than the rest. And those said sums it was agreed to be assessed upon them. Zealand was cessed at 40,000

1552. gulderen; the bishoprick of Utrecht at 20,000. The clergy were not mentioned in the sums above specified. Besides, these demands of the emperor were to be put out to rent for the sum of 600,000 guilders; which, after the wars ended, the subjects were like to redeem themselves. Howbeit the thing was so raised upon their meat and drink, that it would be almost not felt. The answer to this demand was to be made at Brussels within ten days.

“Here were now taken great determinations to bend a mighty power against the French king. And the emperor had a great quantity of gold and silver of the Indies, come by land from Jeanes thither; which was put to be forged into money: but yet he sought, nevertheless, to have what he could by finance and other means. And a person of the ambassador’s acquaintance, newly come from Zealand, had learned certainly, that sixty ships of war, that were prepared to have gone to sea with the admiral, were then all dismissed. And order was taken for to excuse the charge of 100,000 guilders monthly for the same; and that every of the towns of Holland, and Zealand, and Flanders, should rig out ships of themselves, for which they had an ordinance of their own; and the emperor should be at no more cost, but the wages of certain soldiers in every ship: and so they should of themselves both keep the seas, and convoy their merchants’ ships from time to time.”

England keeps it-  
self disen-  
gaged.

In all this time England kept herself disengaged to either party, and was only a spectator, however well it wished to one side more than the other. Yet jealousies were conceived of her. Skipperius, the emperor’s admiral, in some discourse with the English ambassador, said, that it was told him, that 2 or 3000 horsemen should be sent out of England to France; which, he added, he could not believe. And the ambassador assured him it was untrue.

A friar  
hinders a  
truce be-  
tween the

The emperor, that he might have the less upon his hand, was making some good advance toward a truce with the Turk; which a friar, of great pretended

sanctity, did endeavour to obstruct; probably set on work by the French: and the saying went, that he practised with the Turk to have undone again all that was there in so good forwardness. Whereupon the report was, that John Baptista Guastaldo, a great officer of the emperor's, had caught him, and put him to death; which some thought would make a shrewd stir among the Hungarians, who, it seems, had a great opinion of him.

1552.  
emperor  
and the  
Turk.

The emperor's treasurer general, called Mons. Langie, came to Antwerp in February, to see and mark how all things went there, and to prove what money might be found to serve the emperor: and seeking among the merchants to take up 60,000 guilders, could not find the one half. And, as it was told the English ambassador (who also wrote this to the lords) there was no money to be had at finance in Antwerp under 16 in the hundred for one year; and very little so: for the wealth of the place depended on the English trade: and there were now such heavy impositions upon merchandizes brought thither, upon this necessity of the emperor, that the English merchants had of late imported very few commodities; and that rich place began now to be very poor. This being perceived, some part of the duty had been taken off: but still other impositions were required, contrary to the intercourse for trade with England. The treasurer, in talk with an English merchant, that had been suitor to him, asked him, why their ships with merchandize came not? and said, that now the impost of the half hundred penny was dissolved, the merchants had no cause to complain. Yes, said the merchant, we have a great deal more wrong done us, directly against the liberties we ought to enjoy by the intercourse: and with that told him of paying 20s. upon a last of herrings now, more than ever was before. Especially, he told him, that he thought they ought not to exact any such thing upon what was carried from thence into England. To that the treasurer had nothing to say,

Oppression  
of the Eng-  
lish mer-  
chants at  
Antwerp.

1552. but that it was victuals: and that we might in England do the like upon victuals, when we would. But here, as the English ambassador added in the letter wherein he related all this, neither the treasurer had regard, nor our merchant did remember to tell him, that their people did fish the herrings upon our coast, through our sufferance; which did not require in friendship, that therefore there should be exacted upon the same, greater customs than in time past. The treasurer leaving off talk, said, if the English merchants were any way molested, and did complain, they should have redress: for they had, indeed, been very hardly used before, when they appealed for justice in their courts.

The English court-  
ed to re-  
new their  
trade at  
Antwerp.

In some talk between the president and the English ambassador, in the conclusion, he asked him concerning a poor English merchant, that had been long trained there in the law by the Countess of Meghen, very uncharitably, and against all right and conscience. He told the president, that the man was by long suit undone, and almost desperate how to obtain justice; whereupon the president said, he should have sentence shortly; and that, said he, in such sort, that it shall appear, that good justice is ministered without regard to Madam de Meghen, though she be a great woman. Whereat the ambassador made this consequence to the lords of the council, to whom he made this relation, that they might perceive, that at these folks' hands, with a little abstinence (and forbearance of trade) favour and gentleness would be atchieved, rather than they would forego our merchants; which at that time they truly stood in great doubt of.

Antwerp  
almost un-  
done by  
impositions

The rulers of Antwerp had been very earnestly in hand with the queen and her counsellors, for to call in their placarts and ordinances late made; which, by experience in their town, they did perceive to be the utter ruin of the negotiation, which they laboured to have free, and at liberty, as in the time past it had been; which, they said, had been the only enriching of those Low Countries throughout; and that the



whole welfare thereof depended upon the same free negotiation. And they had, among many other things, persuaded the queen, that without a short redress, there would be, by reason of the same, such a sort of idle people, as they should not be able to rule; who were before maintained by the trade of the place, and now had nothing to do. 1552.

There was about this time one Buckholt, an Almain officer, that gave much trouble to Chamberlain, the ambassador: for he had lately exhibited a request and writing to the privy council of the lady regent, of certain sums of money owing from England to him; which request and writing was brought unto the ambassador in a judicial way by a serjeant at arms, by order of the said council. This Buckholt was to have served King Henry VIII. under the regiment of one Risenburgh, about five years past. Upon the sight of the said request, with the demand of the privy council, that the ambassador should answer to the same, he sought access, and shewed the president and council, that this man had received great sums of money of the king's father; but that he, with the rest of his Almans, in their journey had devoured and consumed it, with over-doing every kind of service, by raising great displeasure, devastating and spoiling the emperor's country of Liege, and his subjects there; wholly refusing to go to some place, as they were bound by their oath and covenant; like as divers commissaries sent then by the emperor unto the king's commissaries (whereof this ambassador was one) could testify. Besides also he shewed, that they kept one and other of the king's commissaries prisoners, and intreated them as evil as they could. Moreover he told them, that whereas the said Buckholt did claim debt of the king's majesty for that journey, he would prove, by acquittances signed and sealed by him, that he had of the king above 20,000 guilders more than he ought, although he had served three months; and yet served not one hour. Whereupon the ambassador further declared unto the regent's council, how

Buckholt's  
complaint.

The ambassa-  
dor's an-  
swer.

1552. the king's father had caused him to convent the said Buckholt, Risenburgh, and others, before the emperor; to the intent he might have knowledge of their treasons used against him; which the said ambassador opened sufficiently before Skipperius and Naves, commissaries appointed by the emperor to understand the same; and withal told them, the king had not caused him to convent these men before the emperor, meaning to enter in judgment there with the parties; but thinking the emperor, of good zeal towards his majesty, would have punished the traitors, being under his obeisance, for example to all others, to deal with any prince of honour after the like manner: like as his majesty would have done, if any of his subjects had done the like unto the emperor. But, he said, it appeared, that the emperor had not had any such consideration. And whereas now before them the said Buckholt did attempt to seek justice against the king's majesty, and convent him to answer him in law, as though the king were bound to their jurisdiction; he told them, that he hoped they would have the same consideration that appertained in that behalf: no more seeking to judge the question between the king's majesty and his servant, than the king should do between the emperor and his servant; which were not reasonable.— And whereas the said Buckholt did mean to make his action good against him (the ambassador) because he was the king's majesty's commissary, he said, he then acted under him; and the same commission was now out; and his account, with Buckholt's acquittances, yielded up upon the same. And he prayed them moreover to consider, that he was his majesty's ambassador, and a public person: and therefore not to consent, that the said Buckholt, or any other, should convent him to answer, whereas he was not bound.

Buckholt's  
process in  
the year  
1518.

This troublesome man had been making these his demands some years before, namely, in the year 1548, when Secretary Smith was ambassador at

Brussels, together with Chamberlain. Then he urged to the said secretary and Chamberlain, that there (at Brussels) his debt should be adjudged. Chamberlain told him, that the King of England, their master, was not bound to stand to their judgments. He would have had Chamberlain to have given him in caution to stand there at justice with him: but Chamberlain told him, he was revoked from that charge long since; but that if he would come into England, he should have safe conduct to go and come: and there it should be tried what was due to him; and so should he do better than to slander the king, saying that his majesty owed him, when indeed rather he owed the king. Besides that, no service was done by him, nor the rest, that had among them 10,000*l.* which grieved the ambassador to think on. Also by Secretary Smith's letter to the protector, about the same time, it appeared, that Buckholt had been favourably heard at the emperor's court at Brussels; and according to the tenor of which, the emperor had wrote in his favour. But the secretary, and the other ambassador, answered him, that the king's majesty had made a reasonable answer to the emperor: and that so much was offered to him as could be demanded, viz. that bringing his accounts into England, if he could approve more to be due to him than was paid, he should be reasonably satisfied: as again, if he had too much, it was reason he should repay it. His learned men he brought with him thought this reasonable: but he stood much, that the matter was begun there, and therefore there it should be answered. And needs he would have had Sir Thomas Chamberlain to have found him sureties, and to have answered there. They both answered, that Chamberlain was not sent for that purpose; and that it had not been seen, that a king should be required to answer in another prince's court, especially seeing Buckholt should be *actor*, (*i. e.* plaintiff.) After much reasoning to and fro, he required Smith to see and hear his accounts, and to

1552.

p. 353.

1552. make the report to the protector. To this Smith refused not: but when he came to Skipperius to have his process, he came again to the ambassador's, and said, he could not get it of him. To the which they said, they could not do without it; and so for that time they were rid of him. But he afterwards persisted in his pretences, as was shewed before. By all which may be seen, how favourable and partial this government was to their own subjects, when there happened any competition between them and foreigners, though they were crowned heads.

## CHAP. XIV.

Disturbance in Buckinghamshire. Bishop Hoper visits. The bishopricks of Worcester and Gloucester united. The Duke of Somerset's daughters. The duchess, &c. The king goes a progress. The gestic. The Duke of Northumberland goes into the North. Lord Guilford Dudley, his son. The Bishop of Bath's exchanges. Dr. Walter Haddon, &c. The king's sales. The merchants of Bristol, &c.

**L**ET us now take another review of this year, and gather up divers other more private matters, that happened within the compass of it.

Insurrec-  
tion in  
Bucks.

Landlords had now so wracked their rents, and raised them so high from the old wont, that the farmers grew very discontented; or rather continued so, partly for that reason, and partly for the continuance of the dearth of provisions, kept up still by some of the richer sort; which occasioned another insurrection about the beginning of this year, in Buckinghamshire: the pretence whereof was, to have lands upon easier rents, and victuals better cheap. The chief man that headed this tumult was a tanner, of Deansfield in that county, called Isaac Herne; who was after taken and indicted, but pardoned. His pardon bore date April 29.

Warrant  
Book.

p. 354. The reverend father John Hoper, holding the see of Worcester in *commendam* with Gloucester (Wor-



cester being void by the late deprivation of Heth) as he had visited Gloucester, anno 1561, bringing certain articles of religion with him, to be by that clergy subscribed; so now, 1552, he went in visitation to the diocese of Worcester with the same articles. But in the church of Worcester were two canons, named Johnson and Jolliff, who refused to subscribe, and protesting against them, charged the said articles not to be catholic, nor agreeable to the antient doctrine; with whom the bishop entered into a dispute, and had much trouble; and at length sent up a full account thereof to the council.

1552  
Bishop  
Hoper vi-  
sits Wor-  
cester.

Two ca-  
nons there  
refuse sub-  
scription to  
his articles.

But however popish these men were, they made a shift with their consciences, to continue in their places throughout this reign, for ought I find to the contrary; and under Queen Mary had more preferments heaped upon them. Johnson got a prebend in the church of York, and a rectory in the same county. Jolliff became Dean of Bristol. Johnson wrote against Hoper's articles, but kept his writing privately by him, during King Edward's reign: till Jolliff carried the manuscript with him beyond sea to Lovain, in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth, and printed it in Antwerp, 1564, with additions of his own, under this title, "*Responsio sub Protestatione facta, &c. i. e.* An Answer made under Protestation to those Articles of John Hoper, bearing the Name of Bishop of Worcester, in which he disagreed from the Catholic Faith; together with some Confutation of the said Hoper; and the Replies of the Right Reverend Father in Christ, Stephen Gardynier, Bishop of Winchester, at that Time detained in Prison for the Confession of the Faith." Dedicating the said book to the King of Spain.

After the bishop had done his visitation in the diocese of Gloucester, hearing his articles were not subscribed to by divers of his clergy, and many abuses still remained there, he hastily went over that diocese again, and administered certain interrogatories, both

Visits  
Gloucester  
the second  
time.

1552. for the clergy and the laity ; which were these that follow :

INTERROGATORIES AND EXAMINATIONS AGAINST  
THE CLERGY.

Hoper's  
Interroga-  
tories.  
E Fox.MS.

I. What is the cause of his non-residency, and whether his curate be sufficient ?

II. Whether the communion be used in such place, and after such sort, as most varieth from, and is most distant from, the popish mass ?

III. Whether they preach any doctrine to avouch purgatory, pardons, auricular confession, praying to saints, the Bishop of Rome, holy water, holy bread, palmes, ashes, beads ?

IV. Whether they allure the people to the love of any other person or persons within this realm, or without, to this intent, that the people should favour them ?

V. *Item*, Whether they say one part of their service softly, and the other aloud, as they were wont to say the *Pater Noster* with a small voice, and the Psalms with a loud voice ?

VI. *Item*, Whether they sit at one part of the service, and kneel at another, and stand at another, as they were wont ?

VII. *Item*, Whether they use any month's minds and anniversaries ?

VIII. *Item*, Whether they use any corporas cloth in the communion ?

p. 355. IX. *Item*, Whether they ring or knoll the bells in the time of the communion, or between mattins and the communion ?

X. *Item*, Whether they suffer the people to sit at the epistle, and stand at the gospel ?

XI. *Item*, Whether, at the visitation of the sick, they bear the sacrament with covering their heads with the surplis, or at their breast, or with any light ; or, when they come into the house, they suffer the people to kneel and honour it ?

XII. *Item*, Whether any of them speak unreverently of God the Father, the Son, or the Holy Ghost; or mock and scorn at *the word, laws, and promises of God?* 1552.

XIII. *Item*, How many priests within the deanry have subscribed unto the articles that I put forth unto them?

#### AGAINST THE LAITY.

XIV. *Item*, Whether the midwives, at the labour or birth of any child, do use any prayers or invocations to any saints (saving to God only in Christ) for the deliverance of the woman; and whether they do use any salt, herbs, water, wax, cloths, gyndils, reliques?

XV. *Item*, Whether any midwife refuse to come to any woman labouring of child, for religion's sake, or because she is a wife to a minister of the church, that hath married, or do marry, both by God's laws and the king's?

XVI. *Item*, How many priests within this deanry have subscribed to my articles?

Hoper having been Bishop of Gloucester about fourteen months, made a deed of gift, May 12, to the king, of the said bishoprick, viz. of all the lands and annuities which by means of that bishoprick he enjoyed; and also a *dedimus potestatem* annexed to the same, directed to John Tayler, otherwise called Baker, and to John Coventre, to receive the confirmation of the said deed, to be made by the dean and chapter there, to the said king's majesty. This was in order to the dissolving this bishoprick, and the founding a new bishoprick, by the uniting of this of Gloucester, and that of Worcester, into one.

In April, he was translated to the bishoprick of Worcester, with all the lordships, manors, &c. during his life; and a patent was granted to John Hoper, Bishop of Gloucester, to be bishop of Worcester, and for the uniting the Bishoprick of Gloucester with that of Worcester: so that the jurisdiction of the bi-

Hoper makes a deed of gift of his bishoprick to the king.

Translated to Worcester.

1352. shoprick of Gloucester shall now cease, and be accounted parcel of the bishoprick of Worcester; *habend. sibi durante vita, quamdiu se bene gesserit* (for so it is set down in the manuscript), anno 6 Edw. VI. without any other date. Soon after another patent was granted him for the discharge of his first-fruits.

**Surrenders Worcester.** In September, he received a letter for the surrender of the bishoprick of Worcester, to the end there be a new collation of the same.

**Union of Gloucester and Worcester.** I find another patent and grant made by the king to this bishop, dated Dec. 8, *an. 6 reg.* Edw. VI. viz. uniting the bishopricks of Gloucester and Worcester into one, and to be one from henceforth, and one diocese, and so to be reputed and taken.

**p. 356. Hoper made Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester. The endowment of this new see.** And yet another granted him soon after, to be Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester for life. By another patent, the king gave him, and his successors for ever, to the maintenance of the same bishoprick, the manors of Alchurch, Kempsey, Hallow, Grimley, Blockley, and Aston, in the county of Worcester; and the hundreds of Heswoldslow, and Patslow, in the said county; and the manor of Cleve, in the county of Gloucester: also the manors of Maysmore, Brokthorp, Harscomb, Preston, Longford, Droyscort, and Brockworth, in the county of Gloucester; and the manors of Ruge and Farleigh, in the said county: and the manors of Hopemeleshal, Dewchurch, and Kilpeck, in the county of Hereford, lately belonging to the monastery of St. Peter, in Gloucester: and the scite of the manor called the Vineyard, with the park, and the king's part of the manor of Lassington, and the half of the wood called Woolridge, and Le Perch; with the parsonages and churches of Hartpurie, Maiscombe, and Upton, in the city of Gloucester; and of Canyme, Northlach, Kenysford, Welford, Southserney, and Standish, in the county of Gloucester; and of Dewchurch, Kilpeck, Glasebury, Devenock, Cowern, and Envias Harrold, in the county of Hereford: and the parsonage and church of Newport, in the county of



Wenlock, in Wales; and the chapel of Piperton, in Hereford: and all the tenths in the parishes of Standish, Culdrick, Hardwick, Overoxlinch, Ranwich, Parva Harveld, Netheroxlinch, Sall, Putley, Farley, and Auney St. Crucis, in the county of Gloucester; and in Devenock, Wentworth, and Talthworth, in Hereford: and the portion or annual rent of 53*s.* 4*d.* to be taken from the rectory of Resimsford, and yearly paid by the vicar of the same church for the time being; and 26*s.* of the rectory of Teynter, and 10*s.* of the rectory of Rencomb, and 26*s.* of the rectory of Nevinsfeld, and 26*s.* of the church of Newport, in the said county of Wenlock: and the tenths in Aldesworth, Linton, and Skipton Solas, in the county of Gloucester, with all the advowsons belonging to the aforesaid manors; with the advowsons and collations of the vicarages of Hartpurie, Maysmore, and Upton St. Leonard's, in the county of the city of Gloucester; and of Camyer, Norlech, Kemesmisford, Welford, Southserney, and Standish, in the county of Gloucester; and of Dewchurch, Kilpeck, Glasebury, Devenock, Cowerne, and Envias Harrold; and the presentations of chaplains, or stipendiaries of those chapels of Maysmore, Camyas, Stinchecomb, and Piperton, in the counties of Gloucester and Hereford: which came to the king's hands by the concession of the said John Hoper; so fully and intirely granted as they were before put into the king's hands, by reason or pretence of gift, or concession, or surrender of the said Hoper; which are extended to the clear annual value of 1000 marks, above and beyond the tenths and yearly rents for the time to come, reserved by these presents: to have to him and his successors for ever; to be held in pure and perpetual alms.

And rendering thence yearly to the king, at the Court of First-fruits and Tenths, 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* at the feast of our Lord's Nativity, every year; to be paid in the name of the whole tenths, and of the tenth part, as well of the premises granted to the bishop and

1552.

His tenths.

1552. his successors, and of the bishoprick of Wigorn and Gloucester, and of all the manors, rectories, &c. and for full recompence of all tenths. And when the separate and annual tenths of the foresaid bishopricks  
 p. 357. in the Court of First-fruits and Tenths, heretofore yearly paid *inter se*, did extend to the sum of 136*l.* 10*s.* 5½*d.* yet the king granted by these presents, the said bishop, and his successors, to be acquitted and disburdened of all sums of money and burdens, besides the said annual tenths of 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*: and this said bishop to be discharged of the first-fruits for this one time. And the king's majesty doth covenant to discharge him and his successors, yearly, of 133*l.* 6*s.* 8½*d.* yearly to be paid to John Bell, clerk, late Bishop of Worcester, out of the foresaid manors belonging to the same bishoprick; and of 5*l.* yearly, to be paid for the fee of the chief steward of the foresaid manors; and of 42*s.* paid for the moiety of the fee for keeping the bishop's palace of Worcester; and to discharge him of other, &c. But of, &c. and 26*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* yearly, to be paid to John Tayler, alias Baker, Gent. for keeping the register of the Bishop of Gloucester.

He is pardoned his first-fruits.

In June, a warrant went to the officers of the Court of First-fruits, to discharge the said Hoper, Bishop of Worcester, of all the first-fruits. Nay, and so much was he favoured, that a letter was sent to the lord chancellor, to take order, that no person should demand a fee of him. This letter was wrote December, 1552.

Serjeants at law.

In the month of May, there was a call of these serjeants at law: Robert Brook, Recorder of London, James Dier, John Caril, Thomas Gawdy, Richard Catlyn, Rafe Rooksby, William Stamford, and William Dallyson, Esquires. And a warrant was issued to the lord chancellor, to make out writs to them, that his majesty having nominated them to be serjeants at the law, therefore they should prepare themselves for the execution of the same, upon pain of the forfeiture of 1000*l.* a piece.

The Duke of Somerset having been beheaded in

January last, the king and council took care of his four younger daughters; as he had six, viz. Anne, Margaret, Jane, Mary, Katharine, and Elizabeth; all bred up to learning. For I find, by order of the king, they were committed, May 2, 1552, to the Lady Cromwel, who was to have 50*l.* per ann. for each of them; which salary was, November 1, increased to 100 marks a year apiece. One of his daughters, viz. the Lady Elizabeth, was before in the keeping of the Lady Smith (the wife, I suppose, of Sir Thomas Smith, who had belonged to the duke; or, perhaps, rather the wife of Sir Clement Smith, who was her aunt); and in February there was a warrant to the Exchequer, to pay to that lady an annuity of 100 marks, towards the finding the Lady Elizabeth, one of the late Duke of Somerset's daughters, during the said Elizabeth's abode with her. One of these ladies, viz. Jane, the third daughter, the duke her father secretly laboured to match with the king, and employed the Lord Strange much about his person, to recommend her to him, and to take his opportunity to move the king that way, as that lord confessed, in the said duke's last troubles: but she died unmarried, as also did two of her sisters, Margaret and Katharine. Those that were married were: Anne, the eldest, who was married to John Dudley, Earl of Warwick, and eldest son to the Duke of Northumberland, and afterwards to Sir Edward Umpton, Knight of the Bath; Elizabeth married Sir Richard Knightly, of Fausly, she being his second wife; Mary was married twice, first to Sir Richard Rogers, of Brianslo, in the county of Dorset, Knt. and after to Sir Henry Peyton, Knt. Yet I find that Margaret aforesaid was desired in marriage by the Lord Strange, in the year 1551: for a letter was directed from the king and council, to the Earl of Derby, his father, dated in July, that the king's majesty was well pleased that his son should solemnize marriage with his kinswoman, the Lady Margaret, daughter to the Duke of Somerset. But perhaps

1552.  
The daughters of the Duke of Somerset.  
Council Book.  
Warr. Book.

p. 358.

1552. the duke's disgrace and misfortunes, that soon after befel him, was the occasion that that match took not effect.

The duchess.

As for the duchess, she remained in the Tower (as she must do all this reign). In the beginning of the year 1553, 100*l.* was assigned her out of the profits of the late duke's lands, by a letter of order to the Chancellor of the Augmentations, to be paid to the Lieutenant of the Tower, for her use: and it being the good time of Easter, leave was given to Bishop Hoper, formerly the duke's chaplain, to visit her.

Eton College visited.

May 6, the Lord Chancellor, the Bishop of London, Sir John Cheke, Dr. May, Dr. Wendy, were appointed visitors of Eaton College. May 14, Mr. Riley, vice-provost, appeared. Hurland, the usher, and Avise, a fellow, were warned to appear. And Fawding, one of the fellows, was committed to the Fleet for lewd words.

Covent-garden.

June 10, Covent-garden and Long-acre (which have improved since to such a vast estate) were given to the Earl of Bedford.

The king's last progress.

This summer, in the same month of June, King Edward began his last progress. It had been resolved, the extent of the progress should be to Pool, in Dorsetshire, and to come back by Salisbury homeward to Hampton Court. Fifty pound of gold was coined of the new standard, to carry about in this progress, of which these were the gests: June 27, he removed to Hampton Court; thence to Oatlands, another of the king's houses, where he stayed about eight days; thence to Guilford, in Surrey; thence to Petworth, in Sussex; thence to Condrey, Sir Anthony Brown's house, where the king was most nobly banqueted; thence to Halvenaker, a pretty house beside Chichester; thence to Warblington, a fair house of Sir Richard Cotton; thence to Waltham, a fair great old house, formerly belonging to the Bishop of Winchester, at that present the lord treasurer's: in all these places, the king had good hunting and good cheer. Thence to Portsmouth, where the king,



well viewed the town and the haven, but chiefly the bulwarks; of which he gave this account, in a letter to Fitz-Patrick: "That the bulwarks were chargeable, massy, well rampired; but ill fashioned, ill flanked, and set in unmeet places: that for the town, it was weak in comparison of what it ought to be; that it was too great, there being within the walls large closes, and much vacant room: that the haven was notably great, and standing by nature easy to be fortified; for the more strength thereof, he devised two strong castles on either side of the haven, at the mouth thereof." From Portsmouth he went to Tichfield, the Earl of Southampton's house. Thence to Southampton: the citizens had put themselves to much cost against his coming, by painting, repairing, and rampiring of their walls. Thence to Beaulieu, or Bewly, a little village in the middle of the New Forest; thence to Christchurch, a little town in the same forest, where the king was the 22d of August; thence to Woodlands; thence to Salisbury; thence to Wilton; thence to Wotisfunt, the Lord Sands's house; thence to Winchester; thence to Basing, the lord treasurer's house; thence to Donnington Castle, near the town of Newbury; thence to Reading; and so to Windsor, whither he came September 15; and thence, September 28, to Hampton Court again.—While he was at Christchurch, he wrote an ingenious account of his progress so far to his favourite, Barnaby Fitz-Patrick, then in France, which is preserved in Fuller's History.

1552.

His observations of Portsmouth.

p. 359.

Book VII.  
p. 412.

The king went this his progress in great state, be- seeming a monarch; and he took along with him, as part of his retinue, four kings at arms, viz. Garter, Clarencieux, Norroy, and Ulster, the only king of arms for all Ireland, whom the king had made the last February; and three heralds, viz. Somerset, Rouge Dragon, and Bluc mantle; and appointed them handsome allowances for their diet: the chief king had 20s. a day, and the rest 6s. 8d. The noblemen and officers that attended the king, had each a band

Kings at arms wait upon the king.



Earls of Huntingdon and Pembroke, to take a view <sup>1552.</sup> there, which was by order of council in May ; having so done, accordingly wrote to the king the state of <sup>down to the marches.</sup> those places, and advised, that some new fortifications should be made in Berwick ; that some unnecessary expences there should be retrenched ; that there might be a general deputy warden, and three other wardens, of the three marches, recommending one for that deputy. <sup>p. 360.</sup> He mentioned also to the king, certain outlaws, that is, some in the borders that had robbed and spoiled, how these were willing to return to their obedience upon a pardon. To this letter of the duke's, the king in all points agreed ; and sent an answer, in July, signifying, " That the king thought his opinion good, and very necessary, concerning a new piece to be made in Barwic, and the charges thereby diminished ; and therefore his pleasure was, that he, the duke, should give order and direction there, for the new plat and device, and to cause such parts of the works to be first advanced as shall most need, one before the other. And also, his majesty did well allow his good opinion, to have a deputy general over all the three marches, and deputy wardens there : where his majesty thought none more meet than the Lord Wharton, of whom the said duke had thereto a good opinion. And finally, that the king was contented, that certain persons outlawed, and of their voluntary wills returned, should have his mercy shewed them." Here the duke saw 10,000*l.* disbursed, which was sent down before him.

The king's orders to the duke there. Warr. Book.

There was notice taken by the people, that the Duke of Northumberland went not with the king in his progress ; which made some surmise, and others talk abroad, according as they would have it, that the duke was in disfavour at court, and was commanded to be absent. This, when it came afterwards to the duke's ears, was not to be put up by him ; and the complaint was brought before the council, and the reporters, some of them, were found and punished ; for so we meet with this order of council in September :

Reports upon the duke's not going with the king.



1552.  
Some com-  
mitted for  
reporting  
it.

“September 25. One John Kyrton was committed to the Fleet, for reporting that the Duke of Northumberland should be commanded to be absent from the court, with other slanderous reports; and one John Burrough was committed to the Tower for the like matter.”

A match  
between  
the Lord  
Guildford  
Dudley  
and the  
Earl of Cum-  
berland's  
daughter  
endea-  
voured.

While the king was in his progress, he endeavoured to gratify this duke, by forwarding a match between the Lord Guildford, his son, and a daughter of the Earl of Cumberland; for this marriage had been earnestly laboured to be brought to pass; and the more, for that there were great impediments pretended. Whether the earl had no inclination thereto, and to conceal the same (for it was not safe to deny Northumberland any thing) gave out these impediments: perhaps some precontract; or, more probably, because she came of a family related to the royal blood. For this purpose, there was a letter writ by the king, in July, to the Earl of Cumberland, “Desiring him to grow to some good end forthwith in the matter of marriage between the Lord Guildford Dudley and his daughter; with license to the said earl, and all others that shall travail therein, to do their best, for conducement of it to effect; any law, statute, or other thing to the contrary notwithstanding.” And that the duke was the impulsive cause of the king's writing this earnest letter in his son's behalf, may appear by a letter which he forthwith sent to the said duke, signifying as well his majesty's writing and speaking to the said earl heretofore, for this matter of marriage, as his writing again at this present, for the permitting thereof, with license thereof to the said duke, his son, or any for them, to travail therein, any law, statute, or other thing to the contrary notwithstanding. But though this, whatever the cause was, succeeded not (and perhaps, the forwarding this match might be one of the ends of his going down into the North) yet the next year the ambitious duke had his desire fully, and joined this his son to the Lady Jane, of the

Warr.  
Book.



blood royal (though it proved his own and their destruction) and his elder son, Sir Andrew, to the said Earl of Cumberland's daughter, as we shall see in due place. 1552.

The king, this July, made an exchange (for the benefit of some of his craving courtiers) with the Bishop of Bath and Wells. The king to have the chief mansion of the deanry of Wells, with the lands within the precinct thereof, and the manor of Westoker, and the patronage of the parsonage thereof, and the borough of Wellington, and Stogursey, in the county of Somerset, and the park of Wedmore, and an annuity coming out of the manor of Glastonbury: and the bishop to have the chief mansion belonging to the Bishop of Bath's see, commonly called The Bishop of Bath and Wells' Palace, and all within the precinct of the same; and the house in Wells, appointed for the safe custody of clerks convict, and the manors in Wells and Westborough, and the borough of Wells, and the hundred of Wells, and all the appurtenances, which lately the said bishop had made over to the Duke of Somerset, and now were forfeited to the crown; and so reverted again upon this exchange; but he was to pay yearly to the king for the manor of Wells 10*l*. For this there was an indenture between the king and the said bishop, viz. that the bishop had bargained and sold to his highness, his heirs, and executors, the chief mansion, &c. and then the king made a gift to the said bishop, in consideration of the said bargain and sale, and to his successors, of the chief house of the see, &c. to be holden in pure alms.

About this time the king and council had provided two new masters for two colleges; the one in Cambridge, the other in Oxford. Dr. Walter Had-  
Dr. Had-  
don recom-  
mended  
for presi-  
dent of  
Magdalen,  
Oxon.  
 don, a very learned and honest man, doctor of the civil law, that had lately been removed from King's College, to be master of Trinity Hall, in Cambridge (of whom the king had made great use in his proceedings, and in commissions for religion) was intended

1552. to be promoted to the presidentship of Magdalen College, in Oxford; Dr. Oglethorp, the present president, having been dealt withal to resign. So, July 20, Dr. Mowse was recommended to be master of Trinity Hall, in Cambridge; and, August 14, Dr. Haddon was appointed to be elected master of Magdalen College, Oxon, at Michaelmas next, when Oglethorp promised to resign. But it happened, that neither Oglethorp was after willing to resign, nor the fellows to elect Dr. Haddon; which caused the king, after one letter written to that college in behalf of Haddon, without success, to send them a second angry one; but at last he was placed there.

Sir Andrew  
Dudley  
preferred.

Sir Andrew Dudley, brother to the duke, having been captain of Guisnes, an high and honourable post esteemed in those times, and got into debt by the service there, was now, in October, sent for home, to prevent the inconveniences of a feud between him and the Lord Willoughby, Captain of Calais. Whereby he became nearer about the king's person, and was made one of the four principal gentlemen of the king's privy chamber; he was also keeper of the king's wardrobe in Westminster. He it was, that in the beginning of the king's reign, being in the Pauncey, one of the king's ships, met at sea with the Lion, a principal ship of Scotland, and giving her a broadside, did so maul her, that he took her.

p. 362.

Ordinan-  
ces for the  
Tower.

The king took care of the Tower; and now, in October, established articles and ordinances for Sir John Gage, constable thereof, and Sir Edward Warner, newly made lieutenant, and for the yeomen of the guard, with others, appointed to give attendance in the said Tower of London, for the sure keeping of the same, to be observed and kept, upon pains therein limited. Sir Anthony Darcy was lieutenant hitherto; but, in the month of October, the said Sir Anthony received a letter to deliver, by indenture, to Sir Edward Warner, the charge of the Tower, with the prisoners, and all other things thereunto belonging.

And for the relief of the country, and for the

making corn more cheap and plenty, a proclamation came forth in November, willing and charging all justices of the peace, diligently to have respect to the due execution of a statute made the last session of parliament for tillage, to be used as it was in any one year since the first year of the reign of King Henry VIII. 1552.  
Proclamation for tillage.

It was the king's pressing need, I suppose, that occasioned somewhat a severe commission to be issued forth this year, not only to take away out of churches all garments, and other utensils, used formerly in superstitious worship; but to take for the king's use all goods belonging to the churches that could be spared; and then, to be sure, little enough would be left. Now, in November, a letter was directed to Commission for taking away goods from churches.

“To take all certificates and returns of the late commission, directed to divers countries, for the said survey of church goods, and to devise the best means for the bringing and converting to the king's use, such goods as could be spared in the churches.” Among other things that came into the king's possession, by virtue of this commission, was good store of linen, good and bad, as surplices, altar cloths, towels, napkins, &c. used for the celebration of mass. These the Bishop of London, as it seems, as much as was found in the churches of London, or of his diocese, begged for the poor children of Christ's-Church. And accordingly a letter came from the king and council to the Bishop of London, to deliver to the governor of the hospital of Christ's-Church, in London, such linen vestures, and other linen cloth, not employed for the ministry in the said churches, as of the king's gift, for the poor orphans, and other poor people.

The king was now selling away apace the rectories and advowsons of such churches as came into his hands by act of parliament, either from the monasteries, chantries, and free chapels, or by exchanges. I will here give an account of a few of these purchases. The king sells away rectories. Book of Sales.

1552.  
To Reve  
and Cotton

Thomas Reve and George Cotton purchased the parsonage of East Pury, alias Potterspury, with the appurtenances, in the county of Nottingham, with divers other lands, to the yearly value of 85*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.* for the sum of 1421*l.* 8*s.* 5½*d.* paid to the treasury.

To Whiting  
and Freeman.

p. 363.

A patent was granted to John Whiting and Thomas Freeman, of the county of Leicester, gentlemen, of the parish and church of Wissenden, in the county of Rutland, lately belonging to the priory of Sempringham, in the county of Lincoln; and the parsonage of Moulton, and the advowson and right of the vicarage of the parish church of Moulton; and the parsonage of Winswick, and the advowson and right of patronage of the vicarage of the parish church there, in the county of Huntingdon, lately belonging to the priory of Huntingdon, &c. *Et illis est concessum rectorias prædictas ad proprios usus.* Dated Nov. 18, 1552. For which they paid 1224*l.* 13*s.* 10½*d.*

To Bradshaw.

A patent granted, and stands in the book next to that mentioned before, to John Bradshaw the elder, of the parsonage and church of Prestend, with the right of the patronage of the vicarage of the same, in the county of Hereford, late parcel of the monastery of Wigmore, in the same county, with all corn and hay in the parish of Prestend, *Et illis est concessum convertere*, &c.

To Margaret Brown.

Another purchase, of the great tithes in the town and fields of Wyke, and in Pershore, in Worcestershire, by one Margaret Brown, for the sum of 266*l.* 4*s.*

To Sir Rowland Hill.

A patent was granted to Sir Rowland Hill, Kt. (and alderman of London) for the sum of 408*l.* 10*s.* 8*d.* of the parsonage and church of Sainton, upon Hyne Heath, in the county of Salop, and the advowson, donation, and free disposition, and right of patronage, of the vicarage of the church, and one rectory in the county of Chester, and the rectory of Sherf, with the appurtenances, in the counties of Salop and Stafford, to have to him and his heirs, of



the yearly value of 17*l.* 17*s.* 9½*d.* *Et quod convertere* 1552.  
*possit prædictas rectorias ad proprios usus.*

To which I will add another purchase (though it happened two or three months after) made by Thomas Cecyl, son or relation to Sir William Cecyl, secretary, and John Bell, for the sum of 2055*l.* 19*s.* 2¼*d.* of the parsonage of Canfield, with the advowson of the same, and divers other advowsons and chantry lands, and lands given to the maintenance of priests, to sing soul masses, and the maintenance of obits, &c. in divers shires, which were extended to the clear yearly value of 94*l.* 3*s.* 2*d.* to them and their heirs, to be held in soccage, and part *in capite*. Dated Feb. 9.

These sales were made for raising money for satisfying the king's debts: and as a commission came out lately, to certain persons, for the sale of 1000*l.* lands; so a warrant, in November, came to the lord chancellor, signifying to him, that it was his majesty's pleasure, that immediately upon the determination of the said commission, he should make out three other like commissions, one after another, under the great seal, putting into every of them 1000*l.* (lands per ann.) to be sold by the said commissioners, in like manner as the other. These commissioners were, the Bishop of Norwich, Sir John Gates, Sir Philip Hoby, &c.

The king now took care of the merchants of Bristol, and allowed one Edward Prince, Thomas Hicks, and Robert Butler, merchant adventurers of that city, to chuse a master of that mystery, and two wardens, and made it a corporation for ever. Which makes it seem as though there were no corporation of merchants before in that city, but all free traders; unless, perhaps, this corporation was established for the traders into some particular parts of the world, which are not mentioned in the manuscript.

Two embassies were now, December 2, preparing to be dispatched. Sir Andrew Dudley was going to the emperor; and a letter was sent to Morison, am-

And to  
Thomas  
Cecyl.

Commis-  
sions for  
sale of the  
king's  
lands.

The mer-  
chants of  
Bristol  
made a  
corporation.  
Warr.  
Book.

p. 364.

Ambassa-  
dors sent  
to the em-  
peror and

1559.  
French  
king.

bassador in that court, wherein the affairs of the ambassade of the said Sir Andrew was commended to him. And Sir Henry Sydney was ambassador to the French king; and letters were sent to Sir William Pickering, leiger there, touching the business about which Sir Henry was sent.

The magistrates of Strasburgh send for Peter Martyr.

About this time letters were sent to the king from the magistrates of Strasburgh (from which place the learned Peter Martyr came last into England) to permit the same reverend man to return again to them; for that they needed him in their public schools. But the king, and Archbishop Cranmer, and as many as favoured sincere religion and sound knowledge in divinity, were loth to lose him from Oxford, where he now was placed the king's professor. Therefore a letter from the king was sent to Christopher Mount, the king's agent in those parts, residing there, to make relation to the said magistrates of Argentine, "That Peter Martyr, whom they desired to return thither, for the government of their schools, could not depart hence, he being already appointed reader of the king's majesty's public lectures of divinity at Oxford, and was admitted free denizen: and to desire them to accept his majesty's doings herein in good part."

The king's  
answer.

Naval  
stores  
brought in  
by composition.

The king took care of his shipping; and to supply himself from the East country with cables, cordage, and other naval stores, in the month of February, he agreed to allow ten clothiers of Suffolk to make five hundred coarse cloths, for the use of Richard Crag, of London, draper, to be transported to Dantzic, and the eastern parts; commanding the customers to take bond of the same person, to bring in the said naval provisions, as much as should amount to the value of the said cloth.

## CHAP. XV.

p. 365.

A commission for inquiry into heresies. The new service. The Bishop of Durham's troubles: deprived. A synod. Articles of religion, and a catechism, confirmed. Articles for uniformity. Gilpin's sermon at court.

NOW for a few matters relating to religion, or religious men. A commission was directed this year, dated in October, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of London, and other worshipful persons in Kent, to make inquiry after sundry heresies lately sprung up; and for the examination and punishment of erroneous opinions, as it seems, of the Anabaptists and Arians. Of which sort some now, notwithstanding former severities, shewed their heads. Under pretence of this commission, some papists of that country did hope to bring divers honest professors of the gospel into trouble. And indeed these were the chief procurers of this commission, and were joined with the archbishop in it: dissembling, nevertheless, to be indifferent in the matters of religion. The archbishop and commissioners sat at Ashford. Among others questioned at this commission, a man and a woman of good life, and professors of religion, living at Ashford, were accused falsely by several employed for that purpose, to have been lewd together in an house: where, the witnesses said, they saw them by moonshine, at eleven a clock at night, in an entry on such a side of the house, and on such a day of the month. And they cried out to the archbishop for exemplary punishment to be taken on them. The archbishop going that day to dinner, passed by the side of the house where this lewdness was pretended to be committed; where making a stop, by considering, found that the moon on the day sworn, shone on the other side of the house at eleven a clock, and was hardly up, or but just rising

1552.  
A commission for certain heresies in Kent.

The archbishop's sagacity.

1552. at that time: so that it appeared not possible to see into that part of the house at that time, by the help of the moon. And considering withal, the good reputation of the man, and of the woman especially, and the ill disposition of the accusers, by this means the sagacious archbishop made a clear discovery of the innocency of these two folks, and the malicious wickedness of their adversaries. And so he set them both at liberty. And when a year or two after, he was himself in bands at Oxford, he sent a present to the good woman, by one W. P. to whom the archbishop told this story, and who writ this account; desiring her to forgive him for his straitness used towards her. And the said person carried this present unto the woman, and delivered the message accordingly.

Fox 1st  
Edit.  
p. 1477.  
Orders  
about the  
new re-  
vised  
Common  
Prayer  
Book.  
Council  
Book.  
p. 366.

As the revising, perusing, explaining, and finishing the Book of Common Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments, had been committed to the archbishop, and certain other learned divines; so the work was completed, and was printed off by Grafton, in the month of September, anno 1551. But, it seems, the book was not so correct as it should be. For September 27th an order came to Grafton, the printer, in any wise to stay from uttering any of the books of the new service. And if he had distributed any of them among his company (of Stationers) that then he give strait commandment not to put any of them abroad, until certain faults therein were corrected. And, probably, one reason of this order might be, for inserting the article for declaring the right meaning of kneeling at the Communion; for which there was an order in October.

The revis-  
ors.

These reviewers, before spoken of, were Cranmer, Ridley, and certain other doctors; whereof Dr. Cox was one: who being met together at Windsor, diligently, as their scope was, reformed the book according to the word of God. And they intended also, to proceed to the restoring of a good discipline in the church. But here great stop and opposition was made; and loth men were, to be brought under

They de-  
signed to  
restore dis-  
cipline.



ecclesiastical discipline. Of this, Cox wrote to Bullinger, October 5th, 1552. Therein he told him, <sup>1552. Cox to Bullinger.</sup> "That they had already altered the rites of the public prayers and sacraments, and framed them according to the rules of God's word. But we hate (said he) those bitter institutions of Christian discipline. We would be sons, yea, heirs, but we abhor the rod. And he prayed Bullinger, that he would by his letters stir up the great men and nobles, to take particular care about this discipline; without which, with great grief he spake it, the kingdom of God would be taken away from them." But something Cox met with in Bullinger's fifth Decad, in the place where he treated of the Lord's Supper, which he was not satisfied in, and which looked contrary to an order they had made in the Communion Book, concerning communicating the sick; which that learned man seemed not to allow of, for want of a congregation, which four or five persons could not make. Where Cox propounded this inconvenience, as arising from his opinion; "What if, when the Lord's Supper was to be publicly administred, all should go out, or refuse, besides three, four, or five, that stayed to receive; might not the sacrament be lawfully administred to them? Why then should the sick be deprived of that liberty?" Of this he desired Bullinger's fuller solution. D

But as for the afore-mentioned book, thus reformed, <sup>The new service ratified.</sup> called now *The New Service*, it was ratified by the parliament that sat in January following, in an act, intituled, "An Act for the Uniformity of Common Prayer, and Administration of the Sacraments." Whereby all persons were enjoined to resort to their parish churches on Sundays and holidays, to hear those prayers, and to abide there quietly and soberly, upon pain of the censures of the church: and no other forms to be used, nor any present at such forms, upon pain of imprisonment.

There had, about the year 1550, been a conspiracy in the North: to which the Bishop of Dur- <sup>Bishop of Durham's troubles:</sup>

1552. ham had been privy ; but thought fit to conceal it. But one Ninian Menvil discovered it ; and withal, informed against the said Bishop. Whereupon he was in danger of misprision of treason. This business against the bishop came before the council in the month of June ; when it began to be considered : but the king being then about taking his progress, it was resolved, June 19th, to defer it till his majesty's return. About September, the bishop was sent up

p 367. for by the council, upon certain accusations ; and accordingly, about the beginning of October, he was in London ; and on the 4th and 5th days of the said month, lodged at the late monastery of White Monks on Tower Hill : and soon after, was committed thence to the Tower ; and a special commission appointed for his trial : which commission was directed to Sir Roger Cholmely, lord chief justice of the King's Bench, Sir Richard Read, John Gosnold, Richard Goodrick, Robert Chidley,

Stamford, Esquires, and Richard Liel, Doctor of the Law, &c. or to seven, six, or five of them, " To call before them, at such time and place as they should think convenient, Cuthbert, Bishop of Durham, and examin him of all manner of conventicles, conspiracies, contempts, and concealments, or other offences. And if he be found guilty, to deprive him of his bishopric ; and otherwise to do in the premisses according to their wisdoms," &c. In fine, he was found guilty, and deprived, the 14th of October, of his bishopric : or the 11th day, according to King Edward's Journal.

And deprivation.

The bishopric bestowed upon Horn. Warr. Book.

And as Tunstal was thus deprived in October, so in November following a grant was made to Robert Horn, Professor of Divinity, and Dean of Durham, of the said bishoprick, with all the lordships, manors, lands, &c. to the same belonging, during his natural life. But in an *Apology* writ by the said Horn, soon after his flying abroad under Queen Mary, it is evident that he accepted not of it. And the reason why he refused it was, because he cared not to take

Tunstal's bishoprick over his head. Yet Tunstal, 1552.  
when restored in the said queen's reign, was his great  
and chief enemy, as he complained in the said  
*Apology*. The bishoprick was soon after dissolved,  
with an intent to found two in the room of it.

But a warrant was issued out to Sir John Williams, Menvile  
rewarded.  
to pay to Menvile (for his good service in making  
this discovery) by way of his majesty's reward, the  
sum of one hundred pounds: but he paid for this  
afterwards. For in the first and second of King  
Philip and Queen Mary, under the name of "Ninian Outlawed  
under Q.  
Mary.  
Cok. Instit.  
Par. 3. p.  
215.  
Menvile nuper de Sedwich in Com. Dunelm, Armig." he was indicted in the King's Bench of high treason,  
(perhaps he was concerned in Wyat's business) and  
upon process he was outlawed, and so returned. He  
lived to the fourth year of Queen Elizabeth: in whose  
reign, long after, his daughter and heir brought in a  
writ of error in the King's Bench against her father's  
indictment; wherein two errors were assigned: and  
the outlawry was reversed, anno Regn. Elizabeth 27.

De Chambre, in his History of the Bishops of Bp. Tun-  
stal and  
the dean  
charged  
about a  
conspiracy  
in 1548.  
Angl. Sa-  
cra. Par. 1.  
Durham, sheweth how Menvile (whom he calls  
Rinian Menvile) as he accused Bishop Tunstal of  
concealing a conspiracy in the North in the year 1550,  
so in the year 1548 he had also accused him, together  
with his chancellor and the dean: and, I suspect it  
was of a crime of the like nature. For it is probable  
enough, that as in that year there was a dangerous  
rebellion by papists, broken out in the West, so there  
might be another hatching in the northern parts, to  
back them. Upon this accusation, the said bishop,  
and the two other accused with him, were summoned  
up to London: where the dean, named Dr. White-  
head, formerly the prior there, an antient man, and  
not used to these harasses and troubles, ended his  
days, and was buried in the church of the Minorities,  
London.

Hayward, that undertook to write the history of p. 368.  
Hayward  
taxed.  
King Edward's life, was ignorant of all this. For  
this is all he writ of Bishop Tunstal's troubles,

1552. "That he was sent to the Tower for concealment of I know not what treasons, written to him, I know not by whom, and not discovered until what I shall call The party, did reveal it." Because he could pick nothing else of this matter out of King Edward's brief Journal, which was the main assistant of his history, and he could not tell where to go, or would not take the pains, to give himself further information, he sets it down after this sarcastical manner, below the gravity of an historian; and all, the better to conceal his own ignorance, and to tax the government. Was this writ like an historian, whose office is to relate, and give the reader plain and satisfactory accounts of things? But this is a digression, which the reader will pardon. And I proceed.

A Synod.  
Articles of  
Religion.  
Warr.  
Book.

While the parliament was sitting this winter, a synod also was held; wherein was framed and concluded, a Book of Articles of Religion, taken out of the word of God, purified and reformed from the errors of popery, and other sects. "But it was in the month of May, anno 1553 (I transcribe out of the Warrant Book) that these articles, agreed upon by the bishops, and other learned men, in the Synod at London, in the year of our Lord 1552, for avoiding of controversy in opinions, and the establishment of a godly concord, in certain matters of religion, were published by the king's commandment." And a book, containing these articles, was then signed by the king's own hand.

A Cate-  
chism ap-  
proved by  
the Synod.

A Catechism for the instruction of children in the fundamentals of true religion, passed the said synod: but who was the author was not known in those days. Bishop Ridley was charged to be the author and publisher thereof, by Ward and Weston, in the disputation with him at Oxford: who falsely also told him, that Cranmer had said so but the day before. Ridley declared he was not, and that Cranmer would not say so. But he confessed that he saw the book, perused it after it was made, and noted many things for it: and so consented to the book.



Weston then told Ridley that he made him at the synod to subscribe it, being then a bishop, as he said, in his ruff. But Ridley replied, he compelled no man to subscribe. Indeed he set his hand to it: and so (he said) did Cranmer: and that then it was given to others of the convocation to set their hands, but without compulsion. Ward then would have framed an argument out of this catechism against Ridley, to prove that though Christ was ascended into heaven, yet he might be on earth: and so consequently in the sacrament: and then quoted a passage out of it, *Si visibiliter et in terris, &c.* 1552.

What I have to say more of this catechism is, that it seems to have been published in English as well as in Latin; that John Day printed it, and licensed to come abroad 1552. For, according to the Warrant Book, “In September, 1552, a license was granted to the same printer, to print it both in Latin and English, the king having caused it to be set forth;” but it was not printed before 1553. And the reason it was so long between the license and the publication (half a year, and more) I conjecture was, because it was thought fit to have the allowance first of the convocation, for the giving it the greater countenance and authority. It was certainly writ by Alexander Noel, as I find by comparing Noel’s catechism and this together. The Collocutores are in both catechisms the same, viz. Magister and Auditor. And in many places, the very same questions and answers are given *verbatim*; only Noel’s catechism, published under Queen Elizabeth, is larger much. In May the next year, viz. 1553, the council sent their letters abroad in behalf of this catechism, enjoining it to be taught to scholars, *as the ground and foundation of their learning*, as it is expressed in the Warrant Book. License for printing it. Warr. Book. The author. p. 369. Enjoined to schools.

At the same time were many letters issued out, dated May 20, to the clergy, “That the king had sent unto them certain articles (which were 54 in number) for an uniform order to be observed in every Articles for uniformity. Warr. Book.

1552. church within the realm: which articles are there said to be gathered with great study, and by the greatest learned men of the bishops," &c. These Articles were enjoined for Uniformity in Rites, as the last year were framed the Articles for Uniformity in Doctrine, being forty-two in number, though published not before June this year. And thus, by the care of the archbishop, the reformation of the church seemed to be completely provided for. But what these articles were, I cannot tell; nor do I know any book or manuscript but this, where there be any footsteps or mention of them.

Vide Cranmer's Memorials, ch. 27.

Gilpin preaches at court.

Bernard Gilpin, famed in the North for his good zeal to religion, and his care of his flock, was sent for up to court, to preach before the king: in obedience to which he came up, and on the first Sunday after Epiphany, he preached, though the king, upon some occasion detained, was not present to hear him. It being a notable sermon, not sparing vice, in whomsoever he met with it, and pointing to the corruptions of these times, I shall briefly give some account of it. He preached upon the gospel for the day, which was Luke ii. beginning at ver. 41. taking only one clause of it, *Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?* The method he chose for his discourse was, to shew in order, how all estates of men, the clergy, the nobility, and the commonalty, were under the bands of this obligation; they must be about their Father's business: and he must, he said, cry so unto all estates, as well of the ecclesiastical ministry, as of the civil governance, together with the vulgar people.

The contents of his sermon.

He began with the priests: who, he said, seemed to have brought blindness into the whole body, making men forget their heavenly Father's business. Then he shewed the avarice and ambition of the clergy in former days; and how the Bishop of Rome abused Peter's keys to fill Judas's satchel; how he dispensed with all prelates that brought any money, from obeying Christ's commission given to Peter, *Feed, feed*

*my lambs and my sheep* : and stretched it so largely, that instead of feeding Christ's lambs and sheep, he allowed them to feed hawks, hounds, and horses, I will not say (said he) harlots : and instead of fishers of men, he made them become fishers of benefices. He brought preaching into such contempt, that it was accounted a great absurdity for a cardinal to preach after he had once bestrid his moyl. And then he declared, that if he had that gift, strength, and calling, (though he were sure to smart for it) he had rather speak against the pope's enormities in Rome, than to speak of them there. Then he declaimed against the intolerable abuses that came from Rome, and could not be driven away, and sent to Rome again to their father : he meant dispensations for pluralities and *totquots*, and for non-residences : which had, he said, so many patrons, that they could not be driven away, together with other abuses. 1552.

p. 370.

From the clergy he intended to turn his speech to the king and the nobles : but they were not then present ; whereat he used these words, “ I am come this day to preach to the king, and to those that be in authority under him. I am very sorry they should be absent, which ought to give example, and encourage others to the hearing of God's word. And I am the more sorry, because other preachers before me complain of their absence. But you will say, they have weighty affairs in hand. Alas ! hath God any greater business than this ?—But in their absence I will speak to their seats, as if they were present.” And so he proceeded to speak to the king ; and then to the nobles ; whereof, concerning such of them as were patrons of livings, he said, that they saw that none did their duty ; and that they thought, as good to put in asses as men. And that as for the bishops, they were never so liberal formerly in making lewd priests, but they were at that present as liberal in making lewd vicars. He dared to say, that if such a monster as Dervil Gatherel, the idol of Wales, burnt in Smithfield, could have

1552.

been well conveyed to come to set his hand to a bill to let the patron take the greatest part of the profits, he might have had a benefice.—For worldly offices, they searched meet and convenient men; only Christian souls, so dearly bought, were committed without respect, to men not worthy to keep sheep.

He advised the king to send forth surveyors, to see how benefices were bestowed and used, how Christ and his gospel were robbed and dishonoured, to the great decay of the realm and commonwealth. That he should find but a small number of patrons that bestowed rightly their livings, seeking God's glory, and that his work and business might be rightly applied: for that it was almost general to observe of every one of them, his farming of them to himself or his friends, and to appoint the rent at his own pleasure. But worse than all this, a great number never farmed them at all, but kept them as their own lands, and gave some three half-penny priest a curate's wages, 9*l.* or 10*l.*—They began first with parsonages, and seemed to have some conscience towards vicarages: but now their hearts were so hardened, all is fish that comes to the net. That there were vicarages about London, having a thousand people belonging to them, so spoiled.—Gentlemen kept in their hands livings of 40*l.* or 50*l.* and gave one that never came there 5*l.* or 6*l.* Some changed the grounds of the benefice with their tenants; to the intent, that if it were called for, the tenant should lose it, and not they. He could name the place where a living of an hundred marks by the year (mentioned in the margin, viz. Crostwait and Cheswic) had been sold for many years, he supposed an hundred, save one; and so continued still.—That noblemen rewarded their servants with livings, appointed for the gospel.—That he was not able to rehearse, nor yet any man knew, all the abuses, which the simoniac, ambitious, and idol pastors had brought into the land; by whose examples ravenous wolves, painted Christians, hypocrites, had entered, and defiled the sanctuary, spoiled



Christ and his gospel, to the destruction of his flock. 1552.

Then he descended to shew, what gross superstition and blindness remained among the people, through lack of faithful preachers. He passed over much infidelity, idolatry, sorcery, charming, witchcrafts, conjuring, trusting in figures, &c. which lurked in corners, and began of late to come abroad, only for lack of preaching; they thought baptism not effectual, because it wanted men's traditions. A great number thought it a great offence to take the sacrament into their hands, that had no conscience to receive it with their blasphemous mouths.—Many, because they saw not in the church the shining pomp of painted cloths, candlesticks, images, altars, lamps, tapers, they said, *As good go into a barn*: nothing esteeming Christ, who spake to them in his holy word; neither the holy sacrament, reduced to its first institution.—That the devil, by those cormorants that devoured the livings appointed for the gospel, had made a fortress and bulwark to keep learned pastors from the flock; that is, so to decay learning, that there should be none learned, to commit the flock unto: for by reason livings appointed for the ministry, for the most part were either robbed of the best part, or clean taken away, almost none had any zeal or devotion to put their children to schools, but to learn to write, to make them apprentices, or else lawyers: the two wells, Oxford and Cambridge, almost dried up.—The decay of students so great, that there was scarce left of every thousand an hundred: adding, that if they decayed so fast, in seven years more there would be almost none at all: and then might the devil make a triumph.—A thousand pulpits in England were covered with dust. Some had not had four sermons in fifteen or sixteen years, since friars left their limitations; and few of those worthy the name of sermons. These were some of the gross abuses and corruptions used in the church before, and even to this time, for covetousness sake. And p. 371.

1552. this was the free an honest way, this and other preachers in these days, used in exposing of them. But now to other matters.

## CHAP. XVI.

New serjeants. Lady Mary visits the king. The king's sales. A Lasco's judgment of the ceremonies. His epistle to the king. Books printed. Leland dies.

The new  
serjeants  
sworn.

**A**BOUT the 7th of October, the seven serjeants of the coif, nominated in May last, went unto Westminster-Hall in their gowns and hoods of murrey and russet, and their servants in the same colour. There their charge and oath were given them by the king's judges, and old serjeants. This done, they returned with the judges, and the old serjeants, and learned men of the law, unto Gray's Inn to dinner, together with many of the king's privy council, nobles, and the lord mayor and aldermen. The new serjeants gave to every judge, the old serjeants, and men of the law, rings of gold, every new serjeant giving like rings. After dinner they repaired to Paul's, and so went up the stairs, and round about the choir, and there did their homage; and so came unto the north side of Paul's, and stood upon the steps, until four old serjeants came together and fetched four young, and brought them unto certain pillars, and an oration was there read unto them by the old serjeants: and so down again they went unto Gray's Inn.

Sir Tho.  
Germyn  
died.

Sir Thomas Germyn, Kt. the best housekeeper in the county of Suffolk, died about this time. Part of his state in house-keeping, consisted in his chapel, where prayers and holy offices were daily celebrated, with singing and singing men, as in cathedrals. The county was reckoned to have had a great loss in him. His funerals were pompously performed, with his

standard, penon of arms, coat armour, target, born 1552.  
by heralds, &c. October 21.

Decemb. 16. The Earl of Westmorland and Sir Andrew Dudley were enstalled at Windsor, of the noble order of the garter. Two knights of the garter.

Ditto the 23d. The king removed from Westminster to Greenwich, to keep his Christmas there. The king keeps a great Christmas.  
And began to keep hall; and had a lord of misrule, who ordered the sports and pastimes, for the king's diversion; which were in as great variety, and royal pomp, as scarcely ever had been seen before.

Febru. 9. Between seven and eight of the clock in the evening, the great steeple of Waltham Abbey, in Essex, fell down to the ground, and all the great bells, and the choir, and much of the stately church, demolished with it. Waltham steeple falls.

On the 10th day of the said month, the Lady Mary (who on the 6th came to London to St. John's through Cheapside, attended with lords and ladies, knights and gentlemen, to the number of two hundred) rode through Fleet-street unto the king at Westminster, nobly and numerously accompanied: for they now seemed to look upon her as the rising sun, the king being in a consumption. Among the ladies that now attended her were the two Duchesses of Suffolk and Northumberland, the two Marchionesses of Northampton and Winchester, the Countesses of Bedford, Shrewsbury, Arundel, the Lady Clinton, the Lady Brown, and many more. When she arrived at the outer court, there met her the Dukes of Suffolk and Northumberland, the Marquis of Winchester, the Earls of Bedford, Shrewsbury, Arundel, the Lord Chamberlain, the Lord Admiral, and a great number of knights and gentlemen. And so she was conducted up to the chamber of presence, and there the king met her, and saluted her. This visit seemed to be to see him in his sickness. The Lady Mary visits the king.

On the 24th of Feb. Sir William Sydney was honourably buried at his place at Penzestur, in Kent.

1552.  
The Earl  
of Pem-  
broke's re-  
tinue.

On the 27th ditto, the Earl of Pembroke came riding into London, with three hundred horse; before him an hundred gentlemen with chains of gold; all in blue cloth, plain, with badges on their sleeves, being a dragon. And so to Bernard Castle, which was his place.

Strangwich  
a pirate;

In the month of March the king sent forth several ships, to find out and apprehend one Strangwich, a great pirate; and appointed 460*l.* to be laid out in victualling and furnishing those ships for the service.

p. 373.  
And two  
Killigrews.

I find this Strangwich, and two Killigrews with him, such notable sea rovers, that in the month of February the king sent a letter to the French king, that he would do his endeavour for the apprehension of them; perhaps to vindicate himself from conniving at them for any damage they might do to that king's subjects, as well as to prevent them from doing any more to his own.

A commis-  
sion for  
martial  
law.

Popular disturbances and tumults seemed now to be very frequent, and the common people uneasy under the present juncture; which occasioned, surely, that severe commission which was given out this month of March, to John Earl of Bedford, William Earl of Pembroke, the Lord Darcy, Sir William Petre, Sir John Baker, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Robert Bows, Sir Thomas Wroth, Edward Griffith, John Gosnold, or to any six or more of them: to put in execution all such martial laws, as should be thought by their discretions most necessary to be executed. And instructions were also given them, in nine distinct articles.

The king's  
sales.  
Book of  
Sales.

In this month of March, and the month preceding, the king sold away his lands and lordships in great quantity (besides not a few given to his courtiers) his necessities, no question, so requiring. So that all this money following, came into the Exchequer for so many several purchases (for it would be too long to mention the names of the lands and the purchasers.)



1552.

## IN FEBRUARY.

£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.
2055	19	2	700	2	4
289	6	8	4570	14	0
390	17	0	566	15	4
1343	10	10	396	13	6
1331	18	1	694	2	2
951	2	2	1223	15	0
958	6	8	564	5	6
246	5	0	712	15	4
1988	16	5 <i>ob.</i>	425	19	8
146	13	4	850	0	0
930	14	6	767	8	4

## IN MARCH.

1482	9	3	300	4	8
66	13	4	917	10	5
1606	3	2	933	6	8
1248	17	7 <i>ob.</i>	580	5	6
1477	19	2 <i>ob.</i>	889	15	8
1036	14	10	1718	10	3
1199	15	1 <i>ob.</i>	732	10	11
359	12	0	1340	3	4
568	4	5	613	6	8
389	19	5 <i>ob. q.</i>	870	15	1
386	13	8	744	3	11
346	1	10	646	5	9
246	0	0	1596	7	8
574	0	0	1417	8	6
694	4	0	1305	8	10
1696	11	9	229	3	4

Besides these, were many more purchases made of the king's lands the year ensuing; for the sale of which, there was a commission on purpose, directed to the Bishop of Norwich, Sir John Gates, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Walter Mildmay, and others.

p. 374.

Divers there were now, in this king's reign, that

1552.  
Kneeling  
at the sa-  
crament,  
and the  
habits,  
give of-  
fence.

liked so little of popery, that they thought it highly convenient not to symbolize with that church in any of its usages. And that gave occasion to them to dislike particularly two things, viz. the posture of kneeling at the reception of the communion, and the priestly habits, which were not laid aside by the reformers of this church from papal innovations. The retaining of these gave the more disgust, because it was contrary to the example of many of the foreign reformers, as those of Switzerland and Geneva, whose books and judgments swayed greatly, and were much used here. A Lasco, the superintendent of the foreigners' congregations in London, being a person greatly respected by the king, and the nobility and bishops, as for his noble blood, so for his learning and religion, was put upon writing on this argument to the king; and he composed a treatise in Latin of the Sacrament, which was printed in London, 1552. This book bore this title: "*Brevis et delucida de Sacramentis Ecclesiæ Christi, Tractatio. In qua et Fons ipse et Ratio totius Sacramentariæ nostri Temporis Controversiæ, paucis exponitur, Naturaque ac Vis Sacramentorum compendio et perspicuè explicatur: Per Joannem a Lasco, Baronem Poloniæ, Superintendentem Ecclesiæ Peregrinorum Londini, Anno 1552; in 8vo.*" Together with this book, was bound up a tract, intitled, "*Consensio mutua in re Sacramentaria Ministrorum Tigurinæ Ecclesiæ, et D. Jo. Calvinii, Ministri Genevensis Ecclesiæ. Data Tiguri, Aug. 30, 1549.*" This book the noble author presented to several of the court, his friends, and among the rest, to Sir Anthony Cook: which very book was lately in the possession of a very reverend friend of mine, deceased, and hath these words writ in it by A Lasco's own hand: "*Clarissimo ac doctissimo viro D<sup>no</sup> Cuko, Præceptori Regio fidelissimo Joannes a Lasco, D. D.*" Before it was an Epistle to King Edward; which, to shew what arguments swayed with A Lasco, and others, at this time, for the abolishing all habits and customs used in the papal wor

A Lasco's  
book.

Mr. N.  
Battely.

ship, I shall here set down, and the rather, it being 1552.  
now so rarely to be met with :

JOANNES A LASCO, &c. *to the renowned EDWARD  
the Sixth.*

“ *Recte facit pater, laudemque meretur procudubio, si filiam virginem,*” &c. The English whereof was as followeth: “ Well doth that father, and without doubt deserveth praise, who, having a daughter a virgin, drawn by the guile of panders into some leud and dishonest house, and there trimmed after the whorish guise, doth presently rescue her thence, and bring her home to his own house, before she be utterly spoiled. But the same father, if he be wise, thinketh it not enough for the safety of his daughter, and the honour of his house, that he hath brought her home again, unless he take from her wholly whatsoever he knoweth to be accounted in those houses an whorish attire : neither doth he enquire whence such attire came first, but judgeth it dishonourable to himself, and so unworthy his daughter, and whole family, that any such thing at all, as strumpets have used for dressing in their houses, should appear in his. And he doth not give ear to their persuasions, who bear him in hand, that all things are to be esteemed according to the father’s mind in his own house ; and so think that the father’s approbation can make that honest in his own house, for his daughter and whole family, which, in another house, is most dishonest for any daughters, that regard their own credits. Ascribing so much to the father’s prerogative, that whatsoever he approves, must be of others well liked of, so far as it concerns his own house : for he knows full well, that although all those things, which he hath authorized in his own house, be there well thought of, yet that is not enough, since the honour of his daughter, and his whole family, must not only be cared for within his own house, but also throughout the whole city ; that he may remove all ill suspicions from his family among all his neighbours ; and is heedful that

A Lasco to  
the king,  
concerning  
the habits.

p. 375.

1552.

the panders have not the least occasion left them, of challenging or laying claim to his said daughter, as having something of their whore-house marks upon her.

“ Even so in the church of God, as in a city, magistrates and ministers are in place of parents, having the pure and right administration of the sacraments committed unto them of God, for to be tended and tendered as their own daughter; it is therefore very commendable in these parents of the church, as we may term them, if they rescue the lawful and pure administration of the sacraments from the violence and tyranny of the Romish panders, by taking it into their own care and custody

“ But here they ought to remember, especially they who are called by the Holy Spirit, eminent Ministers of God, and nursing Fathers of his Church, that is, Christian kings and monarchs, that it is not enough for them, thus to have brought this daughter out of the papist stews home, into their own care and keeping, unless they also put off from her all that dressing which they know to be whorish in the stews; that no such thing may be seen with them, which may be accounted whorish, especially in that city where there is great variety of judgments, the over-ruling whereof, by man’s authority is not to be expected, and where there are so many hucksters for the stews remaining.

“ Nor let them hear the delusions of those who suggest, that such kinds of dressing, from whence soever they be taken, may be made good and honest by authority: for well they know, they are not set over the whole church of God, but only one part of it, as a family in a city; and that therefore, though they could bear out such things at home by their authority, yet it is their duty, as they regard public chastity and honesty, to procure the honour of their daughter and family, not only within their own walls, but also without the whole city; not suffering any thing to be seen within their house, which they know to be held, urged, and maintained by the Romish



stews, and their instruments, as their proper whorish stuff. 1552.

“ Last of all, they must be wary, lest any signs or tokens be left upon their daughter, by which she may be questioned again by these panders, as one of theirs. p. 376.

“ Now, if it please your excellent Majesty, you are one of those nursing fathers of the church of God, blessed be his name! therefore, in this high calling, you have by the Lord God this ministry of the sacraments, as a daughter rescued out of the popish brothels, and brought into your own house, that is, into your own domestic care and keeping. Here, therefore, be pleased to set before your eyes the foresaid example of a good father in those things which yet remain to be performed; that is, in providing for the public credit of this your reduced daughter, and so of your whole family, not only in this your flourishing kingdom, but also in the catholic church of Christ, whereof you are a citizen, unto whom a principal part thereof, as an honourable family, is committed in trust.

“ This is that which all the godly throughout the Christian world do expect from your hands; and that the more earnestly, because they know that God hath enriched you with such excellent gifts, and placed you in so high a station, almost above all others, even to this very end, that you might remove from the ministry of the sacraments all these popish trinkets, wherewith it hath been fearfully profaned, and restore unto it again that virgin-like attire, wherewith it was of old adorned by the high King of Kings and Law-giver, Christ the Lord, in his holy institution. So shall your faith and fidelity be famous throughout the Christian world, and the church of England grow more honourable under your government.”

This letter was, to serve the turn of some dissenters, printed again, 1633, in a book, intituled, “ A fresh

1552. Suit against Humane Ceremonies ; or, a Triplication unto D. Burges his Rejoinder for Dr. Morton."

Catechismus brevis. To the former book of the Sacrament, published this year, I add a few more, viz. "Catechismus brevis Christianæ Disciplinæ summam continens, omnibus Ludimagistris, Autoritate Regia, commendatas. Mandato Regis Edwardi Præposito ; in 12<sup>o</sup>." For the printing of which, John Day had a special licence granted him, dated in September."

Articuli Religionis. "Articuli de quibus Synodo Londinensi, Anno Domini 1552, convenerat, Regia Autoritate promulgati. In 12<sup>o</sup>."

Marcus Constantius. A book now also appeared in Latin, with a feigned name, but it was known to be made by Bishop Gardiner, against Archbishop Cranmer's Answer, set forth the last year. This book was printed at Paris, and went under this title: "Confutatio Cavillationum, quibus sacrosanctum Eucharistiæ Sacramentum ab impiis Capernaitis impeti solet. Autore Marco Antonio Constantio Theologo Lovanensi." Which was again learnedly answered by Peter Martyr: of whose book, what the reputation was in those days, we are told by an eminent author, namely, "That in his book was contained, in effect, whatsoever is delivered of the whole matter of the eucharist, as well in scripture, as in the ancient fathers and councils." At the intreaty of friends, the author reduced his book into an *epitome*.

Lavat.  
Hist. Sacramentar.  
In hoc libro fere omnia continentur, &c.

p. 377. The Common Prayer in French. "Le Livre de Prières Communes, de l'Administration des Sacrements et autre Ceremonies en l'Eglise d'Angleterre." This book was our Book of Common Prayer, translated into French ; which was done by Francis Philip, the lord chancellor's servant, as he styled himself, and printed by Tho. Gaultier, the king's printer for the French language, in the year 1553 (that is, reckoning the year to begin in January ; for in December, 1552, a license was granted to this Gaultier, of London, to print in French all such books of the church as should be set forth). This book

was, by the said Francis Philip, dedicated to Thomas Goodrich, Bishop of Ely, lord chancellor : in which dedication he shewed, “ How the said chancellor put him upon this translation, for the use of the isles and lands which spake French. Which, therefore, he did very gladly undertake, and finish as soon as he possibly could; not only to the end that the king’s most royal and Christian ordinance, for the use of this Book of Common Prayer to be used in all his dominions, might obtain its effect, but also that all France might know, that the Christian religion was not wholly abolished in England, as many among them esteemed : for, in reading this book, they should know evidently, that God was here served in spirit and in truth, and that the sacraments were here administered purely and sincerely, according to the word of God; and that he was assured, that having read it, the good and well-disposed sort would say, Blessed be so noble a king, under whom, from day to day, the reformation of religion so increased and flourished.”

In this year also, John Bale printed and set forth a book, intituled, “ An Expostulation or Complaint against the Blasphemies of a Frantic Papist of Hampshire. Printed by John Day.” The papist he wrote against, and for what cause, he declared towards the beginning of his book, viz. “ That on one of the Christmas holidays, to wit, December 29 last past, in the house of a gentleman of his own affinity in the said county, the said papist, being in the full heat of his frenzy, brast out into this unreverend, blasphemous, and contemptuous talk of the king’s majesty, and of his most godly proceedings: ‘ Alas! poor child,’ said he, ‘ unknown it is to him, what acts are made now-a-days; but when he comes once of age, he will see another rule, and hang up an hundred of such heretic knaves’.” Meaning the preachers of those times; for at the same season he had most spitefully railed on one of them, being absent. These words Bale divided into three parts, and answered each at large. The first part touched the king’s high-

Bale's Ex-  
postulation

1552. ness; the second, his honourable council; and the third, the true ministers of God's word.

That which touched the king he made to be, that this man had called the king *a poor child*; "When as," said Bale, "he was abundantly replenished with the most gracious gifts of God; specially, with all kinds of good learning, far above all his progenitors, kings of this imperial region; and when childishness in a king is reproved by the mouth of God, and given many times of him to a people as a curse, plague, and scourge, for their unfaithfulness. 'I shall give 'you children, saith the Lord, to be your princes, and 'babes shall have rule over you.' Esa. 3. That is, ye shall have for your disobedience, men to be your governours that are dissolute, rash, wanton, and careless; yea, men unexpert and unexperienced in princely affairs, and men which will not regard your commonwealth, but follow their own lusts. Wo! be to such a land, saith Solomon, that hath so childish rulers. And all these childish ways be detestable in a king, yet is not the childhood of youth in him to be reproved: for so might King Josias have been reproved, which began his reign in the eighth year of his age.—Then he comes closer to this papist, so blasphemously reporting the noble and worthy King Edward (then in the fifteenth year of his age, and the fifth of his reign), without all honour and reverence. He added, his worthy education in liberal letters and godly virtues, and his natural aptness in retaining of the same, plenteously declared him to be no *poor child*, but a manifest Solomon in princely wisdom. His sober admonitions, and open example of godliness, at that day, shewed him, mindfully to prefer the wealth of the commons, as well ghostly as bodily, above all foreign matters. Mark what his majesty hath done already in religion, in abolishing the most shameful idolatry of antichrist, besides his other acts for public affairs, and ye shall find at this day no Christian prince like to him."

This book the author dedicated to the Duke of



Northumberland, with this title: "To the Right High and Mighty Prince, Johan, Duke of Northumberland, Lord Great Master of the King's most honourable Houshold, and Lord President of his Majesty's most honourable Privy Council." In this epistle he set him forth as a singular favourer and patriot of the true religion; which yet, as it appeared afterwards, influenced him no more than as it served to forward his worldly interest. For thus Bale addressed to him: "Considering in your noble grace the same mighty, fervent, and religious zeal in God's cause, which I have diligently marked in Moses, the servant of God, &c.—This poor expostulation am I, your poor orator, so much the bolder to dedicate to your highness, in that I have always known the same a most mighty, zealous, and ardent supporter, maintainer, and defender of God's lively word.—Jesus Christ, whose invincible verity your grace hath hitherto most fervently favoured." 1552.

The same author, John Bale, set forth, this year, his "Vocation to the Bishopric of Ossory, in Ireland, and his Persecution in the same, and his final Deliverance." Vocation of John Bale.

Here I shall subjoin a privilege granted to William Seres, stationer, to print all books of private prayers, called Primers, as should be agreeable to the Book of Common Prayer, established by parliament; and that none else printed the same, upon pain of forfeiture thereof. Provided, that before the said Seres, and his assigns, did begin to print the same, he should present a copy thereof, to be allowed by the lords of the privy council, or by the lord chancellor for the time being, or by the king's four ordinary chaplains, or two of them. And when the same was, or should be, from time to time printed, that by the said lords, and others of the privy council, or by the lord chancellor, or with the advice of the wardens of the occupation, the reasonable price thereof to be set, as well in the leaves, as

Order for printing the Primer.

1552. being bound in paste or board: in like manner as was expressed in the end of the Book of Common Prayer. This privilege was dated March the 4th.

p. 379.  
Le and  
dies mad.

I cannot here omit the mention of the death of the most learned antiquarian, John Leland, which happened in April, this year, after he had been a year and upwards distracted, to the deplorable frustration of his noble designs of illustrating the history of this antient nation. Being bereft of his wits, he became the king's care, who committed the keeping of him either to his father or uncle, I suppose (for he was one of the same name) John Leyland, or Leland, senior, together with all his lands, and rents, and profits whatsoever, in as ample manner as John the younger, being in his right mind, enjoyed them, for the better sustentation of him. This grant was in the month of March, 1550. This Leland, who had the care of this poor gentleman, lived, I suppose, in Paternoster Row, which belonged to the parish of St. Michael the Quern, in which church, not much above a year after, he was buried.

His school-  
master and  
schoolfel-  
lows.

He being a Londoner born, had his education under Lilly, the famous grammarian, and first master of the free school near St. Paul's. He had divers contemporaries, which, by their learning and advancement afterwards, added lustre both to the school, where all of them were bred, and to the city, where some of them were born; as namely, Sir William Paget, afterwards secretary of state, and made Lord Paget, of Beau Desert, and honoured with the garter; to whom Leland addressing a copy of verses, speaks thus of Lilly, their common instructor:

Notior ille tibi, notior ille mihi:

And makes mention of something which he (Paget) wrote in vindication of their master, against one Gonel, a learned man. Another of his schoolfellows was Sir Edward North, after also Lord North, and a privy counsellor, a citizen born; to him Leland

dedicated some verses, mentioning therein their learning together : 1552

*Imbibimus læti litterulàsque simul.*

Sir Anthony Denny, gentleman of the privy chamber to King Henry, and a great favourer of the professors of the gospel, and as great a scholar, was also Leland's mate in this learned school. Of whose wittiness and ingenuity there, he speaks in a piece of his poetry, written to him. Sir Thomas Wriothesly, afterwards Lord Wriothesly, and lord chancellor of England, was also a Londoner born, and so was his father, and a great friend of our Leland, and was probably of the same school with him, being a man brought up in letters ; in honour of whom did Leland also exercise his curious vein of poetry.

From this nursery of St. Paul's he was transplanted to the university of Cambridge, where, in learned studies, and converse with ingenious men, he took great delight, and made great improvements.

*Applausit studiis granta beata meis.*

But afterwards, it seems, he studied at Oxford, and was there preferred, and made fellow of All Souls. His patrons and friends, besides those mentioned before, were Archbishop Cranmer, Sir Brian Tuke, Sir John Mason, Dr. Legh, Dr. Cox, Dr. Haddon ; all men of fame in their days.

## CHAP. XVII.

p. 380.

Commissioners from France. Corruptions at Court. Paget, and Beaumont, and the Earl of Arundel, their submissions. The university of Rostock to the king. The king's diligence, and good example. Free schools by him founded.

THIS year came commissioners from France, <sup>The French vapour.</sup> Monsieur Aubrey, and Monsieur Du Val ; the one lieutenant civil of Paris, the other an advocate unto the French king ; an agent of the king's, whose name

1552. was Barnaby, met with them at London. They came about some matters of restitution to some English merchants, for ships and goods taken, pretending they belonged to the Spaniard, because they were not carried in English bottoms. They told Barnaby, in a vapouring sort (which that nation was then much addicted to) how little harm England in their wars was like to do them; and that in the last war, wherein King Henry, together with the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, invaded them, and took Bologne, we did but spend all our riches, and destroyed a great number of subjects, and left all our money in Flanders and Artois, and could not now shew one town we had taken.

The way to  
distress  
France,  
and benefit  
England.

Shipping.

Upon this occasion Barnaby, in a letter to Sir William Cecyl, the secretary, related, by his own long experience of that country (having made twenty-eight voyages thither, employed by King Henry and Crumwel) how we might effectually distress that country; namely, by this one thing, increasing mariners in England; whereas, for want of ships and shipmen, our commodities of our own growth were fetched away from us, for very small prices, by French vessels, to their exceeding enriching. He had seen going out of Rye, at one tide, 37 hoys, laden with wood and timber, and never an English mariner among them. He had heard great complaints for want of English ships, to lade goods for Spain, and other places; and none to be had. Great benefit also might be made of our fishing, if we had ships; but especially of our Newcastle coals: this last the French could not live without. It maintained those in France that wrought in steel, and metals, and wire, and made guns, and likewise their goldsmiths. The French custom was, that after their fishing was done, three or fourscore ships of Normandy and Britain were sent for coals; the gain whereof was prodigious. Coals were bought at Newcastle for two shillings and two pence a chaldron, and sold again in France for thirteen nobles.



These things considered, Barnaby's advice was, that the king of England should take coals into his own hand (as the French king had taken salt) and bring them into Kent, and there make a staple of them; and that no goods whatsoever should be carried out of England, but in English bottoms. By this means an infinite number of mariners would be set at work, and it would prove a great strength to the realm; and hereby England, in respect of trade and seamen, might no longer be so inferior to France, which did at that present so much outdo it. For in these times, there would sometimes come out, at one tide, from Diep, five hundred boats, and more, and in every boat ten or twelve men; whereby the maritime towns maintained themselves, their towns and ports, by fishing, and grew very rich by trade. Whereas in England, Sandwich, Dover, Hyde, Hastings, Winchelsea, were decayed exceedingly for maintenance, and hardly any mariner in those ports; and Barnaby would undertake to set six or 7000 mariners at work, in carrying coals only. But I betake the reader to Barnaby's letter, where he may read this, and other things worth noting, of the state of the nation, more at large.

1552  
A project  
for the  
king to  
take coals  
into his  
own hands.

p. 381.

E.

The court was very corrupt, and extremely covetous, especially towards the declining of the king's reign: raking continually from the king (who was fain to borrow) for the enriching of themselves; and making preys also one of another. The Lord Paget, chancellor of the dutchy; and Beaumont, master of the Rolls; and Whaley, receiver of Yorkshire; were, in the month of May, discovered to have grossly wronged the king. Paget had sold away lands, and great timber woods, and had taken great fines of the king's lands, to his particular profit and advantage, never turning any of it to the king's use; he made leases in reversion for more than 21 years. All this he confessed before the privy council, and surrendered his office (which was afterwards conferred upon Sir John Gates) and submitted himself to what fines

The corruption of the court.

King Edward's Journal, p. 55.

1552. should be laid upon him. Beaumont bought lands with the king's money, lent the king's money, and kept it from the king, to the value of 9000*l.* and above, and 11,000*l.* obligations; and being judge in a cause in chancery, between the Duke of Suffolk and the Lady Powis, he took her title, and went about to get it into his hands, paying a sum of money, and letting her have a farm of a manor of his; and caused a false indenture to be made, with the old duke's counterfeit hand to it (by which pretended indenture the duke gave these lands to the Lady Powis) and went about to make twelve men perjured; and, lastly, had concealed the felony of his man, to the sum of 200*l.* All this he confessed, and for these things surrendered all his offices, lands, and goods, to the king, and gave the king an obligation under his hand and seal, for his debt of 20,861*l.* and upwards. Whaley lent the king's money upon gain; he paid one year's revenue with the arrearages of the last; he bought the king's land for himself with the king's own money; in his accounts he made many false suggestions: at the time of the fall of money, he borrowed divers sums of money, and had allowance for it after, by which he gained 500*l.* at one crying down; the whole sum being 2000*l.* and above. All this he confessed, surrendered his office, and submitted to fines.

See the  
Repository.  
F.

Paget and  
Beaumont,  
for cor-  
ruption,  
brought  
into the  
Star-cham-  
ber.

The Lord Paget and Beaumont, June 16, were brought into the Star-chamber. There the former declared his submission by word of mouth, and delivered it in writing; he was fined 6000*l.* But Beaumont had denied his former confession before the council: but now, being called before the council, he acknowledged a fine of his lands, and signed an obligation and surrender of all his goods; and, on the 20th day, being brought again to the Star-chamber, he confessed all.

p. 382.

When the council had discovered all this corruption, on the 18th of June, from Greenwich, they wrote the news of it to the Duke of Northumberland, Earls

of Huntingdon and Pembroke, and Secretary Cecyl, who were on a journey, going down to the borders of Scotland, upon many disorders there, and negligent looking to the forts, the duke being lord warden of the Marches. Beaumont had surrendered his goods and lands to the king: but the king was not to be the better for them, some of them being presently begged by the Duke of Northumberland and Earl of Pembroke, for the Earl of Huntingdon; and Huntingdon another time will do the like courtesy for them, if need be. That which they asked for this earl was, the custody of Gracedieu, the parsonage of Dunington, and the manor of Throuston and Swanington, parcel of the said Beaumont's possessions, with all his goods and chattels in and upon the said house and lands. And when order should be taken for the delivery of any of the lands of the Lord Paget, in satisfaction of part of his fine, they prayed the council, that the Earl of Huntingdon, and the lord chamberlain, might not be forgotten: the one to have the custody of his house at Drayton, and the other of that at London; and as these things before mentioned came under the keeping of Huntingdon, so the next year he became the proprietor of them. For in June, 1553, the king granted him the scite, circuit, and precinct, and also the manor of Gracedieu, in Leicestershire, with divers other lands, to the yearly value of 158*l.* 8*s.* 5*d.*

1552.  
They sur-  
render  
their goods  
and lands.

See this  
letter in  
the Repo-  
sitory.  
G.

The conclusion with the Lord Paget, after he was thus censured, and had also made his submission, for being privy to the late protector's practice against Northumberland, was in December following, when he had a general pardon of all offences and transgressions, and other negligences, except debts due to his majesty in the Court of Exchequer, the Augmentation, the Wards, and the First-fruits and Tenths; and an indenture was made between the king's majesty and the Lord Paget, for the assurance unto his majesty of 100*l.* by year, and for the payment also of 2000*l.* that is to say, 1000*l.* at Christmas next, and

The con-  
clusion  
with Lord  
Paget.

1552. the other at Christmas following. Yet, not long after, he came into some favour at court. For in February he had a discharge for the payment of the 2000*l.* imposed on him as a fine; and, the month ensuing, he had a special grant for his coat of arms, which before was taken away from him, upon pretence that it was given him by a king of arms that could not give it; but now the same coat was confirmed to him by patent, granted to him by the name of William Lord Paget, of Beaudesert, and his posterity for ever.

The Earl  
of Arundel  
in prison.

The third day of this month of December (that same day twelvemonth the Duke of Somerset was tried and condemned) did the Earl of Arundel appear before the king, and make his humble submission by word of mouth. He had been lord chamberlain, and of the privy council, but upon some occasion put out of both places. Whereat he grew malecontent, and was dealt with to come into the plot of the Duke of Somerset, against certain of the great nobles that bore the sway: yet he would not meddle, but concealed it, and chose to be a looker-on, thinking to have his malice executed by other hands; but it cost him dear. For October 20, 1551, Crane, one of them in this plot, did confess, that the earl knew of the matter, about inviting those nobles to the Lord Paget's house to a banquet, and then to have cut off their heads; and that Stanhope was the messenger that went to the earl. Upon this, November 8, the earl, with Stoadly and S. Alban, his men, were committed to prison; and that because Crane did disclose more and more of him; and having been a prisoner above a twelvemonth, December 3, he was fain to make a submission, and submit to a fine. His submission was in these words, as they are taken out of the Council Book, and there said to be by order of council entered into the said book.

p. 383.

His sub-  
mission.  
Council  
Book.

“ It may please your most excellent majesty to understand, that whereas I, Henry Earl of Arundel, now prisoner in the Tower, have been charged to be



one of the confederates and conspirators with Edward, late Duke of Somerset, lately attainted, and with others, for the apprehension and imprisonment of divers noblemen, then and yet being of your majesty's privy council: and forasmuch as upon my examination, taken during the time of my imprisonment in the Tower of London, before John Duke of Northumberland, John Earl of Bedford, William Lord Marquis of Northampton, William Earl of Pembroke, and Sir Philip Hoby, Knt. and otherwise, it doth appear that I, the said Henry, Earl of Arundel, was privy, and of knowledge of the said dangerous conspiracy practised by the said duke and others, to the peril of the state of this your realm: and forasmuch also as I, the said Earl of Arundel, did not, according to my most bounden duty, reveal so much as I did know of the said duke's intents to your highness, or to some others of your majesty's privy council, but did conceal and keep the same secret; whereby I do confess and acknowledge, that I have not only worthily deserved this mine imprisonment, but also that the same my said offence and concealment should be dangerous unto me without your majesty's clemency: for the mitigating therefore of the same, I do most humbly acknowledge by this my submission, my said offence, and do crave and desire your most gracious pardon for the same: and further, do submit myself for the premisses to the most merciful order of your highness, and of your most honourable council."

After this submission, the Earl of Arundel appeared the same day before the council: where the lords informed him, that he was fined 6000 marks, to be paid in six years, at 1000 marks a year. And he was bound in a bond of 10,000 marks to pay the said fine: and was set at liberty, being admonished by the lords to behave himself according to the duty of a nobleman, and to be indeed what he professed in words. And fine.

1552. But the earl found favour afterwards. For May 10th a grant was made him, that he should pay 322*l.* 12*s.* 2*d.* at the Augmentation, in form following, viz. at Easter next, 221*l.* 12*s.* 2*d.* And after, yearly at the same feast, 333*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* until the whole sum were satisfied and paid. And July 2nd following (that is, but four days before the king's death, being then also, as it appears, of the privy council) a pardon and discharge was sealed to him for 10,000 marks, acknowledged by him to owe it to the king's majesty by recognizance, upon certain considerations in the same expressed. This, we may conclude, was Northumberland's doing, his policy being, to gain as many noblemen his friends as he could, in the great intrigue he was then upon, to bring the crown into his family. But Arundel deceived him.

p. 384.

The uni-  
versity of  
Rostock to  
the king.

This nation was now become renowned abroad for its countenance to true religion and good learning, and King Edward for a right nursing father to both. While every where in Germany, and all other countries, the gospel and learning were oppressed and discouraged, England was the common asylum for all good and learned men to fly to. And hither they came daily, both for shelter and for subsistence. Among the rest, I find one Wolfgang Perister, a Prussian, of the university of Rostock, who, by a letter from the rector and university, was recommended this year to the king. "They thanked God, who had yielded a quiet harbour in the king's countries, for the church and good studies. And when in all other kingdoms, the public ministers of the church, and the studies of good learning, were either wholly destroyed or sadly wasted, by the cruelty of popes, the tumults of wars, and the differences of opinions, it was God's great mercy to afford a quiet seat in the king's dominions, for the godly constituted churches and schools: which were so cherished by the wisdom, piety, munificence, and authority of the king's majesty, that in these orna-

ments the kingdom of England exceeded all the kingdoms of the world beside." This address to the king may be read in the Repository. 1552.

H.

And indeed good King Edward, among his many other princely qualities, was a true patron of learning, as loving and promoting it both in himself and others, from his youngest days. It was observed of him, how exceeding diligent he was, usually at his book. He would sequester himself from all companies, into some chamber or gallery, to learn without book his lessons, with great alacrity and cheerfulness. If he spent more time in play and pastime than he thought was convenient, he would find fault with himself, and say, *We forget ourselves* (as Mr. Cheke reported of him) *that should not lose substantia pro accidente*. He used to pen letters, both in English and Latin, as part of his exercises. The subject whereof generally was, to excite other young nobles, his acquaintance, to follow their studies, with very pretty arguments: as, what an ornament learning was, both to prince and people: what glory subjects might take in a learned prince; and what joy a prince might take in learned subjects, and the like. The king's diligence in his studies, Foxii MS.

There was one Mr. Heron in these days, a schoolmaster of ingenious youth; one of whose scholars had a father that took occasion, from the example of the king, to excite his son the more to follow his studies; writing to him sometimes in English, and sometimes in Latin, these and such like passages of the king's diligence, and admonished him and his schoolfellows, to follow the godly example of so virtuous a prince: adding, "That if they (I do but transcribe) by his worth, and example, and precedent, wold apply their study and learning, it wold most happily come to pas, that the lerned king shold have moch felicity in his lerned subjects, and they no les to glory in so lerned and prudent a prince, with such like persuasions:" which letters of commendations of the said king being uttered by chance unto the said schoolmaster, and having partly re- The notable influence of the king's example upon certain scholars.

1552. ceived letters thereof from the father of the said scholar, he incontinently caused them that were written in English to be turned into Latin by his  
 p. 385. scholars, and such as were written in Latin to be englished: using the same not only as lessons for his scholars, but also as matter of animating and provoking unto the better and more diligent applying of their learning. Upon this occasion, the said Mr. Heron, as well by his letters, as by his private talk, yielded unto the father of the said scholar right hearty thanks for his said letters, directed unto him and his son, touching the king's diligence; declaring plainly, that, in his opinion, the virtuous example of that worthy and good young king, wrought more in the heads of his unwilling scholars, for their furtherance unto good literature, than all his travail among them in one year past before.

Schools  
 founded by  
 K. Edward.  
 Cott. Libr.  
 Jul. B. 9.

How King Edward's good heart stood affected to the forwarding both of learning, and sound religion too, appeared by appointing a school in his court for his henchmen, that is, his majesty's pages, and other youth attending on him: and for encouragement of the schoolmaster, he assigned him a salary for life. For such a patent I have seen granted to Clement Adams, M.A. authorizing him to be schoolmaster to the king's majesty's henchmen, with the fee of ten pounds by the year for life, dated May 3, anno 6<sup>o</sup> Edw. Reg. But especially this appeared by his founding so many schools in the nation; more, by a great many, than any of his predecessors had done. For, to compute only from the time that Bishop Goodrick had the great seal, in little more than sixteen months, he founded at least sixteen free schools.

For besides the schools at Bury in Suffolk, at Spillesby in Lincolnshire, at Chelmesford in Essex, at Sedberg in Yorkshire, at Louth in Lincolnshire, and at East Retford in Nottinghamshire, with others founded by him in the years 1550 and 1551; these following owned the king for their founder, and were



erected from December, anno 1551, being commonly called King Edward the Sixth his Free Grammar-Schools; viz. Brymingham in Warwickshire, Shrewsbury, Morpeth in Northumberland, Macclesfield in Cheshire, Nonne Eaton in Warwickshire, Stourbridge in Worcestershire, Bath, Bedford, Guilford in Surrey, Grantham in Lincolnshire, St. Alban's in Hertfordshire, Tunbridge, Southampton, Thorn, in Yorkshire, Gyggeswic in Craven, and Stratford upon Avon. These schools had governors appointed over them, a master and usher, and endowed commonly with 20, 30, or 40*l.* per annum. And indeed for the most part, the endowments were out of tithes formerly belonging to religious houses, or out of chantry lands given to the king in the first of his reign, according to the intent of the parliament therein: which was to convert them from superstitious uses unto more godly; as, in erecting grammar-schools for the education of youth in virtue and godliness; for further augmenting the universities, and better provision for the poor. And the good king was so honest and just to lay them out, in a considerable measure, for these pious ends. See the foundations of these schools distinctly specified in the Repository, from an original.

1552.

i.

## CHAP. XVIII.

p. 386.

Popery in Corpus Christi College, Oxon. Dr. Heins dies. Immanuel Tremellius preferred. Bishop Ponet's book. Knox at Newcastle. Lady Anne of Cleves. Day, late bishop, his judgment about altars. Commissions. Sir William Bowyer's last will. Ordinations of ministers. Places and offices bestowed.

**L**ET me be allowed to gather up a few more passages, that may deserve to be related, happening within this sixth year of the king.

Dr. Morwin, president of Corpus Christi College, Oxon, and Welsh and Allen, fellows of the same

1552.  
The council commits  
to the Fleet  
some of  
Corpus  
Christi  
Coll. Oxon.  
Council  
Book.

college, were May ult. summoned to appear before the council. June 5th, they were ordered to appear the Sunday following. June 15th, they were committed to the Fleet. Their fault was, for using upon Corpus Christi day other service than was appointed by the Book of Service. And a letter was sent to the college, to appoint Jewel to govern the college during the imprisonment of the president. July 17th, the warden of the Fleet was ordered to release the president of Corpus Christi, upon his being bound in a bond of 200*l.* to appear next term before the council. November 29th, Allen, upon his conforming to the king's orders, was restored to his fellowship.

Dr. Heins  
dies.

In October departed an eminent man of the church, Simon Heins, D.D. Dean of Exeter, and prebendary of Westminster, being one of the first company of prebendaries planted there by King Henry, upon the new foundation thereof, as a reward for the services he did in embassies he was employed about by the king. He was an antient favourer of the gospel, even from the time he lived in Queen's College in Cambridge. He was one of the compilers of the English Liturgy under King Edward. And was succeeded in his prebend by Andrew Pern, D.D. the king's chaplain; and in his deanry by James Haddon, a learned and good man. The said Heins was true to the interest of religion, and endured trouble for the sake of it, under King Henry. Suthray, treasurer of the church of Exeter, and Dr. Brewrwood, chancellor, accused him, their dean, to the council, for preaching against holy bread and holy water, and that he should say in one of his sermons, that *marriage and hanging were destiny*. Whence they would have gathered treason against him, because of the king's marriage, as though he had an eye to that. But however, upon this accusation he was sent to the Fleet with Sir Philip Hoby, accused by Bishop Gardiner. Heins had also a prebend in the church of Windsor, where, about the

year 1541 or 1542, he, with Sir Philip Hoby and his wife, Sir Thomas Chardin, Mr. Edmund Harman, Mr. Thomas Welden, and others, were by Dr. London, Dean of Wallingford, a busy persecutor, and some others, combining together, put into a paper of complaints, which was presented to Bishop Gardiner, the king's great privy counsellor (in which plot himself privily was) as aiders and maintainers of one Anthony Persons, a good preacher in Windsor, who was about that time burnt. Heins was moreover accused as a common receiver of suspected persons. 1552.  
p. 387.

With the mention of Heins, I join another confessor of the same judgment, and of the same university, though of another country, viz. Immanuel Tremellius, an Italian by birth, escaping hither out of Germany for his religion; a man he was of great learning, and especially in Hebrew, harboured sometime by Archbishop Cranmer: and was appointed by the king to be the reader of Hebrew in Cambridge, with a salary. He had also a prebend of Carlisle, void by the death of William Pirrie, conferred on him: which the Bishop of Ely, lord chancellor, was very instrumental to his obtaining: for he had begged this prebend of the king for Dr. Bellasis. But he dying, the chancellor in September, being then at Ely, wrote a letter to Secretary Cecyl, that he would procure that canonry for Immanuel, of the king: writing thus:

“FORASMUCH as Immanuel, the Hebrew reader in Cambridge, taketh great pains, having little to take unto, I thought it well bestowed, if he might obtain it. And the rather, forasmuch as I understand by one Anthony, a French man, who is in house with the said Immanuel, that you yourself motioned the matter. Wherefore, if it shall stand with your pleasure to help him to it, I shall be very well contented, and glad thereof; and ye in so doing, shall deserve thanks at the university's hand, and have him your continual orator for the same.

Immanuel Tremellius hath a prebend of Carlisle.

The Bishop of Ely to Cecyl in his behalf.

1552. As knoweth Jesus, who have you in his keeping.  
From Ely, this 5th of September.

Your assured loving friend,

T. ELY, Canc."

His patent was dated Octob. 24, with a clause to be non-resident, as long as he read the said Hebrew lecture, with letters, or a writ for his induction.

Ponet's  
Book for  
the mar-  
riage of  
priests.

p. 388.

About this time came forth a learned book, wrote by Dr. Ponet, or Poynet, now Bishop of Winchester, for the lawfulness of priests' marriage; which, in the year 1554, Dr. Martyn, the civilian, made an answer, such as it was, to: dedicating his book (the better to ingratiate himself) to Queen Mary. Dr. Taylor, lately made Bishop of Lincoln, not long after the edition of this book of Poynet's, preaching at St. Paul's Cross, took notice of it, with high commendations, and words of magnifying given unto it, as the said Martyn in his answer took notice; "As if, said he, it had been sent down from heaven by revelation, or had proceeded out of the very bosom of the Holy Ghost." Taylor then said, "That therein was contained a sufficient doctrine for priests marriages, and learning enough to convince all gainsayers." In this book, if you will take Martyn's word, Poynet hath this expression, to shew the impossibility of living chaste: "Neither fasting nor watching, nor any such like, is more able to strait their desire, life and health being preserved, than abating of moisture and earth about the root of a tree, so ye kill him not, is able to strait the same tree from bringing forth of leaves and blossoms in the spring-time of the year." And the foresaid Bishop Taylor, in that sermon at Paul's Cross, is said by Martyn to have alleged this passage out of Poynet's book, concerning the necessity for bishops and priests to marry, by St. Paul's doctrine to Timothy; "St. Paul saith to Timothy and Tite, a bishop or priest must be the husband of one wife. Paul doth not say, it is enough for him, if he hath had a wife; but he



saith in the present time, *Siquis EST sine crimine, unius uxoris vir, et oportet ipsum ESSE irreprehensibilem.* He must *esse*, BE the husband of one wife. Neither find I fault with the doctors, which change BE into HATH BEEN, but such bishops and priests as neither BE, nor HAVE BEEN married, nor will marry to this day, must find some other exposition for this text of S. Paul, or else cannot I see, how they can excuse themselves, but that they shall be found guilty by this description and rule of a blameless bishop.”

1552.

In confutation of this book, Dr. Martyn undertook to answer three points. 1. Poynet's false expounding of the holy scriptures, touching priests' marriage. 2. His untrue interpretation of God's word, for the defence of married monks, nuns, and friars. 3. His falsely reporting the canons of the apostles, untruly alleging sundry chronicles and histories, and most dishonestly slandering old writings, and the decrees of holy fathers. But Dr. Martyn was not Poynet's match, who sufficiently vindicated himself, soon after Martyn had set forth his book. And Archbishop Parker, under Queen Elizabeth, published a very learned manuscript, wrote in Queen Mary's reign, in answer likewise to Martyn; which was Poynet's. To which that archbishop himself made very large and excellent additions; which are taken notice of by me elsewhere.

Answered  
by Martin.Life of  
Archbp.  
Parker.

The learned knight, Sir John Cheke, printed this year his translation of Chrysostom's Homily, *Brethren, I would not have you ignorant*, &c. Printed by Tho. Berthelet. This knight also set forth a translation of the New Testament in 4to.

Cheke sets  
forth trans-  
lations.

John Knox, the earnest preacher, and one of the king's itineraries, was now in the North; and on Christmas-day he preached at Newcastle-upon-Tyne. There he spake against the obstinacy of the papists, and affirmed, “That whosoever in his heart was enemy to Christ's gospel and doctrine, which then was preached within the realm, was enemy also to God, and secret

Knox  
preaches  
at New-  
castle.

1552. traitor to the crown and commonwealth of England : and that, as such, thirsted after nothing more than the king's death, which their iniquities would procure, he said, so they regarded not who should reign over them, so that their idolatry might be erected again." This, it seems, provoked many of his auditors extremely ; insomuch that they began to raise trouble against him, and accused him to the magistrate ; as appears by his " Admonition to the Professors of God's Truth in England," printed in 1554. " How these my words at that time pleased men, the crimes and actions intended against me, did declare." But then, Queen Mary being on the throne, and Philip of Spain made her husband, he appealed to those expressions of his, reckoning it at that time as a thing commonly owned, that the people had made a very bad choice, when they took for that queen a Spanish husband to reign over them. " Let my very enemies now say in their conscience, if those my words are not proved true."
- p. 389.

The king exchanges lands with the Lady Anne of Cleves.

The Lady Anne of Cleves, once King Henry's wife, but divorced, was still alive, living in England upon her dowry, and, as it seems, in good reputation. She had lands in Bisham, which were those, I suppose, formerly belonging to the monastery there ; and at Blechingley, where she had a house, and sometimes dwelt. She seemed to be a lady of good behaviour, and of an obliging carriage ; bearing a very friendly correspondence with the Lady Mary, as well as with the other ladies of the court. She spoke, or at least writ, English very well, as appears by her letter under-written ; which she writ upon certain business happening between the Lady Mary and her, occasioned by a change of lands the king made this year, both with her and with his sister. The lands which the Lady Anne parted with to him, were those of Bisham ; for which the king granted her Westrop, in Suffolk, with the appendages ; for the getting of which confirmed to her, she was fain to wait a great while. Of the Lady Mary likewise, this year the

king desired to have in exchange her manors of St. Osyth's, Claxton Magna and Parva, and Willeigh, all in Essex. The Lady Mary desired of the king (in recompence for this change, I suppose) those lands in Suffolk which he had given before to Lady Anne. This occasioned the stop of the great seal, which, after long expectation, was going to pass for the Lady Anne: whereupon she wrote this civil letter to the Lady Mary, which I have transcribed from the original of her own hand. 1552.

*To my Lady MARY's Grace.*

*" Madam,*

" After my most harty commendations unto your grace, being very desirous to hear of your prosperous health; wherein I much do rejoyce. It may please you to be advertised, that it hath pleased the king's majesty to have in exchange my manor and lands of Bysham, in the county of Berkshire, granting me, in recompence, the house of Westrop, in Suffolk, with the two parks, and certain manors thereunto adjoining. Notwithstanding, if it had been his highness pleasure, I was well contented to have continued without exchange. For which graunt, for mine own assurance in that behalf, I have travailed, to my great cost and charge, almost this twelve months: and it hath passed the king's majesty's bill signed, and the privy seal, being now, as I am informed, stayed at the great seal, for that you, Madam, be minded to have the same, not knowing, as I suppose, of the said graunt. I have also received at this Michaelmas last past, part of the rent of the foresaid manors. Considering the premisses, and for the amity which hath always been betwixt us, of the which I most earnestly desire the continuance, that it may please you therefore to ascertain me by your letters, or otherwise, as it shall stand with your pleasure. And thus, good madam, I commit you unto the ever-living God, to have you

She writes  
to the Lady  
Mary.  
MSS. G. P.  
Arm.

1552. in merciful keeping. From my house of Blychenley,  
the viii. day of January, A°. DV<sup>o</sup> LIII.

Your assured lovyng friend,  
to her little power to command,

ANNA,  
the dowghter of  
CLEVES."

The lands  
granted  
her.

In the month of August before, I find the king gave this lady, in consideration of the surrender of Bisham, the manors of Brokeford and Thwait, in Suffolk, with divers other lands (in which, I suppose, the aforesaid Westrop is comprised) amounting to the yearly value of 67*l.* 17*s.* 10  $\frac{1}{2}$  *d.*

Dr. Day  
explains  
his judg-  
ment about  
the altar.

Dr. Day, late Bishop of Chichester, had been harboured now about half a year with the Bishop of Ely, lord chancellor, but under restraint. There Cecyl, the secretary, being one day entered into discourse with him about the same argument, which, about two years before, was the cause of his imprisonment and deprivation, viz. for disobeying an order of the king and council, for taking altars out of the churches, and placing tables in their room, for the use of the holy communion. Day now, in his converse with the secretary, shewed himself very moderate in that behalf, when, as it seems, he intreated him to stand his friend for the obtaining of his liberty; whereat the secretary, who had favourably reported of him at court, willed him soon after, to write the communication that they had together. Day, therefore, Jan. 10, wrote him a letter to this purport, "That to treat of that argument could be no less unpleasant and dangerous unto him, than it would be to a merchant to sail again in those seas wherein he had suffered shipwreck before; yet he had gone about to accomplish the secretary's will and pleasure, and had devised with himself how and what he should write of that matter: but he professed, in good truth, he could not tell what he should write therein, otherwise



than he had answered unto the lords of the council, before he was committed to prison, and afterward to the commissioners, at the time of his deprivation, viz. that he sticked not at the altar, either at the usual form of the altar, or of the situation thereof, or of the matter, stone, or wood, whereof the altar was made. And that he then took, as he did at present, those things to be indifferent, and to be ordered by them that had authority. But that the commandment which was given him, to take down all altars within his diocese, and in the lieu of them to set up a table, implying in itself, as he took it, a plain abolishment of the altar, both the name and the thing, from the use and ministration of the holy communion, he could not with his conscience then execute, as he answered the lords of the council then, and afterwards to the king's commissioners: and what he should now answer further he could not tell." But herein Day seemed not fairly to relate the matter: for the commissioners, finding him so much to insist upon retaining the name of altar, because he found it used in the old doctors, and, as he pretended, in the scripture too, told him, that touching the naming of the holy table an altar, it was indifferent, and left it so to him. He added, "That if the secretary and Sir John Cheke would, in consideration of the loss of his living, and two years imprisonment, obtain for him the liberty of a subject, if he should hereafter abuse it, he would not desire to live; and he would pray for the king's most excellent majesty, and his most honourable council, and them his deliverers. But that if his liberty must be bought with a new conflict, and hazard of his conscience, he thought it better to want it, than to purchase so poor a commodity at so great a price."

1552.

p. 391.

The king's debts pressing him, many commissions were this year, one upon the neck of another, sent forth, for the remedying thereof; the council hoping thereby to raise great sums of money: whereby, no question, great numbers of people were sufficiently vexed, to the discontent and disturbance of the inno-

Various  
commissions  
for  
raising of  
monies.

1552. cent, as well as the guilty. 1. One commission in March last was issued to certain persons, for the surveying of the state of all the king's courts erected for the custody of the king's lands, and for the answering of his rents and revenues. 2. Another commission came forth in June, for the sale of chantry lands. 3. And in the same month were divers other commissions and instructions to peculiar persons in every shire, to view and survey the bells, plate, jewels, vestments, or ornaments belonging to every church; and to seize into their hands, to the king's use, such of the said goods as had been, at any time before the said survey, embezzled. 4. Another commission was directed to Clarencieux, the king at arms, to visit his province, that is, from the River Trent southward, that whosoever had taken into their cognizance, or arms, standards, or banners, any bearing contrary to the usage of the realm, knowledge thereof should be given to the king and council: I suppose, to get fines that way also. 5. Another commission was issued out in December, to the Duke of Northumberland, and several other noblemen and knights, to examine all the treasurers, receivers, and officers whatsoever, of the Exchequer, of the Court of Augmentations, of the King's Chamber, of the First-fruits, of the Wards, of the Duchy of Lancaster, of the Town and Marches of Calais, of the Town and Garrison of Berwick; and all other treasurers, which had been formerly, or were at present, from the 24th year of King Henry VIII. to that time (that is from the year 1532 to the year 1552, twenty years :) and also all paymasters, surveyors, mustermasters, purveyors, victuallers, and the like, that had received of the king, or his father, any sums of money to be employed in the wars, buildings, fortifications, or other affairs. And if any should be found indebted to the king, to proceed against them for the due satisfaction thereof. 6. Another commission came forth the same month, to see how the king was satisfied as to lead, bell-metal, plate, jewels, ornaments, stock, &c. coming to him

from divers monasteries, priories, colleges, and chantries, or by attainder of divers persons, or by divers forfeits of jewels, silver bullion, plate, gold, and silver. 7. Yet another commission there was in January, to examine by record of Chancery, or other ways, what sums of money were due to the king at any time, for sale of lands, since the 4th of February, 27th Henry VIII. (the year wherein the lesser monasteries were dissolved), and how the same was answered. 8. Another yet came forth the same month, for the collection of church-stuff, plate, jewels, ornaments, &c. 9. In the month of February, we hear of another commission for many, or all counties in England, to survey all manner of church goods. 10. And lastly, in March, when all this scraping would not get money enough for the king's necessities, came forth a commission to sell, for ready money, as much of the king's manors and lands as should come to the value of 1000*l.* per annum. And there were other commissions of the same import, for sales, before this; and yet I find, that in February, before that commission was sealed, many considerable things were sold away from the crown: as, the manor of Keverdly, in Lancashire, and other lands; the manor of Bushton, in Wilts, and divers other lands; the manor of Compton Bassett, in Wilts; the manor of Odicknol and Chanleigh, in Devon; the lordship of Otherey, in Somersetshire; the tithes of the parish of Wrenbury, in Cheshire, &c.

1552.

p. 392.

Sir William Bowyer, an alderman of London, and lord mayor of the said city, anno 1544, dying in his mayoralty, left a fair estate, and five daughters to inherit; but appointed such executors and overseers, as seemed more willing to enrich themselves by the estate of the deceased, and defraud the children, than to discharge their trusts faithfully. Francis Chaloner married Agnes, one of the daughters; which Francis had much contest with the executors, and in the year 1552 obtained a commission for the just examination and determination of this matter. And about Fe-

A commission to examine the executors of Sir Wil. Bowyer, deceased.

1552. bruary, a commission was granted, at the suit of the said Francis, to three doctors of the Arches, and three serjeants of law, who were, Dr. May (Dean of St. Paul's), Dr. Leyson, and Dr. Cook; Gawdy, Stamford, and Catlyn; to call before them the executors and overseers of the said Sir William Bowyer's will; "Who, as the commission ran, had defrauded Agnes, the daughter of the said William, and four other sisters, of their said father's legacies; which were great sums of money, besides movable goods and jewels; which they had abused to their own lucre, and had not only left out of the inventories, exhibited into the Prerogative Court of the Arches, much of the goods and jewels, but also had caused the same to be prized for under their value; and, that is worse, had also caused the same to be razed, and many parts to be cancelled, whereby they had made the same very unperfect. Nor so contented, had caused the hoped-for and recuperable debts to be put into the title of the *desperate* debts; and among the debts, had put in many feigned sums of money to be indebted by the deceased to them: and finally, had extended the funeral expences to 200*l.* above the same appointed by the order of the city."

Bishop  
Ridley's  
ordina-  
tions.

The persons ordained this year by Ridley, Bishop of London, were first, May 15, eleven deacons, all of them fellows, or masters of art, of Cambridge, and six priests. Again, at Bartholomew-tide, requesting licence to ordain of the Bishop of Ely, Ridley being then at Cambridge, in that bishop's diocese, he ordained in Pembroke Hall, his own college, Robert Kensey, M. A. fellow of Trinity College, vicar of Ware; and many others. Again, December 11, were seven deacons ordained; whereof one was aged forty, another thirty-seven, and another thirty-three. Again, December 21, were ordained three priests; William Harley, of Katharine-Cree Church, London; William Turner, Dean of Wells; and Robert Kensey, before mentioned.

p. 593.

This year were these places and offices conferred



by the king. In April, Ambrose, Earl of Warwick, eldest son of the Duke of Northumberland, was made master of the king's horses, upon the Earl of Pembroke's surrender of that office, and to have 100 marks yearly. In the same month, the king appointed for his chief officers in the Mint within the Tower, Thomas Egerton, Esq. treasurer of the Mint; Thomas Stanley, comptroller; William Billingsley, assay-master; John Munds, provost. And Sir John Godsalue, who had been before comptroller, in regard of his surrender, had an annuity of 60*l.* And to Sir Nich. Throgmorton, late one of the treasurers of the coin of the said Mint, was granted an annuity of 100*l.* for his surrender, and his faithful service. In May, Sir Edward Bray had the grant of the constablership of the Tower in reversion, after the death of Sir John Gage, by the fee of 50*l.* per annum. In June, Sir Roger Cholmely was constituted Lord Chief Justice of England; Henry Bradshaw, Chief Baron of the Exchequer; Edmund Griffith was made Attorney-General of all the Courts of Record within England; and John Gosnold, Solicitor-General. In the same month, the Lord Robert Dudley, another of the Duke of Northumberland's sons, was made Master of the Buck-hounds, with the yearly fee of 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* upon surrender of the same by the Earl of Warwick, his brother. In September, Sir John Cheke, Knt. and one of the privy chamber, obtained a patent to be one of the Chamberlains of the Exchequer, or of the Receipt of the Exchequer, once belonging to Sir Anthony Wyngfield, deceased; and also to appoint the keeper of the door of the said receipt, and of all other officers belonging to the same. Dr. Nicolls had a patent for an annuity of 10*l.* and a licence to take the bodies of prisoners, both men and women, after their execution (for dissecting). He was, I suppose, constituted the king's chirurgeon; as the year before, John Hemingway had the office of the king's apothecary given him, and a fee of 40 marks yearly. And in February, the abovesaid Lord Robert Dudley

1552.  
Places and  
offices be-  
stowed.

1552. had the office *capitalis trenchiatoris* (chief carver), upon the surrender of the duke his father's patent for the same place, granted him by King Henry VIII. to have to the said Robert for term of life, with the fee of 50*l.* yearly. This place the said Lord Robert had excuted from the feast of St. Michael.

p. 394.

## CHAP. XIX.

A parliament. The king's letters to the sheriffs. Bishoprick of Durham dissolved. A general pardon. Certain excepted. The king removes to Greenwich. Knox's last sermon at court. Summoned before the council. Earls of Pembroke and Westmorland. Sir Andrew Dudley. Sir John Williams. Melancthon. North-east passage. Archbishop Holgate.

**T**OWARDS the conclusion of the year, the king called a new parliament; and now beginning to set himself, as his years came on, to mind business, he intended to have an house composed of men of great and good abilities, to consult withal in the present affairs and difficulties of his kingdom. Therefore, after he had sent out a warrant, January 18, to the lord chancellor, to direct forth process for the summoning of a parliament the 1st of March next, he caused his letters to be wrote in January to the sheriffs of each county, that they should diligently give notice to the citizens, and burgesses, and freeholders of every county, That it was the king's will, they should choose and send up to him, as much as possibly they might, men of knowledge and experience, that so the needs of the state might be more effectually provided for, than heretofore had been; and that, where any of his privy counsellors should recommend men of learning and wisdom, to have regard to their direction, as tending to the same. The letter was as followeth:

The king's letter to the sheriffs for parliament men.

“ Trusty and well-beloved, We greet you well. Forasmuch as we have, for divers good considerations, caused a summonition for a parliament to be made,

as we doubt not but ye understand the same by our writs sent in that behalf unto you; we have thought it meet, for the furtherance of such causes as are to be propounded in the said parliament, for the common weal of our realm, that in the election of such persons as shall be sent to the parliament, either from our counties, as knights thereof, or from our cities and boroughs, there be good regard had, that the choice be made of men of gravity and knowledge in their own countries and towns, fit, for their understanding and qualities, to be in such a great council. And therefore, since some part of the proceeding herein shall rest in you, by vertue of your office, we do, for the great desire we have that this our parliament may be assembled with personages out of every country, of wisdom and experience, at this present, will and command you, that ye shall give notice, as well to the freeholders of your county, as to the citizens and burgesses of any city or borough, which shall have any of our writs by your direction, for the election of citizens and burgesses, that our pleasure and commandment is, that they shall choose and appoint (as nigh as they possibly may) men of knowlege and experience, within the counties, cities, and boroughs: so as by th' assembly of such, we may, by God's goodness, provide (thorough the advice and knowlege of the said parliament) for the redress of the lacks in our commonweal, more effectually than heretofore hath been. And yet, nevertheless, our pleasure is, that where our privy council, or any of them, within their jurisdictions, in our behalf, shall recommend men of learning and wisdom; in such case their directions be regarded and followed, as tending to the same, which we desire; that is, to have this assembly to be of the most chiefest men in our realm, for advice and good counsel."

1552.

p. 395.

Letters also were sent in January from the king to some of the high sheriffs, recommending therein persons to them to be elected knights; as, one to the

Persons  
nominated  
for knights  
of the  
shire.

1552. sheriff of Hampshire, for the electing of Sir Richard Cotton to be one of the knights for that shire. The like letter to the sheriff of Suffolk, for the electing of Sir William Drury, and Sir Henry Benningfield, knights for the next parliament. Another to the sheriff of Bedfordshire, in commendation of Sir John St. John, Knt. and Lewis Dyve, Esq.; to the sheriff of Surrey, in commendation of Sir Thomas Cavarden, Knt. and John Vaughan, Esq.; to the sheriff of Cambridge, for Sir Edward North, and James Dyve, Esq.; to the sheriff of Berks, for Sir William Fitzwilliams, and Sir Henry Nevyl; to the sheriff of Oxon, for Sir John Williams, and Richard Fines, Esq.; to the sheriff of Northamptonshire, for Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, and Robert Lane, Esq. And no more were recommended by the king's letters; and these were such as belonged to the court, or were in places of trust about the king.

Dissolu-  
tion of the  
bishoprick  
of Durham.

This parliament began to sit March 1, and ended March the last, in the seventh year of the king. Then was a private act made, for denizing the children of Richard Hills, an eminent merchant abroad; and another for restitution of Edward Seimour, Knt. eldest son to the late Duke of Somerset. And the third and last private act was, for the dissolution of the bishoprick of Durham; that so the courtiers (however well the king meant it, viz. for the founding two bishopricks out of it), as if they had not enough humbled the church, might have a few more good fleeces from her. But he that had the greatest expectation from this dissolved bishoprick, namely, the Duke of Northumberland, was sadly disappointed, and instead of gaining the good revenue thereof, lost his own head, and his possessions beside, within less than half a year after. These were sudden counsils, and carried with a strong hand; for but in November last, a grant was made of this bishoprick to Robert Horn, D. D. the dean of that church.

For it was soon after this dissolution of the bishoprick, namely, in April, that Durham was changed



into a county palatine, and so to continue from thenceforth, by letters patents : wherein was set down the constitution thereof, and the number of judges, officers, and ministers were appointed, requisite to supply the same ; and to have a great seal, and privy seal ; and to be united to the imperial crown of the realm. And this new county palatine was, I suppose, to add a new title to the ambitious Duke of Northumberland, viz. Earl of Durham. I find the demerits of this dissolved bishoprick began soon to be dispersed. For, in May, the fee-farm of the lordship, manor, town and borough of Gateshead, late parcel of the possessions of that bishoprick, were granted to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. And, in June, the capital messuage of Coldharbrough, in Thames-street, London, lately belonging to the said bishoprick, was given to the Earl of Shrewsbury.

1552.  
Durham  
made a  
county pa-  
latine.

p. 396.

The king concluded this parliament with a general pardon ; out of which were these following persons excepted ; Cardinal Pole, Jeffrey Pole (brother, unless I mistake, to the cardinal, some of whose name, viz. Arthur and Edmund, were in a plot afterwards against Queen Elizabeth, and pardoned). Richard Pate (once Bishop of Worcester, and was at the Council of Trent ; and so shall be again under Queen Mary, and who fled abroad again under Queen Elizabeth). Goldwel (servant to Cardinal Pole, and under Queen Mary made Bishop of St. Asaph, and fled abroad again under Queen Elizabeth, and abode at Rome). John Clement (doctor of physic, and that had been schoolmaster to Sir Thomas More's children. In More's Epistle to Petrus Ægidius, of Antwerp, he called this Clement, *puer*, i. e. his servant : " Whom (he said) he suffered not to be away from any discourse, whence he might reap some benefit or advantage. For, from this young bladed and new shot-up grain, which had already begun to spring up in Greek and Latin learning, he looked for (he said) a plentiful increase, at length, of goodly ripe

Persons  
excepted  
out of the  
general  
pardon.

1552. corn." This Clement was constituted by Cardinal Wolsey his rhetoric and Greek reader). John Story, doctor of law (that was under Queen Mary a great man, and very zealous in the office of examining and butchering the poor protestants; but his end was the death of a traitor under Queen Elizabeth). William Rastal (who was the son of John Rastal, a learned man, and a printer, who married Sir Thomas More's sister. This William, nephew to Sir Thomas, was of Lincoln's Inn, went beyond sea under King Edward, and abode at Lovain. Under Queen Mary he returned, and was made one of the justices of the Common Pleas. This man wrote several books of the law. Under Queen Elizabeth he fled to Lovain again, and there died. This William Rastal married John Clement's daughter). Three Italians also, viz. Anthony Bonvice, Benedict Bonvice, and Balthazar Guarsey (this Balthazar I take to be once of Canterbury, and very busy in collecting accusations against good Archbishop Cranmer, about that time under King Henry VIII. when Bishop Gardiner, and several of the prebendaries, and others of the church of Canterbury, had conspired to ruin him.) Germain Seo, Edmund and Thomas Craifford, Thomas Finch, Thomas Raynolds, of Whitstaple, in the county of Kent; and another Thomas Raynolds, related, probably, to Raynolds, the Monk of Sion, that was executed under King Henry, for refusing the supremacy; and, lastly, William Bedel. Many of these were concerned with Cardinal Pole, and others denied the supremacy; and some were concerned with the holy Maid of Kent.

Ambassadors.

p. 397.

This March were Dr. Wotton and Sir Thomas Chaloner sent to the French king; and Sir Philip Hoby sent to the emperor, and so was also Thirlby, Bishop of Norwich. Hoby was to be lodged there, in Sir Richard Morison's room, now coming home; to whom there was a letter sent, April 1, to deliver to Sir Philip Hoby, sent ambassador to the emperor, by bill indebted, all such plate as he received, when he entered into that charge.

In York, and those northern parts, the testons still passed for sixpence; but, about April, a design was in hand to take them down to a groat; an inkling of which going about, every body ran in with their testons to the Mint, and paid them in there. Whereupon grew this inconvenience, that all commodities began to rise much, and a great scarcity of money followed; wherefore, to remedy this dearth, the council in the North was fain to procure some to be punished, that sold at unreasonable and prohibited prices.

1552.  
Testons  
still go in  
York

The king, for his health's sake (as it seems) and to enjoy the country air, removed, April 11, from Westminster, by water, to Greenwich. As he passed by the Tower, he was presented with a great shot of guns and chambers; and all the ships shot off their guns, all the way to Ratcliffe; and so did the three ships that were riding there, appointed to go to Newfoundland, and the two pinaces, that were to accompany them. And this was the last remove of the good king.

The king's  
last remove  
to Green-  
wich.

April 17, came a command down to London, that all the churchwardens of London should repair unto Guildhall, and appear before the king's commissioners, the Bishop of London, and the Lord Mayor, and Cholmely, lord chief justice; and bring with them a true certificate of all church goods, plate, money, bells, and of all copes and ornaments that pertained to each church. For the sacrilegious hunger of the courtiers was not yet satisfied.

A certifi-  
cate of  
church  
goods in  
London to  
be brought  
in.

Knox, it seems, upon the displeasure taken against him in Newcastle, as was said before, soon after returned to London, and being in good reputation with the king, and some of the council, for his zealous preaching against the errors of Rome, and the vices of the times, he was appointed to preach before the king and his council at Westminster, a little before his majesty departed thence. And his sermon, being the last he preached before his majesty, he suited to the court, as it now stood; wherein the main govern-

Knox  
preaches  
his last  
sermon at  
court.

1552. ing men, and who carried all the stroke, were mere temporizers, and secretly well-wishers to the old religion, and shewing little zeal for the present establishment of the church, any further than the national laws absolutely required: and so they outwardly complied, but craftily concealed their inward judgments, for the accomplishing their worldly ends and interests: these were the men now chiefly about the king. There were two especially ruled all in the court, the Duke of Northumberland, by stout courage and proudness of stomach; and the Marquis of Winchester, the treasurer, by counsel and wit. This was well enough observed by the good sort: and bold Knox being now to preach at court, was resolved to speak his mind, and reprove them, even to their faces. And, for that purpose, took his text in Psalm xl. "He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel against me." This sermon he spake of afterwards, in his Faithful Admonition: where he was mentioning how the papists, with their craft, wrought all mischief in King Edward's reign, being such as bore authority and rule. "And who, I pray (said he) ruled the roast in the court all this time, by stout courage, and proudness of stomach, but Northumberland? And who, I pray you, ruled all by counsel and wit? Shall I name the man? I will write no more plainly now than my tongue spoke the last sermon that it pleased God that I should make before that innocent and most godly king, Edward VI. and before the council at Westminster, and even to the faces of such," &c.

p. 398.

By occasion of the foresaid text, he made this affirmation, "That commonly it is seen, that the most godly princes had officers and chief counsellors most ungodly, conjured enemies to God's true religion, and traitors to their princes: and that their wickedness and ungodliness was speedily perceived, and espied out of the said princes, and godly men: but that for a time those crafty colours could so cloak their malice against God, and his truth, and their



hollow hearts towards their loving masters, that by worldly wisdom and policy, at length they attained to high promotions." And for the proof of this his affirmation, he recited the histories of Achitophel, and Shebna, and Judas. Of whom the two former had high offices and promotions, with great authority, under the most godly princes David and Ezekias; and Judas was purse-master with Christ Jesus. And when he had made some discourse in that matter, he moved this question, "Why so godly princes permitted so wicked men to be upon their council, and to bear office and authority under them?" To which he answered, that either they so abounded in worldly wisdom, foresight, and experience, touching the government of a commonwealth, that their counsel appeared to be so necessary, that the commonwealth could not lack them, and so by the colour to preserve the tranquillity and quietness in realms, they were maintained in authority: or else they kept their malice, which they bare towards their masters, and God's true religion, so secret in their breasts, that no man could espy it, till by God's permission they waited for such occasion and opportunity, that they uttered all their mischief so plainly, that all the world might perceive it. And that was most evident by Achitophel and Shebna. For of Achitophel it is written, That he was David's most secret counsellor; and that because his counsel in those days was like the oracle of God. And Shebna was unto good King Ezekias, sometime comptroller, sometime secretary, and, last of all, treasurer. To the which offices he had never been promoted, under so godly a prince, if the treason and malice which he bare against the king, and against God's true religion, had been manifestly known. No, said he, Shebna was a crafty fox, and could shew such a fair countenance to the king, that neither he, nor his council, could espy his malicious treason. But the Prophet Esaias was commanded by God to go to his presence, and to declare his traiterous heart, and miserable end.

1552.

2 Reg. 18.  
18.

Esa. 36. 3.

1552.

“Were David, said he, and Ezekias, princes of great and godly gifts and experience, abused by crafty counsellors, and dissembling hypocrites? What wonder is it then, that a young and innocent king be deceived by crafty, covetous, wicked, and ungodly counsellors? I am greatly afraid that Achitophel be counsellor, that Judas bear the purse, and that Shebna be scribe, comptroller, and treasurer.” This he said, and somewhat more he spake that day, not in a corner, but even before those whom his conscience judged worthy of accusation. He said, that since that time they had declared themselves more manifestly, namely, under the queen. He affirmed, “That under that innocent king pestilent papists had greatest authority. “Oh! who was judged to be the soul and life to the council in every matter of weighty importance? Who but Sobna? Who was most frank and ready to destroy Somerset, and set up Northumberland? Was it not Sobna? Who was most bold to cry, bastard, bastard, incestuous bastard Mary, shall never reign over us? And who, I pray, was most busy to say, fear not to subscribe with my lords of the king’s majesty’s most honourable privy council: agree to his grace’s last will, and perfect testament; and let never that obstinate woman come to authority. She is an errant papist. She will subvert the true religion, and will bring in strangers, to the destruction of this commonwealth. Which of the council, I say, had these, and greater persuasions against Mary, to whom now he crouches and kneeleth? Sobna, the treasurer. And what intended such traiterous and dissembling hypocrites by all these, and such like crafty slights, and counterfeit conveyance? Doubtless the overthrow of Christ’s true religion, which then began to flourish in England.” Thus he wrote concerning his sermon.

p. 392.

Knox will  
not accept  
a living.

But, notwithstanding the piercing glances thereof upon some of the great men, it was, as near as I can guess, about this time, that the council sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to bestow the living of Al-

hallows upon Mr. Knox. But when it was offered him, he refused it, not caring to be bound to use all King Edward's book. And Sampson, and after him Saunders (afterwards a martyr) were collated to the said parish. April 14, Knox was called before the council, who demanded of him three questions: 1. Why he refused the benefice provided for him in London? To which he answered, That his conscience did witness, that he might profit more in some other place than in London; and therefore had no pleasure to accept any office there. But he might have answered, that he refused that parsonage, because of Northumberland's contrary command; who designed it, perhaps, for him that succeeded into it, namely, Sampson. 2. Whether he thought that no Christian might serve in the ecclesiastical ministration according to the rites and laws of the realm of England? To which he said, That many things at that time were worthy of reformation in the ministry of England: without the reformation whereof, no minister did, or could, discharge his conscience before God. For no ministers in England had authority to separate the lepers from the heal (*i. e.* the whole or sound; that is, they had not the full power of excommunication) which was, he said, a chief point of his office. 3. They asked him, If kneeling at the Lord's table was not indifferent? He answered, That Christ's action was most perfect; and that it was most sure to follow his example: and that kneeling was man's addition and invention. About this last question there was great contention between the lords of the council and him. There were then present the Archbishop of Canterbury, Cranmer; the Bishop of Ely, Goodrich; lord chancellor, the lord treasurer, the Earls of Bedford, Northampton, Shrewsbury, the lord chamberlain, and both the secretaries. After long reasoning, it was said to him, He was not called of any ill meaning, and that they were sorry to know him of a contrary mind to the common order. He answered, He was sorry the common order was con-

1552.

The council  
summon  
him before  
them to  
know the  
cause.

1552.  
p. 400.

trary to Christ's institution. He was dismissed with some gentle speeches, and willed him to advise with himself, if he would communicate according to that order. All this above is collected from a letter of Knox's own writing.

Knox in  
Bucks.

Now Knox seems to have gone into the parts of Buckinghamshire, and that in his itinerary course of preaching. In some places in this circuit, and particularly at Amersham, he took a liking, partly for their forwardness to hear him, and partly for their civilities towards him. In these, therefore, and such like places, he would tarry somewhat longer than in others, where he could not find so much delight; and there, and elsewhere, sometime allow himself recreation. But this was afterwards a trouble to him, as reckoning himself to have been guilty of too much indulgence to himself, and of too little regard of the need that other people stood in, of having the gospel preached to them: and he blamed himself, "That he had not been an indifferent feeder, as was required of Christ's stewards. For in preaching Christ's gospel, said he, albeit my eye, as God knoweth, was not much upon worldly promotion, yet the love of friends, and carnal affection of some men, with whom I was most familiar, allured me to make more residence in one place than in another: having more respect to the pleasure of a few, than to the necessity of many. That day I thought I had not sinned, if I had not been idle; but this day I know it was my duty, to have had consideration, how long I had remained in one place, and how many hungry souls were in other places, to whom, alas! none took pains to break and distribute the bread of life. Moreover, remaining in one place, I was not so diligent as mine office required, but sometime, by counsel of carnal friends, I spared the body; some time I spent in worldly business of particular friends, and some time in taking recreation and pastime, by exercise of my body." This I the rather set down, that you may see one of the king's itineraries in his office.

Faithful  
Admonition.



But leaving Knox, we shall make some remembrances of other men of note, as they occasionally about this time offer us matter to relate of them. 1552.

Sir William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, now grew great, having been lately advanced from a commoner to a nobleman, specially since the conspiracy of the Duke of Somerset, wherein it was pretended, that he, together with the Duke of Northumberland, and the Marquis of Northampton, his brother-in-law, should have been assassinated: whereby he became linked in with those two overtopping men. He was made president of the council for the marches of Wales in 1552; and in this last year of the king he made two great purchases of lands and lordships from the crown, which cost him upwards of 1800*l*. He was made the first and chief of a commission to view and survey all church goods, plate, furniture, &c. belonging to any church, chapel, or guild, in the county of Chester, the king also bestowed upon him the office of keeping the forests and parks of Claringdon, Pauncet, Buckholt, and Melthurst, in Wilts, to him and his son, for their lives. And he obtained, as of the king's gift, the manor of Dunnyate, in Somersetshire, with other lands and possessions.

Henry Nevyl was Earl of Westmoreland in this reign, a person of antient nobility, but of a tainted life, and blemished manners. In the year 1551 he conspired to have robbed the king's treasure at Middleham, where his majesty had considerable revenues. He endeavoured also to rob his mother; and sold land to the value of 200*l*. per annum, either lavished away in prodigality, or to carry on a treason. And, to please the people, he intended to set forth a proclamation, for the raising of coin to its former value, which, being of a baser alloy, had been lately cried down, by the king's order, that money might come to a truer standard. These things Horn, Dean of Durham, had discovered against him, in October, 1552; but was bid to keep the matter close. Whatever punishment this earl underwent, in the beginning

p. 401.  
Westmore-  
land par-  
doned and  
rewarded.

1552. of April, 1553, by the means, I suppose, of Northumberland, who grew formidably great in the northern parts, to gain this northern nobleman, had great favour shewn him; for he had a pardon of all treasons, little and great, misprision of treason, &c. committed before the 20th of March last; and soon after, in the same month, the king gave him the manors of Kenton, Liston, Chetecomb, Baseby, Stow, and Deping, and other lands in the counties of Devon and Lincoln, to whom they were before entailed, to him and the heirs of his body. And, in the month following, commission came to the Earl of Huntingdon, and Sir Andrew Dudley, Knights of the Order, to admit and instal the said Westmoreland into the said order.

Sir Andrew Dudley, and Lord Darcy taken into the order.

Which Sir Andrew, of late risen exceedingly, as well as the lord chamberlain (viz. Lord Darcy) had been both lately admitted into the said order. And in April the king gave them both, out of his wardrobe, 18 yards of crimson velvet, for the livery of the said Order of the Garter, and ten yards apiece of white sarcenet, or taffata, to line it. Dudley succeeded the Lord Paget, who, upon pretence of defect of blood and arms for three descents, had been before deprived of the Garter ignominiously. But the Liber Cæruleus, in the registry of the knights kept at Windsor, observed, it was not so much those causes, as the prevalence and practice of the Duke of Northumberland, by which he had been unjustly and undeservedly put off the order. But Sir John Hayward, as also Stow, are mistaken, when they write, that the George and Garter were forthwith bestowed upon the Earl of Warwick, that duke's eldest son; when, indeed, it was not bestowed upon the son of the said duke, but upon Sir Andrew, his brother, as was shewn before.

Sir John Williams master of the jewels.

Sir John Williams, who was master of the Jewell-house, and now discharged in May, gave up his accounts, and was cleared of the sum of 16,667*l*. This gentleman was, under Queen Mary, created

Lord Williams of Thame, and made lord chamberlain of the household to King Philip. 1552.

Had not the king died so soon, the moderate, learned, and wise Melancthon would have come into England, and been placed in the university of Cambridge. For in this month of May, a letter in Latin was sent to him from the king, signifying, that the king had elected him to supply that place which Martin Bucer, deceased, had in that university. And June 6th following, a warrant was issued to the treasurer of the Augmentations, to deliver to the Archbishop of Canterbury 50*l.* to be sent over the seas by him, for the expences of the same learned man coming to the king's presence. A letter to Melancthon. p. 402.

In this month of May did the king grant letters of commendation, or safe conduct, for the three ships that were enterprizing that noble adventure, of seeking for a passage into the eastern parts of the world through the unknown and dangerous seas of the North. Of this expedition Sebastian Gabato, an excellent mariner of Bristol, but of Italian parentage, was a great mover, to whom the king, as a gratuity, had given 200*l.* For this voyage, in February last, the king lent two ships, the *Primrose* and the *Moon*, a pinnace, to Barns, Lord Mayor of London; Garret, one of the sheriffs; York and Windham adventurers, binding themselves to deliver to the king two ships of the like burden, and good condition, in Midsummer, anno 1554. Sir Hugh Willoughby, a brave knight, was the chief captain in this enterprize: to whom the king granted a passport to go beyond the seas, with four servants, 40*l.* in money, his chain, &c. The letters of safe conduct were wrote in Latin, to all kings, princes, and other states, being three in number, for each ship one: and three others of the same effect were writ in Hebrew, and three others in the Chaldee tongue; to suit with the language of the eastern countries, when they should arrive in those parts of the world. But the voyage proved unfortunate, by reason of the ice and storms

The adventure of the North-East passage.

1552. in the North parts; though so much was gained, to the great advantage of the nation, that by it the country of Russia was better known, and a trade with it then first discovered.

Arch-  
bishop  
Holgate  
purchaseth  
Scroby.

In this month of May did Holgate, Archbishop of York, the only wealthy bishop then in England, bestow some part of his wealth, very commendably, for the benefit of his successors in that see: for he made purchase from the king of the scite, circuit, and precincts, capital messuage and mansion, lordship and manor of Scroby in Scroby, with the appurtenances, in the county of Nottingham, lately parcel of the possessions of the Archbishop of York. Which premises were extended to the yearly value of 37*l.* 8*s.* 5½*d.* above all reprises and allocations. To have the premises to the archbishop, and Barbara, his wife, during the life of the archbishop, and of Barbara, and either of them, living longest, with impetition of waste during the life of the said archbishop; and after the departure of the archbishop and his wife, then to his successors, archbishops of York, for ever. To hold of the king, and his successors, in free soccage: which was purchased by him for the sum of 630*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.* May 27.

Ambassa-  
dors from  
England.

Mr. Sheres was, in this aforesaid month of May, sent ambassador to the King of the Romans; and to Maximilian King of Boeme; and about the same time, Florentius de Diaceto to the King of Denmark.

p. 403.

## CHAP. XX.

A design to enter into league with the protestant princes. The present condition of the emperor. The embassy to him from England. Letters from the English ambassadors, concerning the affairs of the Low Countries.

**BUT** now to turn ourselves to the king's concerns with his two neighbour princes.



This year England had Sir Thomas Chamberlain <sup>1552.</sup> ambassador with the regent; the Bishop of Norwich, <sup>Ambassa-</sup> Sir Richard Morison, and Sir Philip Hoby, <sup>dors</sup> am- <sup>abroad.</sup> bassadors with the emperor: who laboured the confirming of the amity with England, and did sincerely favour him against the French, though more privily, because of the peace with France; where our ambassadors were, Dr. Wotton, Sir William Pickering, and Sir Thomas Chaloner; whose office was, to mediate a peace between that king and the emperor. Now because we have no history extant, as I know of, that gives any sufficient account of these concertations, but are very defective, nay, say nothing at all thereof, therefore I will, by the help of the letters of these ambassadors, and of the council to them, declare this at some more length.

It must be known, that a great intrigue now driving <sup>A design</sup> on by these ambassadors with the emperor was, <sup>to enter</sup> to open a door to strike a league with the protestant <sup>into a</sup> princes of Germany. And it was left to the discretion of the ambassadors, to take their opportunity to <sup>league with</sup> move the matter. They sent letters, April 28th, to the council, being an answer to letters that had been before sent from the council to them: therein they signified, that as yet there had been no good opportunity to utter, especially in those parts, any piece of the matter of the council's letters, until more time, and further intelligence, might give light for the manner and order of entry. By the next letters of the lords, wrote May 5th, they ordered the ambassadors to forbear to say or do any thing therein; that is, for entry of any practices touching the league, whereof they wrote before. Yet it was their will that the said ambassadors should devise, both with Mr. Mount, the English agent at Strasburgh, at his coming to them, and by all other ways, to understand as much as they might, in all things mentioned in their former letters; and especially, to consider this one point, viz. with what princes of Germany, in what degrees, and after what sort, it were best to

1552. enter, and break first, when the king, upon further intelligence and occasion, should think good to proceed further in this matter. And in these points they desired to understand the ambassadors' opinions, who had all three great and long experience of those princes, and had been privy, as they thought, with what commissions, and under what sort, the covenants had passed heretofore with the princes of Germany, both in the league for the defence of the Low Countries, and in some other like considerations made in those parties in times past.

p. 404.  
Instruc-  
tions in  
case of the  
emperor's  
death.

The emperor still remained very sickly, and in more likelihood to die than to live. In case of whose mortality and departure, the council instructed the ambassadors, that it was the king's pleasure, that they should use such words of lamentation as might seem meet; and to declare to the regent, that considering, that by the said emperor's death, the end of their embassy was come, and their commission expired, he, the Bishop of Norwich, and he, Sir Richard Morison, were minded to take their leaves, and to make their returns to the king's presence; and he, Sir Philip Hoby, according to his majesty's letters, of late written to the regent for that purpose, did mind to make his abode and continuance in those parts, to attend upon her the said regent, according to the charge committed unto him.

The empe-  
ror besieges  
Therwin.

The emperor's party were this April and May besieging Therwin, but with no great hope of success; any more than there was in the latter end of the last year, when the emperor besieged Metz, and was forced to raise the siege. He was now greatly distressed for money. For his subjects of the Low Countries slunk back, and made terms, in case a tax were levied upon them; and the bankers refused to lend any more. For, as Chamberlain wrote to the lords, that for the last demand from Holland, the people stood with the president there residing, desiring, that if they should yield thereunto, they might be unburdened of an impost of toll upon the

hundred, put upon them for all fish and merchandize, since the beginning of these wars, towards the furnishing of a navy of ships, which they were made believe, the emperor would find upon the same, for a sure convoy of their merchants' ships between this and Spain, from time to time. And instead of such a navy, they were compelled to double man their own ships, and double furnish the same with ordnance, at their own cost, and not to depart till thirty or forty ships were ready together. And yet was the impost, nevertheless, gathered of them. So that they standing hereupon, the president wrote to the regent, that he could not induce them to condescend, otherwise than with promise to take away the said impost. Finally, it was known that the regent wrote to the president, that if he could do no better, he should promise as much as they asked; which should be performed as other the like had been.

1552.

The people did murmur, and thought that money already given illy bestowed; and had no better hope of the enterprize upon Therwin, than they had of Metz. When they were required for this last grant, one of the presidents, to allure them to condescend, was commanded to shew unto divers certain accounts of the charges of the last year: that it might appear how much the last did amount unto, and yet was not enough by a great deal, and that Cesar should yet be in debt unto divers persons five or six millions. It was reported that, among the rest, one gentleman of Holland said merrily to the president, "What shall it boot me to see the accounts, seeing I do know, that if there be not enough, more will be asked; and being too much, none shall be restored?"

The people of the Low Countries murmur.

The nobles, the abbots, and others of the clergy, did sit still with the commons, devising upon the easy levying of this last grant in Brabant; which they could not levy upon meat and drink, as they were wont, there being already so many new imposts

Money very difficult to be raised.

1552. and gables, beside the ordinary excise, as the poor  
 p. 405. commons were not able, and worse willing, to bear it;  
 so that as yet they could not agree : and the money  
 was unready when Cesar had present need thereof.

The mer-  
 chants in  
 Antwerp  
 will not  
 lend any  
 more.

The Fuggars, and other merchants in Antwerp, would lend no more upon interest until the old were paid : which some mean merchants did exclaim for, being not able otherwise to pay their debts ; but nothing could they get, and yet still more was craved of them. The Fuggars would lend no more at interest, but by exchange ; whereby they meant, both to make more gain, and also to stand in more surety of their payment : for that delivering money here by exchange, they would drive the prince to seek out another merchant, that might promise them payment in Spain or Italy ; and so thought themselves better able to obtain the payment of others, merchants, as they themselves were, than there of Cesar's receivers, whose bills, and none other, they were wont to have for their money.

The people  
 that lent  
 money  
 wronged.

The people found themselves shrewdly wronged : for where, the last year, they disbursed their ready money to receive yearly rents upon the demesnes of these countries, when the year came that they looked for payment, they were half paid, and forced to tarry until the end of the second year ; and then they looked for as little, by reason all the demesnes, and other things there, were set to pledge, and the money faster spent than it was gathered.

The cause  
 of this  
 scarceness  
 of money.

The cause of this scarceness of money did proceed from the great mistrust that now went, of the merchants' weakness, stepping daily aside. So that the gentlemen, burgesses, widows, and others of those countries, that were wont to put forth such money in banks as they did spare to spend of their yearly revenues, and other gains, did now think better to keep it in coffers, without gains, than to put it in hucksters' hands, and lose the principal.

The emperor's own condition was now, in April, such, that he kept himself close, and gave no audience



to any man, nor was seen abroad. The reason whereof was thought to be, that the despite of his ill successes had bred in him a melancholic humour, not much differing from a frenzy. So that the English ambassadors (who came for confirmation of the amity, and to offer a mediation for peace between the emperor and France), remained as yet without access to his presence. Of this want of admission the said ambassadors informed the lords, who authorized them, for lack of access to the emperor's own person, to declare unto the regent, his sister, the effect of their embassy. Whereupon they agreed, that Sir Rich. Morison should repair to Mons. D'Arras, to have audience spoken for accordingly. The said Arras said, he would declare it to the emperor; assuring him, that if the emperor had been in any ability to have given them audience himself, they had not been thus long delayed: and because they should not think the time long, he therefore sent his Secretary B. unto them, to pray them to resort unto the regent; which, Arras said, proceeded only of the emperor's debility; for, had he been in case able to have given them audience, they should most thankfully have been received by him. After this, D'Arras sent the secretary unto them, to tell them, he declared this matter to the emperor, who took it in very good part, and was determined nevertheless, within two or three days, to give them audience himself, if he were able. It was May 7, in the morning, when two of the emperor's council came to them, telling them, that the queen was ready to give them audience; with whom they repaired unto her presence, and there declared the effect of their message, according to their instructions, and withal delivered unto her, first her own letters, and afterwards the emperor's letters; praying her, that like as she had always shewed herself an augmenter of amity between the king's majesty and her brother the emperor, so she would now do what good in her lay, to the furtherance of the king's majesty's godly intent and purpose, as well to the honour of

1552.  
The English ambassadors' audience with the regent.

1552.

both princes, as to the profit of the universal state of Christendom. Whereunto she made as gracious and loving answers as might be desired; promising continuance of her good-will towards that amity, which she knew the emperor tendered much; and that for the rest, she would declare it to the emperor, and let them know his mind therein, as shortly as might be, not doubting but that they should be answered to their contentation.

After having paused a little, they further declared unto her, that like as the king's majesty had sent them thither unto the emperor for that good intent, even so had the king sent the like ambassadors unto the French king, with commandment to do their best; and as matters might grow to any good purpose, so to advertise them (the ambassadors with the emperor) of it; offering themselves to employ their utmost diligence to do good in this behalf, which the regent accepted most thankfully.

Talk between  
D'Arras  
and the  
ambassadors.

After this audience with the said queen (which was at Brussels) on May 10, Mons. D'Arras came to the ambassadors' lodgings, to visit them; and after much courtesy, and gentle words, they fell in talk of the state of their army at Therwin, and out of that, into a discourse of the peace: wherein D'Arras said, that the queen deferred their answer only, for that the emperor was desirous to make them answer himself. And further said he, "Whereas you require to understand the occasions of these wars, the emperor knoweth none other cause, but the French king's ambition; who hath taken the emperor's ships at Barcelona, spoiled his merchants upon those seas, stirred his subjects against the emperor, and taken towns belonging to the empire; which was both begun and done, when his ambassador did affirm and swear, that his master, the French king, meant nothing but good peace." Then, speaking of the high and unreasonable demands the French intended to make, in order to peace, he added, that these were rather the means to irritate them, that were already pricked, and that

the mediators should do their best to stay those demands. "Nay," said Sir Richard Morison, "it may be, for saving their honour in speaking first, they will demand unreasonable things, and nevertheless, in the end, be contented with reason; for if the French be willing to have peace, they will speak, and yet, peradventure, their speech shall be high."—"The French willing to have peace!" said D'Arras: "Yes, I wiss (said he) I know they have sought peace of us by several ways, and have propounded certain particular demands for the same. Howbeit (said he) the French trust not you, because they know you be our friends; and therefore if you should tell them this, they would deny it. Nevertheless (as he proceeded) since all the world knoweth the beginning of these wars, and the French king's doings, the emperor needeth not to utter them. Which things (said he) the French king ought to be put in remembrance of, by them that be mediators, that the French king might be thereby moved to make such offers as are reasonable. And when that shall be offered, the world shall well know the emperor to be affected to such a reasonable peace, as may serve to avoid the occasion of new wars, and be for the quiet of all Christendom."

1552.

p. 407

This was the sum of the talk that passed between Arras and the ambassadors. Touching the estate of the emperor's person, the ambassadors sent word to the lords of the council, that they could by no means learn assuredly, how it was with him; for it was kept so, that there was no man came abroad that was able directly to say, the emperor is in this or that case.

The state  
of the em-  
peror's  
person;

As for the state and government of the Low Countries, after the emperor's death, which the Lords willed the ambassadors to understand, they caused Chamberlain, one of them, to make as diligent search as he could; whose discourse they sent to the said lords, together with the advertisements out of Italy.

The said discourse was to this tenor: "That he had learned, that the government of those countries belonged of right to the emperor's son, after his de-

And of his  
countries,  
after his  
decease.

1552. cease, although the people did bear him small affection; so that it was thought, that if Maximilian would make any offer of himself, when such opportunity should serve, that he might be the rather and willing received, before the other. It was also thought, that then Ferdinando might make question for the portion of his father's goods; wherein he would say, he was not indifferently dealt with, alledging the partage or repartition to be wrong made: whereof his brother had promised him recompence, as yet unperformed. For Spain it was thought, that if the mother should outlive Cesar, that Ferdinando should be nearer than Philip, by the laws of that country: although some said, that Cesar, to make that sure, had gotten his mother to grant beforehand unto the inheriting of his son, her nephew; which, for all that, was counted of no more value than the act of a madman. That country would by no means have the Spanyard to govern or bear rule over them; which they fear to have, if Cesar's son be their head: they thought that rather, by accepting of Maximilian, they should not only be quit of Spanyards to rule them, and bear stroke in those parts, but also they should, by such means, unite themselves faster with the Germans, who did bear him good-will: and so be out of fear of the Germans' revenge upon that country; for that they conceived, that Cesar could never have done to them that he had, without the assistance of those Low Countries with their money."

The regent  
not loved.

As to the regent, thus he discoursed: "That if Cesar should take his leave (of the world), or ever his son (Philip) did arrive, he did not learn, that the regent were like to sit long in governance, the people did so much mislike her former proceedings, divers ways: for whereas in times past the use had been at all times, when any loan or tax should be demanded of those countries, for to call together all the states thereof, parliament-wise, and openly to propound the demand, with all gentleness and loving exhortations, the regent had taken an use for to call but the deputies



of Bruges for Flanders, and the like of Antwerp for Brabant, stoutly willing them to condescend unto such sums as she had demanded; which, if they had sought to qualify, making any good demonstrations of the weakness of the commons, she would bid them leave their merchandizes or bargaining with her, saying, that *Cesar must and will have it.*" These, and other things, did Morison write to the Lords, concerning the posture of things there.

By letters from the council, dated May 24, it appeared to be their intent, to take the occasion that the time ministered, as well for the proceedings with the emperor, as also for the matters of Almaine, to join the king's majesty, both with the emperor and also with other princes of Germany, in a straiter amity; and that Sir Richard Morison should open unto his colleagues the particularities of those things that he had knowledge of. Accordingly they conferred together, and perused such articles of discourse as the said Sir Richard had delivered in writing to them; the copies whereof were sent to the lords, to the intent that they might the better consider the same, with which also went the ambassadors' letters: wherein they wrote, "That, according to their lordships' device, they thought that such a league and amity would serve to very good purpose, as well for the king's majesty, as for the defence of those Low Countries. But how this communication might be entered into, they were in doubt; because the emperor's sickness seemed to be such, that it was thought he would not give audience himself, but refer this, as he did other things, to the queen; so that of likelihood Mons. D'Arras, and others, should be made privy to it. And because the matter required so great secresy, they mistrusted it could not be kept so secret, when it was opened to the queen, and by her to others. This made them doubt how it might be broken, unless they had audience of the emperor himself. If the emperor grew better, and were able to give them audience, and should like this league, as in reason he

1552.  
p. 408.

The embassy to the emperor, to join with the emperor and the German princes.

1352. ought, the ambassadors signified to the lords, that they thought it good to be followed with the princes of Germany, after such order as in the Articles of Discourse was contained, or otherwise, as should seem best to the lords; which might also be the occasion to bring those unto accord, that then by their strife troubled all Germany. But in case, as the ambassadors further shewed their minds, the emperor should not like this confederation, as princes' hearts be unknown, then, after the opening of the matter unto him, they thought it a matter to be feared, that he would practise to disappoint the king for making any league at all with the Germans: wherefore they thought, that this matter was so to be moved to the emperor, as he might not know the king's full mind herein, until the emperor's own inclination thereunto were first felt. They added, that after they should have spoken with Mr. Mount (the agent employed with the German princes), they should be more able to say further herein, and would thereof advertise their lordships."

Here follow the *Articles of Discourse* mentioned above:

p. 409. *It shall be thought good, that the King's Majesty should enter into a straiter amity with the Emperor, jointly with the other Princes of Germany.*

1. *First*, Whether the emperor can be contented, that a foreign prince should join in league, having heretofore shewed himself averse to suffer the like?

2. Also, whether he could be contented, that the king's majesty, our master, should be in confederation with the Germans; because he may fear, that their religion, which he misliketh, might by these means the better be established, and the harder to be altered by him?

3. And whereas the empire, by the league that the emperor already hath with them, is bound to defend these Low Countries; and he bound again, in all contributions, to pay but as much as two electors, with

many other advantages on his part ; whether now he can be contented to enter into communication of a new league, which may happen not to prove so beneficial for him, as the present league he now hath ?

4. Whether the Germans could be contented to embrace such a league, because that, as it is supposed, they which neither love nor trust the emperor, would be loth to join in league with him, that hath heretofore wrested them unto covenants not indifferent ; and as it may be, that by their good-wills they would not observe this present league, so they may be much less willing to enter into any new league with him ?

5. Whether the league should be made with the princes, without the emperor ?

6. Whether the discord which is among the princes should hinder the king's majesty's purpose herein ; for, having John Frederick, he should want Duke Maurice and the Landgrave, like as, having them, he may want the other ?

7. Whereas a diet is appointed to be at Frankfort, for the appeasing of these disorders, if the princes that vary shall be there personally, whether it were good that the king's majesty should send a person thither, to move the said princes unto accord ?

8. Whether it were convenient to let the emperor understand the king's majesty's intent here, before he should so send, lest the emperor might mistrust some other practices, or else might find himself aggrieved, that another prince should meddle with the pacifying of the estates of Germany, he being emperor, to whose office the order of those matters appertaineth ?

9. When these princes should be satisfied, they being of two sorts, as they call them, *protestants* and *papists*, whether both sorts can be contented to enter into this league or not ?

10. Whether the league should be made with part of the princes, unless they were such as were strong enough to weigh the rest : for otherwise, it is doubted, the king's majesty may be put to more charges with

1552. the defence of them, than he shall receive commodity by that league?

p. 410. These articles the king's ambassadors seriously debated among themselves, and at last came to certain resolutions, which they also sent to the lords under this title :

*Our opinions, agreed upon in debating the doubts mentioned in the said articles, to every article particularly.*

1. The emperor heretofore hath not liked the practice of any foreign prince with the Germans, as well for that some of those practices were meant against him, as he took the league of Smalcald to be; as also, because they might be a hinderance to his chief purpose; which, as divers have thought, was to have made himself absolute lord of the whole. But now that he seeth his purpose therein cannot take place, by reason as well of his own age as infirmities, as also by the experience of his enemies' force, we see not in reason why he should be loth to have other foreign princes joined in league with him and the empire, for the more strait (security) and safeguard of his own countries.

2. When the emperor shall perceive, that the intent of this league tendeth only to the defence and preservation of his friends' countries, and his own, whereby Christendom may be the better preserved from the Turkish invasions, and the French also have the more cause to be in quiet (without which league neither his own countries nor Germany can be without danger, if God should call him away), we think reason would, that leaving the controversy of religion, he should be content to join with all manner of friends: as the Switzers, who being divers in religion, are nevertheless whole in league, for their own defence. And sithence he hath suffered Duke John Frederick, the Duke also of Wirtemberg, and others, also to continue in their religion, it is to be supposed,



that for religion only, he will not refuse so necessary a league as this. 1552.

3. If this league, that the emperor now hath with the Germans, as it is beneficial for the emperor, be thought prejudicial unto the Germans, and so taken as unequal, especially for two causes ; one, that the Low Countries being much subject unto wars, shall put the Germans very often to travail and charges, in the contributions, whereof the emperor's charge is very little, all things considered ; and the other, that whereas upon occasions, the princes of Germany have sought order at the emperor's hands, for the correction of those his officers of the Low Countries, which violently have broken the peace against them, that forasmuch as by the common law, no man ought to be judge in his own case, it might therefore please his majesty, those cares might be determined either *per cameram imperialem*, or by indifferent arbiters ; they have been answered, That their countries should not be sued in the chamber of the empire, for no manner of cause, but only for not contributing such money as by the covenants they are bound. So that they think the covenants not equal ; as it may appear in the writings exhibited by the Germans, in the diet of Augusta. Wherefore, if the Germans, misliking this inequality of covenants, to the which they consented as it were by compulsion, when the emperor was at the greatest, should now have a disposition not to perform this league, when their time should so serve them, we think reason would, the emperor, considering the inequality of these covenants, should be contented to have them brought unto that equality, that they might have just cause to observe them ; and so to stand him in stead, where now it is possible the present league shall stand him in none.

p. 411.

4. The causes why it is thought the Germans neither love nor trust the emperor, are, that the one side perceived that he went about to alter their religion ; and both parts mistrusted, he meant of Ger-

1552. many, to make a kingdom; which they may so long fear, as he (shuffleth in) his leagues with them. Wherefore, when they shall see a King of England the third in the league, one like to stand by them, as well in religion, as in maintenance of their liberties, they cannot, in reason, but rejoyce at it: like as the emperor himself, who hath now, as it is thought, changed his purpose, neither seeking dominion over them, alteration of religion, nor promotion of his son to the coadjutorship, should be glad to have such an one joined with him, as may both rid the Germans of suspicion, and also be a continual stay for his house.

5. We do not think it good for the king's majesty to enter into any league, unless this emperor, or his successor Ferdinand, be one of the confederacy. For like as the charges otherwise will be great, and the commodity small, so we reckon little surety to be had of the members without the head.

6. We think, that there be few better means to end the discords and variances of Germany, than the travailing about this league. For if the king our master, and the emperor, do enter with the one party, it is like enough the other will make means not to be left out. For neither Frederick would suffer Maurice to be in, and himself out, nor yet Maurice, nor the Landgrave, remain excluded, if tolerable conditions be offered: as it is like enough there shall be, when men not partial shall be judges thereof, and not themselves.

7. The Germans sending heretofore of their ambassadors into England, to move peace between the king's majesty deceased, and France, may now serve as a good occasion for the king's highness to render unto them the like gratuity. And as this may be a good beginning to the rest, so they, conceiving in us a certain love and affection towards their nation, may, upon friendly motion of this amity, think us fit to be desired and sued unto, to join in this league with them.

8. We think it good, for avoiding of all doubts, if the king's majesty shall send any man to Frankfort, to move the princes to a peace, that the emperor be first made privy, both that his majesty mindeth to send, and for what purpose he sendeth. And forasmuch as the emperor, and King of the Romans, and others, have much travailed to see a concord among the Germans, and as hitherto have not brought it to pass, the thing being so godly, and so to the emperor's benefit as it is, we reckon he must not only take it well, but also yield his thanks unto the king's majesty, who offereth as well to help peace forward in Germany, as he mindeth it between his majesty and France. 1552.

9. In our opinion, the *gerre* in religion will rather further this matter, than hinder it. For while these two are thus divided, they be both so afraid to take harm as they are, and like to refuse safety, if any man would make them offer thereof. The protestants be not so much the stronger, but they may be afraid of practices, the emperor being on the other side. And the papists, being every day spoiled, and afraid of worse, whensoever the emperor shall go his way, would be gladder than the protestants, that such order were taken, as they neither might fear stirrs, nor also fear to lose what they have. This is answered in the fifth. p. 412.

10. For the moving of the matter, we do think John Frederick the fittest man to hear of it first; for as he cannot but like it, so he is better able to devise which ways it may be furthered, than we can. He hath a man, called Frederick, as fit a man as any is, to handle this matter. His master and he might, perhaps, bring it to pass, that the Germans might seek this league at the king's majesty's hand; which were greatly to the king's honour: and they might also entreat the King of Romans unto it. And in case the emperor be either dead, as some think he is, or not fit to be practised withal, then we might think Ferdinando might so be moved by the said Frede-

1552. rick, and others, to this matter, as he should by himself, or by his friends, either seek this league at the king's majesty's hands, or be contented if any overture were made thereof. For Ferdinando shall want these estates, that wealth and riches that the emperor now hath, and therefore more need foreign friendship than the emperor doth.

And if the King of Romans, being spoke unto by Frederick, would think it his part to advertise the emperor hereof, and so should communicate the matter unto him, the emperor should yet but know what the Germans desire. And Frederick might say, the king's motion of him, and others, to peace, made him to devise how he, and the rest of Germany, might declare themselves worthy this his good-will.

It is like that Ferdinando, understanding his brother's estate, will practise what he can, and where he may, to get him all the friendship that is to be gotten. And here, it is to be feared, lest if neither we speak for ourselves, nor none other for us, that he, in this time of practice, may speed himself of such friendship, as he shall think our amity hereafter little needful. He is already allied, by marriage of his daughters, with the Dukes of Bavaire and of Cleves; and now there is a marriage concluded between the King of Pole, and his daughter the duchess of Mantua. He is esteemed a prince of a right and good nature, true of his word, much careful of his honour; and therefore is beloved of protestants and papists. He travailed very much with the emperor at Villache, that the articles of religion might pass, as the protestants did desire: and therefore will not, as we think, much stick to enter into any amity with England, notwithstanding our religion.

And these were the matters the king's ambassadors were doing in Germany; and the advices they gave: which the lords of the council did so approve, that they seemed speedily to resolve upon those measures.



## CHAP. XXI.

p. 413.

The king's ambassadors in France, and to King Ferdinand, and to the emperor. Their access to his presence. Instructions sent them for their proceedings.

IN the mean time, the English ambassadors, commissioners for the mediation in France, Wotton, <sup>1552.</sup> Pickering, and Chaloner, by a letter written May 1, <sup>The French's demands.</sup> gave some account of the demands of the French; which were extravagant. For having conference with the French king, and his council, they found these men loth to seem to make any first offer, before they heard how the other part, viz the emperor, was disposed for a peace. Hence their demands at first were, the duchy of Milan, the county of Ast, the realms of Naples, and Sicily, and Arragon, the superiority of Flanders, and of Artois, the town of Tournay, with the county of Tourneses; the kingdom of Navarre to be restored to the rightful king; and Siena they were content should be set at liberty, as before, free from the subjection of the one and the other. As for Metz, Tul, and Verdune, they challenged nothing but the guard and protection thereof. These demands and offers the ambassadors sent to the lords of the council, to be further used, as their wisdoms should think meet, by their instructions. But these offers for an introduction to the peace, were of such a nature, that the ambassadors with the emperor forbore to open them to that court. For they supposed them to be such, as would marvellously hinder that matter, rather than do any good at all, as they wrote to the lords, as we shall hear more by and by.

Sheres, as was said before, was dispatched ambassador to the King of the Romans, and his son, with instructions tending, as it seems, to make way thereby for a fast friendship with the princes of Germany, and to induce the emperor thereto. These <sup>Instructions for the ambassador to Ferdinand.</sup>

1552. instructions (which were the same in effect with the schedule in the chapter before, sent the council by the ambassadors in the emperor's court) were by the council communicated to the said ambassadors. Wherein they, in their letters, June 4, gave their opinions, that the lords had taken the best way possible to be devised, and chosen the very time that best served to the beginning of that matter; and, as they verily trusted, there should good success follow thereof.

The ambassadors could yet have no answer, by reason of the emperor's sickness.

p. 414.

The emperor still continued indisposed, so that no access of the English ambassadors could be permitted to him. The king thought long of their abode there, without any entry hitherto into the matter they came for, being now the beginning of June; and willed them therefore to use the best means they could conveniently, to obtain the emperor's answer. On the other hand, the ambassadors assured the lords, that it had grieved, and did grieve them not a little, to think how long this delay had lasted, and how impossible it was for them to do more than they had done. For the emperor's sickness, as they shewed, being such, as no man could speak with him, was the continual excuse made by that court to the ambassadors for their delay; so that as fast as they pressed them for answer, they as fast again did entreat them of a little patience, bearing them still in hand, that the emperor himself would needs answer them. Yet should the emperor's council have given in their answer now, the ambassadors said, they could in a manner conjecture what it should be. For they looked to have some overtures out of France, through their (the ambassadors') hands; such as might be an entry to persuade them, that it was like the French king would come to some reason. Whereas those offers above mentioned, that they had received from the king's ambassadors there, were demands, and not such as they thought meet for them to open in particularities, without special commandment from the king's council. Lest that they of the

The French's insolent demands obstruct the mediation.

emperor's council there, receiving at the ambassador's hands such unreasonable demands, instead of offers, and thinking them allowed by the lords of the king's council, and so set forth by them (the ambassadors) by order from the said lords, might take it unkindly, and allege, that the king's majesty tendered not the emperor's honour in this, so much as by their message it was pretended; and thereupon the emperor's council make answer to them (the ambassadors) contrary to the king's majesty's expectation.

The ambassadors added, That they remembered, that before their coming forth, their lordships would not suffer the like matter to be put into the instructions, having considered as much as that came to, upon Pickering's advertisements of the French's like demands.

The council had urged the ambassadors to press for an answer from the emperor, upon this reason, because the ambassadors in France did expect to hear from the emperor's court, now since the French king had once spoken. Upon which the said ambassadors with the emperor wrote to the king's council, That they could not see what they might do more, considering that this the French king's speaking was, as they said, no speaking at all. For that as yet it had not been uttered unto the emperor; and that, in their opinion, it should rather hinder the matter than otherwise, if those demands should be uttered. They proceeded, that it might appear by former letters, wrote May 13, sent to their lordships, wherein was contained their communication with Mons. D'Arras: unto whom they did then indirectly, by circumstances, open a likelihood of the French's offers, as things grounded for honour, to the beginning of a talk, and nothing meant; yet they could not perceive any disposition in him to hear unreasonable matters moved; whereby, they said, they had the more cause to conjecture, that of unreasonable demands, like answer might follow. The conclusion

The ambassadors loth to mention them to the emperor.

1552. was, that seeing the emperor was in that case, that it was most uncertain when they should speak with him; yea, and when they should speak with him, that they should have no other offers than those to make him; they therefore humbly besought the lords to prescribe unto them what they should do; whether they should open to the emperor (or, for lack of him, to the queen) those French offers as they were, or what they should further do in this behalf. For, said they, without order given us from your lordships, we we neither durst, nor dare open these demands.

p. 415.

The emperor mends

About this time came D'Arras to the ambassadors' lodgings, to pray them of a little more patience, telling them, that the gout in the emperor's leg had so fairly left him, that he thought himself almost well: but it was come into his hand, that he could not yet tend any business. Nevertheless, he would surely answer them within a while, to their contentation. The ambassadors made him a courteous answer, wishing the emperor speedy recovery, that they might understand some towardness of the matter they came for.

The ambassadors have audience.

The 8th of June was the day the king's ambassadors had their long-expected audience of the emperor. The manner whereof was as followeth: the same day in the afternoon, about five of the clock, Mons. De Baldemont and Gerard, two of the emperor's council, fetched them from their lodging to the court, where first they had access unto the queen; by whom, after great excuse made of the long delay of their answer, it was told them, that like as the king their master, in travailing on this sort to pacify the present wars, had not only shewed himself a very sincere friend unto the emperor, but also a well-willer of the tranquillity of all christendom, according to the office of a good king: so the emperor, for his part, did not only yield unto his good brother, his most hearty thanks, but also assured them, that whensoever those reasonable conditions were offered, that might appear to tend unto a perfect and unfeigned peace, it should be well known,

The regent speaks to them.



that the emperor did presently no less covet the quiet of all Christendom, than as a good Christian prince should, and as he had ever coveted, and travailed for it. And since the cause of these wars was unknown to the emperor, being begun of the French king in that sort, that all the world knew, it was therefore reason, that the offers also should begin there: or else, said she, let them that had begun, shew what ground they had to begin it, that it might be seen by indifferent men, in whom the fault was: and then look what might, with the emperor's honour, in reason be required; and it should be seen, whether he meant not indeed, as she had now said unto them. And herewith she left that matter, and told them, that they should immediately speak with the emperor himself, and should at his hands perceive, whether this were true or not.

Whereupon she caused them to be led down to the emperor's chamber of presence; from whence, after a little pause, they were brought into his privy chamber. There they found him sitting in a chair, with his feet on a stool, looking very pale, weak, lean, and feeble; howbeit, nothing so ill as they before believed of him: for his eyes were lively enough, and his speech sensible; so that the ambassadors could not tell what to judge of him: for he had escaped so many perils of sickness, that though his colour and his flesh were gone, yet he might, they said, endure a while: yet, to judge him by their sight, they said, that he appeared to them a man of short time of continuance. When the ambassadors came into his presence, and had made their due reverence, they gave the king's commendations to him, and in few words touched the king's majesty's affection to him, and then the cause wherefore they were sent. Whereunto he briefly answered them after this manner: "That he was sorry for their long delay there: but his sickness had been the cause; wherefore he prayed them to bear withal. And for their message he did especially thank the king, his good brother, both for his good affection, which he always found in him, and also for

They come  
into the  
emperor's  
presence.

He answers  
them.  
H.  
p. 416.

1552. his zeal unto the concord and peace of all Christendom, giving him the title of *A good and virtuous king*; shewing himself much pleased, that the king did so earnestly follow this good purpose, so friendly by him taken in hand: assuring them, that upon offer of reasonable conditions, his honour being saved, they should well see how he tendred peace; and praying them to make his most hearty commendations again unto the king, his good brother," the ambassadors took their leave of him, wishing to his majesty strength and long health. All this the ambassadors certified by a letter, dated June 9, sent by Mr. Thomas, clerk of the council, together with other intelligence, which he had in credit from them.

The council's directions to the ambassadors, not to mention the French demands.

By letters from the council, date June 11, the ambassadors, who, as we heard before, desired further directions, whether it were the king's pleasure, that they should open either to the emperor, or the queen, those offers which were made by the French king, or not, were told, that it might have appeared to them by former letters, that they, the council, thought not fit that the said overtures should be opened, neither to the emperor, nor the queen, nor any other; and that the king was still of the same mind, as well for the considerations mentioned in their (the ambassadors') letters, as for certain other. And whereas the council had before wrote unto them of the unlikelihood of further opening on the French part, for such causes as were in their letter contained; their meaning, they said, was not, that they, the ambassadors, should declare those unreasonable demands of the French, but only to set forth to them, that they should take occasion, as soon as they might, to do the message they had first from them, the king's council.

The French remain high in their terms.

The French still remained high in their terms, and shewed no good disposition towards an accord with the emperor, but only in words: for the council, by the king's commandment, had written to Dr. Wotton, and the rest at the French court, to use the best means they could to get some further knowledge, and to

assay whether it might be obtained to have any other conditions propounded in France. But, as they signified to the ambassadors with the emperor, they had no great hope to receive any answer more certain than before. And therefore now, by a letter writ June 11, they instructed the said ambassadors, that they might, as they should see convenient time, proceed according to their instructions. And that if any overtures more reasonable should be propounded, then they might further go on, according to his majesty's former charge committed unto them.

1552.

The ambassadors with the emperor, after their audience, soon wrote to the king's commissioners with the French king, declaring what answer the emperor had given them; exhorting them, that they should move that king as earnestly as they could devise, to come to the offer of some reasonable conditions, or at least such as were void of extremities, and the which might induce some treaty by their friends toward a concord. To this the council also urged the said commissioners. And by this plain proceeding with the French king, the council did think (and so they wrote June 20, to the ambassadors at Brussels) their commissioners should either have occasion given to enter further into the matter, or some such other resolute answer, as might determine both their ambassades.

Urged by  
the ambas-  
sadors to  
propound  
other  
terms.

p. 417.

The king being now near his end, and in the daily increase of his sickness, which by this time grew very extreme upon him, yet such was his generous and Christian disposition, that he was very earnest in this his mediation for peace, as though he desired to see Christendom at quiet before his death. And these were the last steps I find made in this business. After the king's ambassadors had been with the French king, soliciting for more reasonable offers, that might shew him well affected to peace, he, in fine, gave them such answers as little tended to the proceeding to a treaty. Nevertheless, the emperor was again addressed to, by the ambassadors at his court; who now shewed him plainly what the French's demands

1553.  
The king's  
progress in  
his media-  
tion.

1553. were : but they were instructed to soften the roughness of them, by esteeming it only as a practice formerly used in the entry into these kind of debates, wherein commonly more was demanded than was expected to be granted, being intended chiefly to introduce discourse. But, however these things succeeded, the ambassadors were ordered to assure the emperor of the king's most hearty affection to him and his affairs, and of his care for the good estate of Christendom. But the council's letters to these ambassadors will shew all this business more distinctly ; which I will set down at length in this place, being writ the 1st of July, that is, but six days before the good king's death.

The council unto the ambassadors with the emperor.  
Galba,  
B. 12.

“ After our hearty commendations. Upon the receipt of your letters of this last month, by the which you declared unto us the answer made unto you by the emperor, upon your access unto him, we sent unto you the king's majesty's commissioners, being in France, to proceed again with the French king in the matter of peace, and by some means to procure more reasonable demands ; upon the which some kind of entry might be taken to treat thereof. For which purpose we gave them certain knowledge of the emperor's answer unto the French king ; whereby it might be seen, both how the emperor was disposed to a peace, and yet, nevertheless, without some particular overture of the French king's behalf, not minded to enter any further talk of the matter. This message is done by our ambassadors, and answer received from the French king ; such as do little further the proceeding to a treaty. And yet it seemeth convenient, for the honour of the king's majesty, and for demonstration of his earnest meaning in this travail, to proceed further with the emperor by your means.

“ And first, Touching the answer made by the French king, because ye shall both certainly and plainly understand as we do, we send herewith a



copy of such part of the ambassadors' letters, as appertaineth thereunto. Upon consideration whereof, the king's majesty thinketh it convenient, that ye should seek access unto the emperor, and after recommendation from his majesty, declare the very troth and proceedings of the matter, as followeth: First, That the king's majesty's ministers with the French king, had such answer from him in their first motion for the peace, that although the French king declared himself to have good will to a peace, yet his demands were so great, and in such extremities, as the king our master thought it not expedient, for the furtherance of the matter, to open the same demands unto the emperor: but as one that meant indifferently in these extremities, to obtain that which he desired, that was, the peace betwixt both, the prince forbore the utterance of that which he thought impertinent to the end, and sought only occasion of some entry unto a treaty. And now having caused his ministers with the French king to proceed again unto some more reasonable articles, or matters of treaty, they find the former disposition in the French king to appear for the weal of Christendom; and yet they find him still to rest so upon his former demands, as he looked for answer to be had thereof before he will fashion any new matters. So as the king's majesty hereupon is, as it were, forced, for the earnest desire he hath to see some fruit of his travail, to open unto his said good brother the emperor, both the fashion of the French king's answer from time to time, and the cause that moved his majesty to abstain from the opening thereof before. 1553. p. 418.

"This done, if the emperor require it, or that you shall see it otherwise convenient, ye may declare unto him the particularities of the first demands of the French king, as heretofore ye have been advertised from hence; and as you, Mr. Hoby, have indirectly opened heretofore to Mons. D'Arras. After the which declared, ye may add, for the salving of the strangeness of the demands, that although the king's

1553. majesty, our master, taketh the same demands to be very strange ; yet calling to remembrance, that heretofore between princes being in debates, and coming towards treaties of peace, it hath been often used, that in the beginning, to enter in communication of like matters, there hath been in outward appearance, and in the first speech, larger and more ample demands made, than have been meant, either of one part to obtain, or of the other to grant; offering thereby occasion only of talk: as in this case it may please the emperor to interpret it; the king's majesty thinketh it not unlikely so to proceed of the French king. And therefore his majesty desireth his good brother to take this his travail and plainness in good part; and to assure himself, that what means soever may be devised towards the proceeding and perfection of this beginning, his majesty will not refuse to shew himself, as he hath hitherto done, both careful of the common estate of Christendom, and always well willing to have the affairs of his good brother in like consideration as his own.

“ In this manner, as ye see occasion, either dilate or strengthen the proceedings in speech, so as you observe two things; the one, that the king's majesty's affection towards the having of this peace, may appear to continue as it hath been from the beginning uttered: the other is, that if you see likelihood of peace to follow, that the king's majesty's former travail be not made frustrate, by other intermeddling herein; but that his majesty may have both the ameyning of the matters, and be therein, for his own part, provided as becometh. If you shall see no likelihood of peace, then it shall be well done to procure such resolution and answer, as may be an occasion for your return, upon advertisement first made hither to us, the honour of the king's majesty, and the continuance of amity with the emperor, therein provided.

“ And until answer hereof be had from you, the commissioners with the French king remain, as it

were, unoccupied, &c. And so we bid you heartily farewel, from Greenwich, the 1st of July, 1553. 1553.

<i>Tho. Cant.</i>	<i>W. Northampt.</i>	<i>R. Cotton.</i>
<i>Tho. Ely, Canc.</i>	<i>F. Huntingdon.</i>	<i>J. Gates.</i>
<i>Winchester.</i>	<i>Pembroke,</i>	<i>W. Petre.</i>
<i>Northumberland.</i>	<i>Ed. Clynton.</i>	<i>W. Cecyl.</i>
<i>J. Bedford.</i>	<i>G. Cobham.</i>	<i>Joh. Cheke.</i>
<i>H. Suffolk.</i>	<i>R. Ryche.</i>	<i>Ed. North.</i>
<i>Arundel.</i>	<i>T. Cheyne.</i>	<i>Ro. Bowes."</i>
<i>F. Shresbury.</i>	<i>Darcy.</i>	

By the number of subscribers, we may conclude the court was now full ; partly to see what the end of the king's sickness would be ; and partly obliged, no doubt, by Northumberland, to be present at the new settlement that was now making of the crown, after the king's decease, into his family. That so all the council, and best of the nobility, might be dipped in it, that it might be the firmer. A great court now, and why.

In this mediation nothing more was done, nor likely to be done, the Bishop of Norwich and Sir Richard Morison coming home, and the king's death preventing. Nor do I find any other orders after this, proceeding from the council to these ambassadors, but only one by a letter written to Hoby (left there ledger) three days before the king's death, concerning a *foul and most cruel piracy*, as it is there called, done upon the sea by some of the emperor's subjects. The council sent withal a supplication, and certain other writings, exhibited unto them, the council, by certain merchants of London, that were the sufferers ; which papers shewed the manner of doing it at length. One whereof the council took particular notice of, as they writ, " That although the rest of the circumstances made the thing strange, yet this made it to be most strange, that the piracy should be committed by such a fleet, having among them an admiral, a man of name and reputation," &c. They therefore desired Hoby to employ his accustomed wisdom and dexterity, in such sort, as the A foul and cruel piracy committed upon the English.

1553. merchants might have a just and large recompence, or restitution, of their ships and goods, and other things taken from them.

Ambassadors ordinary in France, and with the emperor.

The king's ambassadors also with the French king had orders to come home the very beginning of July, viz. Dr. Wotton and Sir William Pickering; little advance towards a treaty between that king and the emperor, being like to succeed by their mediation: and as Hoby was left the king's ambassador ordinary with the emperor, so Sir Thomas Chaloner was left in the same quality in France. And a letter, dated July 2, was sent to that king in commendation of the said Sir Thomas, for his placing in that room.

p. 420.

## CHAP. XXII.

Orders for subscription to the Articles of Religion; and for the teaching and learning of the Catechism set forth by the king's authority. Irish matters. The Duke of Northumberland. The Lady Mary's letter to the king. Divers great matches. The king's gift to London, &c. The king's death. His last will. His funeral. His character.

**B**UT now to return into the king's dominions, and look upon things nearer home.

The king's command to the bishops, for requiring subscription to the Articles of Religion;

Some of the good king's last consultations for the state of religion was, his care that the Articles of the true doctrine of religion, lately framed, should be subscribed to by the bishops, and by all such as should take holy orders, or officiate in the church, either in reading or preaching, or that enjoyed any benefices: and that a book should be kept in the bishop's register for that purpose, as a record: and that any that refused to subscribe to them, should not be admitted by the bishop to any orders, or ecclesiastical ministry. And that such as scrupled to subscribe, for lack of the right knowledge and understanding of any of them, the bishop by instruction and conference should endeavour to inform them, allowing them about six weeks' time for deliberation: otherwise to disable them from enjoying any preferment in the church.



And this seems to be the first time that subscription 1553.  
to the Articles was enjoined.

And having likewise lately set forth a Catechism, And for teaching the Catechism.  
by his royal authority, for all youth that went to school, to be taught, in order to their bringing up in God's favour, and in the knowledge of true religion, with a commandment to all schoolmasters to teach it accordingly: the king enjoined the bishop to visit yearly every school in his respective diocese, and to inquire how the said Catechism was duly taught, and all scholars learned the same. And certificate to be sent from the bishop to the archbishop, of any offences committed against this order, from time to time. Letters from the king, dated from Greenwich, in June, for this purpose, I shall set down (and the rather, because none of our church historians take notice of it) being exemplified from that sent to Ridley, Bishop of London.

“ Right reverend Father in God, right trusty and well-beloved, We greet you well. And bycause it Registr. Ridley, p. 297.  
hath pleased Almighty God, in this latter time of the world, after long darkness of knowledge, to revele to this his Church of England, whereof we have, under Christ, the chief charge in earth, a sincere knowledge of the gospel, to the inestimable benefit of us and our people, redeemed by our Saviour Christ; we have thought it meet, and our duty (for the pure conservation of the same gospel in our church, with one uniform profession, doctrin, and preaching, and for the avoiding of many perillous and vain opinions, and errors) to send unto you certain Articles, devised and gathered with great study, and by counsel and good advice of the greatest learned part of our bishops of this realm, and sundry others of our clergy; which articles, we will, and exhort yourself to subscribe, and in your preachings, and readings, and teachings, to observe; and caused to be subscribed and observed of all others, which do, or hereafter shall preach, teach, or read within your diocese. And if any person or per-

p. 121.

1553. sons, having benefice within your diocese, shall from henceforth not only refuse wilfully to set their hands to these articles, but also obstinately exhort their parochians to withstand the same, and teach the people in any contrary way, our pleasure is, that being duly proved, ye shall advertise us, or our council, of the whole matter fully: to the intent, that such further order may, by direction from us and our said council, be taken, as the cause shall require, and shall stand with justice, and the order of our laws.

“ And further, that when, and as often as ye shall have any manner of person presented to you, to be advaunced by you, as the ordinary, to any ecclesiastical order, ministry, office, or cure, within your diocese, ye shall, before ye admit him, confer with him in every these articles; and finding him thereto consenting, to cause him to subscribe the same, in one ledger-book to be formed for that purpose; which may remain as a register for a record; and to let him have a copy of the same articles. And if any man in that case shall refuse to consent to any of the said articles, and to subscribe the same, then we will and command you, that neither you, nor any for you, or by your procurancie in any wise, shall admit him, or allow him, as sufficient and meet to take any orders, ministry, or ecclesiastical cure. For which your so doing, we shall discharge you from all manner of penalties, or danger of actions, suits, or pleas of *premunire*, *quare impedit*, or such like. And yet our meaning is, that if any party refuse to subscribe any of these articles, for lack of learning, or knowledge of the truth thereof, ye shall in any wise, by teaching, conference, and proof of the same by the scriptures, reasonably and discreetly move and persuade him thereto, before ye shall peremptorily judge him as unable, and a recusant. And for the trial of his conformity, ye shall, according to your discretion, prefix him a time and space convenient to deliberate, and give his consent: so it be betwixt three weeks

and six weeks from the time of his first access unto you. And if after six weeks he will not consent and agree willingly to subscribe, then ye may, and lawfully shall, in any wise refuse to admit or enable him. 1553.

“ And where there is of late, by our authority, set forth a Catechism for the instruction of young scholars in the fear of God, and true knowledge of his holy religion, with express commandment from us to all schoolmasters, to teach and instruct scholars the said Catechism: making it the beginning and first (entry) of their teaching in the schools; our pleasure is, that for the better execution of our said commandment, you shall yearly (at the least) once visit, or cause to be visited, every school within your said diocese. In which visitation it shall be required, both how the schoolmaster of every such school hath used himself in the teaching of the said Catechism; and also how the scholars do receive and follow the same: making plain and full certificate of the offenders contrary to this order, and of their several offences, to the archbishop of the province, within three months, from time to time, after every such offence. Yeven under our signet, at our manor of Greenwich, the 9th day of June, in the seventh year of our reign.” p. 422.

This Catechism I conclude to be the Church Catechism, joined now ordinarily with our Common Prayer, for the printing of which John Day had the king's license in the month of March before: as likewise he had from Queen Elizabeth afterwards. Warrant Book.

In the month of May were many letters written from the king to divers, and the chief of the Irish nobility: what the contents thereof were, I do not learn: but if I take it right, the intention thereof seems to be, by promises of pardon, and fair words, either to reduce them to obedience, or to keep them from making disquiet in that realm. These letters, all of one date, viz. May 13th, were to the Earl of Letters to the Irish lords.

1553. Tyrone, to the Bishop of Done and Dromore; to O Hanlon, lord of Oriet; to Mac Donel, captain of the Galloglas; to Maculyn, to Ochan, to Magwyre, lord of Farmannagh; to John O-nel, the Earl of Tyrone's son; to Molmor Oraylie, lord of Breffyn, and to Hugh Macnellog, lord of Clanaboy.

Northum-  
berland's  
grants.

DUDLEY, the great Duke of Northumberland, now bore all the sway at court, and in effect did what he listed. This year, besides the county palatine of Durham (the honour and power of which was like to fall to him) the king gave him Bernard's Castle there, with very great additions of lands and lordships in that county, and in Northumberland. He was also now made high steward of all the honours, castles, manors, lordships and lands, in the counties of Cumberland, Northumberland, Westmorland and York, or any otherwhere in the bishopric of Durham for life. He had also granted to him the manors of Feckenham, Bromesgrove, King's Norton, in Worcester-shire, with many other lands. The year before, he was made chief steward of the East Riding of York, and of all the king's lordship in Holdernes and Cottingham in the said county. The year before that, he was constituted general warden or keeper of the marches of England towards Scotland, namely, of the East, West, and Middle Marches; which were scarcely before put into one man's hand (except the Marquis of Dorset, immediately before him) and he to appoint his deputy wardens. And his patent was ordered to be drawn up in the most large and comprehensive manner, enduing him with as much authority, power, pre-eminence, commodity, and liberty, as any before him had enjoyed from Richard the Second's time, to Henry the Eighth, as the warrant ran. Besides these things in the North, he obtained of the king great and spreading demesns in Somersetshire, Warwick, and Worcestershire, and many other counties.

p. 423.

So that by this time the duke had prodigiously enriched himself, and made himself formidably great,



by lands and lordships, honours and offices, castles, and places of trust, heaped upon him by the king; to whom it was not safe to deny him any thing he asked. He had strengthened his interest also by raising himself friends upon the king's cost, as more especially, the Lord Clinton, and Sir John Gates, and his brother, Sir Andrew Dudley, master of the wardrobe, and taken into the order of the garter, and his own sons, Ambrose, raised to the degree of Earl of Warwick, and master of the king's horse, Sir Robert Dudley made a lord, and the king's carver, and Guilford Dudley, whom the duke was now marrying to one of the royal blood, viz. the Lady Jane, eldest daughter of the Duke of Suffolk.

1553.  
The Duke  
of North-  
umber-  
land's  
greatness.

This present juncture was an extraordinary busy time with him. For finding the king declining apace in his health, (which some thought himself the instrument of) his ambitious mind drew him to make his advantage hereof, and to advance his family to reign: which he did by suggesting to the king the danger of the true religion, which he had so carefully reformed and established, if his sister Mary should succeed, who was wholly popish: advising him therefore, that he should by his express will exclude her, and make a settlement of the crown upon the family of the Greys, married into the royal blood: a daughter whereof, one of his sons had lately wedded. The courtiers saw Northumberland's designs, and many of them did but coldly espouse the business, and were not as careful in the matter as himself: which he expected they should be, out of their unfeigned concern for religion, and the safety of the realm, which he much talked of, and pretended. And having occasion in the beginning of May to write to Secretary Cecyl, then retired into the country upon pretence of being sick of an ague, but, perhaps, more truly sick of Northumberland's project, he lamented to him the great negligence of many in the court in *those*, as he called them, *most dangerous days*: "And that neither zeal, nor the consideration of

Northum-  
berland's  
cares for  
the realm.

K.

1558 the time, could scarcely awake them, and smoothly winked all cares from their hearts. And that he could illy bear them; such was his duty to the state, as he plausibly writ, like a very careful statesman." But of another of his cares, perhaps, now was, that in the beginning of this May the king was in a probability of restoration to his health. For he now seemed to amend and grow better, and the physicians made no doubt of his thorough recovery: and the rather, because the king was now resolved to follow their directions, which he was not so inclinable to do before. This, Northumberland said, he was sure would comfort the secretary; and that the news of it, two or three mornings one after another, being brought him by the physicians, revived his spirits. Nevertheless, all this surely was but a copy of his countenance; or if he were in earnest, it was because the king might live to have his aforesaid designed settlement of the crown confirmed by parliament; which was soon after called for that purpose, and should have sat, had the king lived.

The king  
mends.

The Lady  
Mary  
writes a  
congratu-  
latory  
letter to  
him here-  
upon.

p. 424.  
MSS. G.  
Petyt. Ar-  
mig.

And the king's growing better, together with a present he had sent his sister Mary, caused her to write to him a congratulatory letter, as little doubting now a perfect recovery, which ran in this tenor:

"MY duty most humbly remembered unto your majesty. It may please the same to be advertised, that as the hearing of your highness's late rheum-cough, was to me as much grief as ever was any thing, even so the hope which I have conceived, since I received your majesty's last token by my servant, hath been not a little to my comfort. Praying Almighty God, as according to my bounden duty, to give your majesty perfect health and strength, with long continuance in prosperity to reign. Beseeching your highness to pardon this my bold and rude writing. And if in the same I do trouble your majesty at this present, as I hope I do not, that then my humble duty and nature, which enforced me

thereunto, may excuse my default. Thus most humbly taking my leave of your majesty, I do, and shall daily pray for the prosperous preservation of your most royal state, as of all others I am most bound. From Beaulieu, the xvi of May, scribled with a rude hand. 1553.

Your majesty's most humble sister,  
MARYE."

Now therefore having the great game of all to play, to bring the crown into his family, the duke thought of securing the Tower. Sir John Gage, the present constable of the Tower, being now absent, either by sickness, or some other cause, Sir James Croft, one of this duke's confidants, was appointed to be Gage's deputy in his absence, in order to laying him quite aside. And in May instructions were sent by the king to Sir James Croft, and Sir Edward Warner, lieutenant of the Tower, for their proceedings, touching the good order to be kept there. And a warrant was sent to the treasurer of the Augmentations, to pay the said Sir James, deputy constable of the Tower, 40*s.* by the day, for thirty men appointed under him: and to Sir Edward Warner, 8*d.* a day apiece for ten men. And in the same month of May, orders were given to Clinton, lord admiral, for the discharging of several bulwarks and fortifications, as those at East and West Tilbury, Sandshot in Dorsetshire, the Bulwark of Higham, and those of Gravesend and Milton in Kent, and the powder and munition in them to be removed to the Tower, for the better guard thereof. And in the same month of May a license was given to the Lord Warwick, and to the Lord Robert Dudley, two of the duke's sons, the one to retain an hundred men, and the other fifty.

A deputy  
constable  
of the  
Tower  
made.

In the next month, viz. June, a third secretary of state was appointed (a thing scarce known before) viz. Sir John Cheek: whose love and zeal to religion made him safe to the interest of the Lady Jane. A new  
secretary.

1553. And a gift was added to him and his heirs, of Clare in Suffolk, with other lands, to the yearly value of 100*l*. And in the same month was sent to the lord admiral a letter, to take charge of the Tower, and enter upon the government thereof. And another letter was sent to the lieutenant, to assist the said lord admiral in all things, as should be by the said lord declared to him, and to observe such directions as he should appoint. And another letter, dated June 30th, revoking Sir James Croft from the charge of the oversight and order of the Tower, and to permit the said Lord Clinton, to whom the king had appointed the chief order, rule, and safe custody of the same.

Lord Clinton made constable of the Tower.

p. 425.

Preparations for certain great matches.

And a little before this time, were great preparations making for the match (which was celebrated in May) of the Lady Jane with Guilford, Northumberland's son, and some other marriages, that were to accompany that; as the Earl of Pembroke's eldest son with the Lady Catharine, the Duke of Suffolk's second daughter, and the Earl of Huntingdon's eldest son, with the Duke of Northumberland's youngest daughter: and another of the said duke's near relations (his brother, I think) Sir Andrew Dudley, was likewise matched near the same time, with Margaret Clifford, the Earl of Cumberland's daughter. And for the more solemnity and splendor of this day, the master of the wardrobe had divers warrants to deliver out of the king's wardrobe much rich apparel and jewels. As, to deliver to the Lady Frances, Duchess of Suffolk, to the Duchess of Northumberland, to the Lady Marchioness of Northampton, to the Lady Jane, daughter to the Duke of Suffolk, and to the Lord Guilford Dudley, for wedding apparel (which were certain parcels of tissues, and cloth of gold and silver, which had been the late duke's and duchess's of Somerset, forfeited to the king) and to the Lady Catharine, daughter to the said Duke of Suffolk, and the Lord Herbert, for wedding apparel, and to the Lord Hastings and Lady Catharine, daughter to the



Duke of Northumberland, for wedding apparel, certain parcels of stuff and jewels. Dated from Greenwich, the 24th of April. A warrant also there came to the wardrobe, to deliver to the king's use, for the finishing certain chairs for his majesty, six yards of green velvet, and six yards of green satin: another, to deliver to the Lady Mary's grace, his majesty's sister, a table diamond, with pearl pendant at the same: and to the Duchess of Northumberland, one square tablet of gold, enamelled black, with a clock, late parcels of the Duchess of Somerset's jewels. And lastly, another warrant to Sir Andrew Dudley, to take for the Lady Margaret Clifford, daughter of the Earl of Cumberland, and to himself, for their wedding apparel, sundry silks and jewels: this last warrant bearing date June 8th. 1552.

The king, but the month before his death, gave a most royal and exemplary charity to the city of London, for the better maintenance of their poor all sorts: for in June there was an indenture made between the king's majesty and the mayor, commonalty, and citizens of London, "Witnessing, that the king's majesty hath given and granted to the said maior and commonalty, and their successors for ever, towards the maintenance of the poor and impotent people, all his manor-house and place of Bridewell, with the appurtenances, lying or being in the parish of S. Bridget, in Fleet-street, London, with divers other lands, &c.; with a license unto them for to purchase 4000 mark land, for the use abovesaid; besides the lands given them by his majesty in London, and elsewhere. And also his majesty covenanteth, That they shall purchase so much land as they are afore licensed, besides the fees and pensions granted by the king's letters patents, to the officers that shall serve in any of the hospitals. And his majesty covenanteth, That as well the lands given by his highness as those that they shall purchase, shall be clearly quitted and discharged against his majesty, his heirs and successors for ever, of all tenths and first-fruits, and of all and

The king's  
charitable  
gift to the  
city.  
Warrant  
Book.

Bridewell.  
Council  
Book.

1553. singular sums of money, for or in the name of a tenth, or yearly tenth part, or in the name of first-fruits: and that they may make godly and wholesome ordinances, statutes, and rules, for the good governance of the poor. And it shall be lawful for them, within the city of London, and county of Middlesex, to search and examine, by all ways and means, all manner of suspicious houses, as taverns, ale-houses, and such like, gaming and diceing-houses, dancing-schools, tennis-plays, bowling-allies, and such other like suspect places, for ruffians, vagabonds, and idle persons, and masterless. And further, his majesty hath granted unto them to do, and suffer to be done, all thing and things, be it by letters patents, acts of parliament, confirmation, or otherways, for the more assurance of the premisses, as by their learned council shall be devised:” as it ran *verbatim* in the Council Manuscript Book, which I often make use of; and I do here the rather specify it, because perhaps this original indenture may have been consumed in the great conflagration, with other of the hospital’s writings and muniments. In the same manuscript, a note of the gift is set down in these words: “A gift unto the said maior, &c. of the manor, chief messuage, tene-ment, and house, called Bridewell, and divers other lands, to the yearly value of 450*l*.” And besides this house of Bridewell, he gave the city, for their poor, the Grey Friars, now called Christ’s Church, and St. Thomas’s Hospital, in Southwark.

For a new  
parlia-  
ment.

In this month of June, a warrant was issued to the lord chancellor, to make out writs for a parliament, to be holden the 18th of September.

A convoca-  
tion sum-  
moned.

And the archbishop had more good work upon the anvil to do for religion and the church, had the king lived and he remained in place: for, June 19, a command came from the king to the archbishop for holding a convocation. And accordingly the archbishop issued out his letters of order to Ridley, Bishop of London, for a convocation to be held in St. Paul’s, September 19 ensuing. The archbishop’s said letters

Regist.  
Rid.

were dated July 3; and Bishop Ridley issued out his letters, bearing date July 6, which were not executed, the king dying that day. But by the way, this makes it plain that Ridley, however he was in design, was never actually Bishop of Durham; because the very last day of the king's life, he styled himself in the said letters, *Nicolaus, miseratione divina, London. Episcopus.* 1553.

This year Coverdale set forth another edition of the Holy Bible, intituled, "The whole Bible of the Old and New Testament, faithfully translated into English, by Miles Coverdale: And newly overseen and correct, M.D.LIII. 2 Thes. 3. 'Pray for us, that the Word of God may have free passage, and be glorified.' Set forth with the King's most gracious license."—The epistle dedicatory was to the king; and M. Coverdale had an epistle also there to the Christian reader. A new edition of the Bible.

And a licence of privilege was granted unto John Day, printer, for the printing a Catechism in English, with the brief of an A B C thereunto annexed; and also for the printing and re-printing of all such works and books, as were devised and compiled by the Right Reverend Father in God, John, now Bishop of Winton; and by Thomas Becon, Professor of Divinity: so that no such books, nor any part of them, be in any wise repugnant to the holy scriptures, or the proceedings in religion and the laws of the realm. The Catechism. The books of Bishop Ponet, and Becon. p. 427. This licence was dated at Westminster, March 25.

A licence also was indulged to Richard Tothel, printer, to print all manner of books of the common law of this realm, for seven years: so as the first copies thereof be allowed by one of the justices of the law, or two serjeants, or three apprentices of the law, whereof one to be a reader in the court, &c. Licence for printing law-books.

And Thomas Sternhold, one of the king's servants, set forth his Psalms; being a collection of some of David's Psalms, which he, for his own private entertainment, had composed into English verse, and set them to tunes, and had sung and played by himself, Sternhold's Psalms.

1553. for his own godly solace. These gave the young king, sometimes overhearing them, much pleasure; which was the reason of Sternhold's dedicating them to the king, though they seemed not to be published till after his death. His book was intituled, "All such Psalms of David as Tho. Sternhold, late Groom of the King's Majesty's Robes, did in his Life-time draw into English Meetre."

The king's  
sales this  
year.

The king's sales this last year of his reign, besides what were set down before, were as follow:

## IN MARCH.

£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.
1072	13	5 ob.	236	10	4

## IN APRIL.

704	13	9	190	16	0
1554	12	1	1709	29	8
234	8	0	1406	10	1
980	17	0	388	17	1
615	10	1	1440	7	2
1330	0	0	395	6	8
1161	19	5	303	18	7
1334	19	6	756	1	5 ob.
893	6	7	1736	13	7 ob.
3102	7	0 ob. q.	3302	6	8
1681	13	7	585	16	0
1717	8	4			

## IN MAY.

1989	6	8	1072	13	5 ob.
435	4	5	735	17	1
301	5	0	1608	14	0 ob.
949	7	3	630	7	6
1797	7	9	1926	3	9 ob.
783	8	2	718	8	8
1049	9	4	1402	13	1 ob.
589	6	0	270	0	0
497	11	8	4221	11	5
564	14	11 ob.	773	0	4
727	3	7	3972	9	4 ob.
531	0	0			



## IN JUNE.

1553.  
p. 428.

£.	s.	d.	£.	s.	d.
2132	3	9	1382	3	0 <i>ob. q.</i>
126	6	4	687	6	6
414	18	4	1491	7	1
733	12	6	81	13	4
775	19	0 <i>ob.</i>	362	3	2
834	14	3	442	15	2
212	17	10	1951	14	9 <i>ob.</i>
307	4	2	1704	0	4
3708	11	9	436	12	7
699	18	1	303	18	7
1667	0	0	510	13	10
615	14	10 <i>ob.</i>	1108	15	0
129	7	11	1928	4	3
125	0	0	366	13	4
1119	13	4	1095	6	8

IN JULY . . . 500 15 7 *ob.*

These were the distinct sums of money for the several purchases of the king's lands, sold by the commissioners in the months before said, besides many other, which the king parted with of free gift.

The mouths of the common people were now full of murmurings, upon the king's continual wasting sickness, and many forbore not to talk broadly against some, of using unfair ways for dispatching the king out of the world, on whom condign vengeance was taken; and, June 30, a young fellow was whipped cruelly, by a new invention, for *pretended visions, and opprobrious and seditious words*: which, very probably, were about the king's sickness, and against the Duke of Northumberland's practices, and the putting by the king's two sisters from succeeding to the crown. The invention was this: A post was set up by the standard in Cheap, to which he was tied, with a collar of iron about his neck, fastened to a chain, and that chain fastened to the post; and two men, with two whips, whipping him about the said post.

1553.  
Frequent  
reports of  
the king's  
death.  
N. Battely.

It was wonderful also to think how frequent the reports flew about, that the king was dead, some months before his death happened; as though there were some ground for the fame. The Council Book mentions the several times when examinations were had of these reports, and the persons that spread them: Anno 1553, April 22, one Bodynham; April 26, Alice Hill; May 5, a man and two women; May 21, Christopher Moor, and three others; May 27, John Saunders; were examined, and convicted, and punished, by order of the council, for reports concerning the king's death, and the like lewd speeches.

The king's  
sickness  
and death.

The last winter the king fell sick of a cough, which brought him into a consumption of the lungs; and so he lingered, and grew worse and worse: yet sometimes there seemed to appear great hope of his recovery; as there did in May, whercof the Duke of Northumberland, in a letter to Secretary Cecyl, wrote with seeming great joy, as was shewed before; till July 6, when he piously left an earthly crown for an heavenly.

p. 429.  
Suspected  
to be by  
poison.  
Vitellius,  
F. 5.

That he died by poison, would not out of the people's minds and mouths; as may appear by what I find in a Journal kept by one in those times, where the king's death is thus by him set down, soon after Queen Mary's coming to the crown: "July 6, deceased the noble King Edward VI. in the seventh of his reign. And he was poisoned, as every body saith. Where now, thanks be to God, there be many of the traitors brought to their end! and, I trust God, more shall follow, as they shall be spied out." And the like seemeth to be hinted at in Gabriel Harvey's *Musarum Lacrymæ*; where, occasionally speaking of King Edward's death, he thus expresseth it:

————— Morbo tabescens aurea proles:  
Pulmonem absumptum medici dixere. Quid ad nos?

Whether  
poisoned.

This report of King Edward's being poisoned ran abroad, not only through this nation, but into other countries; and papists soon took it up, and made

1555.

their use of it, to reproach the Reformation. So did Osorius, Bishop of Sylva, in the kingdom of Portugal, in his letter wrote to Queen Elizabeth, soon after her access to the crown, affirming expressly, That that king was heinously poisoned in his childhood. But he that was his answerer, a grave and knowing man, Dr. Walter Haddon, that knew very much of the matters of the court, and those times, being himself a courtier, esteemed this report to be but a fable, raised by idle people, and carried about by such as favoured popery. For these are his words in answer to this rumour, which he wrote near twenty years after, and might then be supposed to speak the truth without fear: "Can you, being a Portugal born, so impudently defame our region with that horrible crime, without all likely or probable proof, now that twenty years be spent and gone, when as no sober or discreet English man did ever conceive any such thought in his mind? The physicians reported, that he died of a consumption: the same was affirmed by the grooms of his privy chamber, which did keep continual watch with the sick king. All his subjects did believe it for a confessed truth; neither could your slanderous fable have been blown abroad, but among tattling women, foolish children, and such malicious English losells, like unto you. Nor yet could this rotten, unsavoury cavil have had any discreet author, had it not been whispered into the ears of Osorius."

Fol. 27.

The king's death was reported divers days before it happened, the reporters being chiefly his enemies; and the reports thereof fled beyond the seas, nay, even when there were hopes conceived of his recovery: for so, it seems, they had, but six days before his departure. For the allaying of which rumours, the council wrote to the ambassadors abroad, who could not tell what to think of it themselves; "That because they thought the lewdness of some sort of men, both here at home and abroad, was such, as either for lightness, or for contentation of their own malice, made evil, false reports of the king's estate

Reported  
to be dead  
divers days  
before.

1553. (which God preserve), they did assure them, That, thanked be God, his Majesty was alive, whatsoever evil men did write or spread abroad; and, as they trusted and wished, his estate and towardness of recovery out of his sickness, should shortly appear, to the comfort of all good men. Of which matter they assured them, as well for their own (the said ambassadors) satisfaction, as for the answer of others."—  
 p. 430. This was writ July 1, from Greenwich.

But, eight days after, a letter of a sadder accent came from the same council to Sir Philip Hoby, to this tenor:

The council report the king's death to Hoby, the ambassador.

"After our hearty commendations. We must needs be sorry at that which cometh both from us, and goeth to you, with such extreme sorrow, as the like never passed under these our hands. But such is the almighty will of God in all his creatures, that his order in time may not be by us resisted. In one word, we must tell you a great heap of infelicity: God hath called out of this world our Sovereign Lord, the 6th of this month, towards night: whose manner of death was such, toward God, as assureth us, that his soul is in place of eternal rest. His disease whereof he died, was of the putrefaction of the lungs, being utterly uncurable of this evil. For the importance we advertise you, knowing it to have most comfort to have been thereof ignorant. And the same ye may take time to defer to the emperor, as from us, who know assuredly, that his majesty will sorrow and condole with us, for the departure and loss of a prince of that excellency, and so dear a brother and friend; not doubting but that his majesty will have in remembrance the antient amity that hath been always betwixt their ancestors. For consideration whereof, ye shall assure him, that there shall not be any thing lacking on our parts, but all readiness to observe and maintain the same. And so we wish to us all the comfort of God's Spirit in all adversities. July 8, 1553."



Of the king's last will and testament, whereby he excluded his two sisters from the crown, and preferred the heirs of the Duke of Suffolk, enough is said in other historians. But as to the other points of his last will, it may not be an unnecessary search to inquire after them. Some satisfaction may be had herein, from a certain paper which I have seen, and hereunder inserted a copy of, as I transcribed it from a manuscript of Secretary Peter's own hand, being a rough draught taken by him from the king's mouth, intituled,

1553.  
Some part  
of his last  
will.

*To be contained in my last will, as parcel thereof:*

“ *First*, That during the young years of any of my heirs or successors, my executors shall not agree to enter into any wars, except upon occasion of invasion to be made by enemies: nor, to the best of their powers, shall suffer any quarrels to be unjustly pyked by our subjects, whereby any new war may ensue.

MSS. G.  
P. Armig.

“ *Seconde*, Our said executors shall not suffer any piece of religion to be altered. And they shall diligently travail to cause godly ecclesiastical laws to be made and set forth, such as may be agreeable with the reformation of religion received within our realm; and that done, shall also cause the canon laws to be abolished.

“ *Thirdly*, Our said executors shall not only follow the devices already begun and agreed upon for the payment of our debts, but also by other good means devise for the speedy payment of our said debts.

“ *Fourthly*, They shall consider to be discharged all superfluous charges, both in the excessive expences of our houshold and chamber, and in the over-great number of courts, by uniting the same according to the statute provided in that behalf, and such other superfluous charges.

P. 431.

“ *Fifthly*, My will is, that my sisters, Mary and Elizabeth, shall follow the advice of my executors, or the more part of them, in their marriages: and if they so do, and will be bound to live in quiet order,

1553. according to our appointment, and as by our said executors shall be appointed, We will, that they, and either of them, shall have, of our free gift, 1000*l.* yearly, by way of annuity, out of our coffers. And if they do marry by the advice of our said executors, or the more part of them, that then We will, that either of them shall have towards their marriages, of our gift, 10,000*l.* over and above the money for the marriages given by our father's bequest.

“*Sixthly*, Our pleasure is, that our said counselors shall not agree to give any lands or tenements to any person in fee-simple, or fee-tale, other than exchieted lands: neither shall they grant any lands in fee-farm, nor annuities, but only to such as have served us, or shall serve our successors for the time being, in some place of special trust: nor any leases in reversion to any other than to the servants of our successors for the time being.

“ All our debts to be paid with as much speed as can be.

“ All injuries, if any have been done, to be recompensed; and the parties, their heirs, or children, recompensed, according to equity and good justice.

“ The college of S. John's, in Cambridge, to have of our gift in land, 100*l.* by year, towards maintenance of their charges.\*

\* This was out of good will to Cecil, his secretary; and Cheke, his tutor; both of St. John's College.

“ A new college to be erected, to be endowed in lands, to the double yearly rent of the said college of S. John's; to be builded up, and made by discretion of our executors, within the space of seven years.

“ The graunt made to the maior and city of London, touching the Savoy, and lands thereof, to be performed.

“ All such as have graunts of us, of any lands, offices, or fees, to enjoy our graunts.

“ All such as have paid their monies upon any bargain for lands, to have their books and bargains performed.

“ To be bestowed in high-ways, and to the poor, by discretion of the executors, the sum of

“ The king my father’s tomb to be made up. All monuments to be made of the burials of Edward IV. and King Henry VI.” 1553.

By which parcel of the king’s will may be judged his royal wisdom and prudence, his religion and justice, his piety to his ancestors, his gratitude, charity, and liberality.

His funerals were solemnized at Westminster, Aug. 8, whereat were expressed, by all sorts of people, such signs of sorrow for his death, by weepings and lamentations, as the like was scarce ever seen or heard upon the like occasion. The solemnity was thus performed : First of all went a great company of children in their surplices, and clerks, and priests, singing ; then his father bedeman, and then two heralds. Next, a standard with a dragon. Then a great number of his servants in black. Then another standard, with a white greyhound ; after this a great number of his officers ; after them followed more heralds. Then a standard, with the head officers of his house, and then heralds. Mr. Norroy, one of the kings at arms, bare the helmet and the crest, on horseback ; and then the great banner of arms in embroidery, with divers other banners. Then came riding Mr. Clarencieux, another king of arms, with his target, his garter, and his sword, gorgeous and rich ; and after, Mr. Garter, the third and chief king of arms, with his coat armoury in embroidery. Then more banners of arms. Then came the chariot, with great horses trapped with velvet to the ground ; every horse having a man on his back in black, and every one bearing a bannerol of divers of the king’s arms, and with escutcheons on their horses. The chariot was covered with cloth of gold ; and on the body lay the effigies, lying piteously, with a crown of gold, and a great collar, his sceptre in his hand, clothed with his robes, and the garter about his leg, and a coat in embroidery of gold. About the corpse were borne four banners ; a banner of the order, another of the red rose, another of Queen Jane, another of the

The king’s  
funerals.

p. 432.

1553. queen's mother. After him went a goodly horse, covered with cloth of gold unto the ground, and the master of the king's horse, leading him after the corpse; and another goodly horse, with a man of arms in armour; which, both man and horse, were offered. Then followed the Marquis of Winchester, being chief mourner; and next, the twelve other mourners, two and two, viz. six earls, and six barons: the earls were, Oxford, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Sussex, Bath, and Pembroke; the barons were, the Lords Burgavenny, Windsor, Borough, Barkley, Stourton, and Cobham. A majesty was set up for him in the chapel at Whitehall, and another in Westminster Abbey, with three standards, the lion, the dragon, and the greyhound; thirteen banners, and a few other plainer bannerols and pensils, and hung about with velvet. The whole charge of the funeral amounted to 475*l.* 2*s.* 2*d.* too thrifty and penurious an expence for the last respects due to so brave a prince. Dr. Day, late Bishop of Chichester, preached the funeral sermon; and Archbishop Cranmer, however now under a cloud, celebrated his burial after the reformed way, by the English Service Book. To which was joined a communion, by him also administered, though after much opposition, as we are told; which was the last public office, I suppose, that archbishop performed.

Offic. Ar-  
mor. I. 11.  
p. 117. b.

Hist. Re-  
form. Vol.  
II. p. 244.

A foreign-  
er's charac-  
ter of the  
king.

I shall not make any reflections myself upon the loss of this admirable prince, but only repeat what a foreigner observed, soon after his death. For his accomplishments and virtues were known abroad, as well as at home. Cœlius Secundus Curio, a man of learning and eminence in the city of Basil, and father-in-law to Hieronymus Zanchy (in his epistle dedicatory to Sir Anthony Cook, before Sir John Cheke's book, *Of the Pronunciation of Greek*) hath these words concerning the hopefulness of this king, by the means of both their happy instructions of him: "*Vos communibus votis, consiliis, industria, summæ ac planè divinæ spei regem formabatis. A vobis ille*



divinus puer," &c. That is, "You by your united prayers, counsels, and industry, formed a king of the highest, even of divine, hopes. From you did the godlike youth receive that instruction, which neither Cyrus, nor Achilles, nor Alexander, nor any other king, ever received more polite, more holy; which, had he lived to adult years to make use of, and had come therewith to the government of the kingdom, nor had been snatched away before, by an immature death, what realm on earth had been happier? What nation had ever been more blessed? But God was minded only to shew him to the world, and suffer him no longer to abide in it. The English nation would have seemed to have been too happy," &c.

1553.

p. 433.

And, if you please, take some further character of him and his tutors, from the words of one, in an epistolary address to him, when he presented him with a new edition of Sir Thomas Eliot's Dictionary: "What subject endued with common sense and reason, doth not even now, in these your tender years, perceive your godly inclination, disposed so to rule and govern us in virtue and true religion, that of all nations we may judge ourselves to be most happy and fortunate? For these things chiefly, we are bound daily on our knees, with lowly hearts, to give most humble thanks to God; who pitying our state, of a singular favour and mercy towards this realm of England, sent you to reign over us.—— Such, and so excellent instructors were provided for your highness, as scanty the like in virtue and learning may in any place be founden: whose godly instructions, and virtuous counsels, how effectually they take place in your sacred majesty's breast, it doth right well appear to all them that attend upon your royal person, by the sage and godly talk that proceedeth from your most gracious mouth. We here abroad, by your most godly proceedings, evidently perceive how your grace willeth, that your dear uncle, and other most honourable counsellors and ministers, should endeavour and apply themselves,

The king  
commend-  
ed by Coo-  
per, the  
schoolmas-  
ter of  
Magdalen  
College,  
who was  
afterwards  
Bishop of  
Lincoln.

1553. first to set up true religion, to God's honour and glory, to abolish idolatry and superstition; and then constantly to proceed forth to the advancement of the commonweal: that is, truly to administer justice, to restrain extortion and oppression, to set up tillage and good husbandry, whereby the people may increase and be maintained. Your godly heart would not have wild beasts increase and men decay; ground so inclosed up, that your people should lack food and sustenance; one man by shutting in of fields and pastures to be made, and an hundred thereby to be destroyed. Oh! godly heart! Oh! prince most worthy to reign, not over two or three realms, but over the whole world. Such talk hath seldom been heard of princes of full age, perfect discretion, and long reign.

p. 434. “Wherefore the unestimable comfort and joy that all your loving subjects do take at this your wise and discreet devising and communing, and many other lovely sparks, and certain tokens of virtue and Christian regiment, cannot be sufficiently expressed. Yea, undoubtedly many English hearts have conceived an unfeigned hope, that your majesty shewing yourself so sage, so grave, so prudent in your tender youth, should, as very Solomon, by wisdom bring the world from tumult and ruffling to restful quietness, from war to peace, from hatred and discord to love and amity, from contentious sects and opinions to one Christian unity, and true religion. Surely, I say, many are fully persuaded, that the eternal wisdom and secret counsel of God hath ordained your highness this to do, to his great honour, your immortal praise, and the weal and profit of your loving subjects.” These words are sufficient to shew the spirit and temper, the wisdom and parts of his youth, when he had not been above three or four years king, even while his uncle the duke was alive, when this address was made. And these were the mighty expectations the honest and good part of the nation had of him. But his untimely death prevented all.

The learning of this young king, while he was prince, did appear by divers letters in Latin; which I have seen fairly written by his own hand. Whereby not only his proficiency in that language is shewn, but also his ingenuity, wit, sweetness of temper, courtesy, and sense of religion, shined forth. Some of these epistles were writ to his royal father the king, some to his mother, Queen Katharine, some to his sisters, Lady Mary and Lady Elizabeth, some to his uncle the protector, one to the Archbishop of Canterbury, another to Day, Bishop of Chichester, divers to Dr. Cox, his *præceptor* and *almoner*, as he styled him. I have seen also some of his scholastical exercises in declamations, or orations, upon several subjects; which do shew his invention, handsome style, his reasoning, and his reading too, especially in Tully. And all the abovesaid letters writ in the year 1546, when he was not ten years old: and the orations composed by him when not fully twelve. A *specimen* of these, both epistles and orations, will very acceptably entertain the reader, to be found in the Repository: where I have exactly transcribed some of them from the originals.

1553.  
His Latin  
Epistles  
and Decla-  
mations.

L.

To which I must add, that he was not unacquainted with the French tongue. In which he arrived to that degree before he was twelve years old, that he composed a tract, consisting of thirty-seven leaves in quarto, against the papacy, and the usurpations over the Christian church, and the idolatry and gross errors brought in by popes, and upholden by them. The title he gave this his book, written on the top of the first page, was, *L'Encontre les Abus du Monde*: That is, "Against the abuses of the world." Meaning, the *abuses* imposed upon the faith and worship of Christians by the pope; whom he calleth Antichrist. It begins thus:

His book  
in French  
against the  
Popc.

" Nous pouons tresbien voir et appercevoir par l'experience du monde, que la nature humaine est prone (*prompte*, writ over by the French master) a tous maux, et embrouillée de tous vices. Car quel

1553. pais y a il au monde, auquel n'y ait quelque vice et abus: principalement au temps present: veu que maintenant le grand empire de l'antichrist est en vogue. Lequel est la source de tout mal et la fontaine de toute abhominacion, et vray filz de diable. Pource que quand Dieu est envoye icy bas son filz unique pour nostre infirmité, afin de reconcilier le monde a soy par la mort d'yceluy, le diable changea des lors les institutions de Christ en traditions humaines, et perverti les escritures a son propos par le pape, son ministre," &c.

p. 435. The conclusion is in these words: " Conclusion, et cinquieme partie. En la premiere partie de nostre livre nous avons declaré, et prouué, comme Pierre n'estat pas le primat de l'eglise: confutans les raisons papistiques. En la seconde, nous avons prouué, quil ne peuvent apporter (*aleguer*, writ over by the master) quelque vraye tesmoguage, que Pierre ait esté a Rome. En la troisieme partie, nous avons prouué par leurs dictz mesmes, quilz ne devoient pas avoir la primauté. En la quatrieme partie, nous avons demonstté les propheties portantes de l'antichrist. Puis donques, que le pape est le vray filz de diable, homme mauvais, un antichrist, et tyran.

" Prions tous seigneur, qu'il conserve ceux, qui ont veu la lumiere, en la lumiere; et qu'il monstre a ceux, qui sont en tenebres, la vraye, sincere et pure lumiere. A celle fin, que tout le monde en ceste vie glorifie Dieu; et en l'autre monde soit participant du royaume eternal, par Jesus Christ nostre Siegneur. Auquel avec le Pere et le Saint Esprit, soit gloire, honeur, empire et louange pour tout jamais. Amen."

This book (which I speak of) contains the first minutes of the king's writing: and so hath here and there a correction, sometimes of his French master, and sometimes of his own. It hath, in the margin of every page, various quotations of proper places of scripture, for proofs of his purpose; which shew how well versed he was in those holy books.

The dedication of this his book the king made to



his uncle, the Duke of Somerset; which began thus: 1553.

“EDOUARD Sixiesme de ce Nom, par la Grace de Dieu, Roy d’Angleterre, France, et Irlande, Defendeur de la Foy, et en Terre apres Dieu, Chef de l’Englise d’Angleterre et Irlande: A son tres cher et bien ayme Oncle Edouard, Duc de Somerset, Gouverneur de sa Personne et Protecteur des ses Royaumes, Pais et Subjectz.

“Considerant (tres cher et tres bien aymé oncle) la vanité du monde, la mutabilité du temps, et le changement de toutes choses mondaines; commes des richesses, biens, honneurs, jeux, et plaisirs: considerant aussi, que telles semblables sont,” &c.

And now, at last, to prove all this book was wholly his own, done *proprio marte*, and the effect of his parts, without any other help, his French master testified, at the end of the tract, under his own hand, in these words following:

“Tout ainsi qu’un bon paintre peut représenter le visaige, regard, contenance et corpulence d’un prince: ainsi par les escritz, parolles, et actions d’un prince, on peut facilement entendre quel esprit est en luy, et aquoy il est adonné. Comme on peut veoir par les escritz de ce jeune roy: lequel compose et escrivit ce liure; n’ayant encores douze ans accomplis: et sans l’ayde de parsonne viuant, excepte de propos qu’il avoit ouys de plusieurs, et de sovenance qu’il avoit des liures qu’il avoit leuz. Car des ce qu’il commença a escriure le dict liure, et jusques a ce qu’il l’eust acheué, le dict liure a tous jours esté en ma garde, jusques a present.” That is,

“Just as a good painter can represent the visage, look, countenance, and bulk of a prince; so by the writings, words, and actions, of a prince, one may easily understand what spirit is in him, and to what he is addicted; as one may see by the writings of this young king, who composed and writ this book, being not yet full twelve years old; and, without the help of any person living, except the subject, which p. 436.

1553. he had heard of many, and the remembrance which he had of books that he had read. For, from the time he began to write the said book, and until he had finished it, the said book was always in my keeping, even to this present."

He began this book, according to the date set down by himself, December 13, 1548, and finished it March 14, following.

Another  
book in  
French  
written by  
the king.  
Hist. Re-  
form. Vol.  
II. Coll.  
p. 68.

There is yet another book in French, said to be of his writing, and kept in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge; consisting of places of scripture, which he had noted in his own English Bible; and afterwards, for his French exercise, had put them all into French, with his own hand, as he signified to the protector, his uncle: to whom he also dedicated this work of his.

The influ-  
ence of the  
king's  
learning.

I shall add one thing more concerning this king's learning: it is this, that many taking example by him, the nation began strangely to addict itself to arts and diligence, and especially to learning, for the public safety and benefit of the kingdom; and many good books were now set forth, for the use of the commonwealth, and increase of useful knowlege. This, Raphe Robynson, a scholar, acknowledged, sharpened him, and set him on work to translate into English that excellent description of a good commonwealth set down by Sir Thomas More, before spoken of, as in his epistle dedicatory he signified in these words: "Seeing every sort and kind of people in their vocation and degree is busily occupied about the commonwealth's affairs, and especially learned men, daily putting forth in writing new inventions and devices, to the furtherance of the same, I thought it my bounden duty to God and my country, to occupy and exercise myself in bestowing such spare hours as I could conveniently win to myself," &c.

Bale and  
Bibliander  
of this  
king;

To conclude, of this admirable prince thus writ Bale: "He did vehemently love the gospel; and to all learned men he gave harbour and patronage, Germans, Italians, French, Scots, Spaniards, Poles, &c.

Bibliander said of him, many wise men believed, that 1553.  
 he, as another Solomon, did aspire to that wisdom  
 and virtue that came from the celestial throne."

Of King Edward's excellent endowments and abi- And Fox.  
 lities, more may be read in the ninth book of the  
 Acts and Monuments of the Church, at the be-  
 ginning.

And so I take my leave of him, with the verses that And lastly,  
Sir Thomas  
Chaloner.  
 Sir Thomas Chaloner describes his youth, in his  
 Heroic Poem upon the Praises of King Henry, his  
 father :

Quis pueri EDWARDI suavissima pectora, mores  
 Ter suaves, pulchri exemplar quod nullus Apelles  
 Exprimat, et nullo describat Tullius ore,  
 Condignè hic pergat nou digno dicere versu ?

And his death, in his second book "De Repub. p. 137.  
 Anglor. Instauranda," where he thus bewails him, and  
 sets forth his incomparable virtues in verses, worthy  
 the noble subject he treats of :

Tandem (eheu !) lentam iuventus surrexit in iram,  
 Omnia peccantis populi commissa rependens  
 Unius ablatu pueri, quem parca beatis  
 Restituit cœlo, quo lapsus, sedibus, et nos  
 Destituit manifesta Dei præsentia in illo.  
 Quem si longa dies plures servâsset in annos,  
 Si uon maturo mors immatura negâsset  
 Exerere ulterius divinæ pignora dotis,  
 Tanta tibi, O EDOARDE, fuit tum gratia formæ,  
 Indolis et tam rara usque ad miracula virtus,  
 Ingenio docti curam superaute magistri,  
 Tanta tibi et morum probitas, ubi mite sereni  
 Principis effulsit specimen puerilibus annis  
 Gratius, ingenuo sacrum os ornante pudore,  
 Verbâque vel duras blandè penetrantia cantes ;  
 Tanta, inquam, fuerant congesta hæc omnia in unum  
 Dona deûm, ut merito post sæcla effœta creâsse  
 Delicium humani generis natura putetur.  
 Quo duce, Britanniis illa aurea tenipora rursus  
 Lacte amnes, et melle rubos signata redirent,  
 Quando iterum nostris errarent dij quoque sylvis,  
 Dij faciles, lustrata novis altaria donis,  
 Quique pias grato spectarent sydere palmas,  
 Et genti annuerent restaurato ordine longum

1553.

Relligione, togæ studijs florescere, et armis.

Dignus eras triplices canus qui vivere in annos  
 Nestoris, ipse decem qui Nestoras unus obires,  
 Cujus et imperio totus se subderet orbis.

p. 438.

## CHAP. XXIII.

A view of the manners of all sorts of men in these times ;  
 nobility, gentry, yeomanry, judges, the poor, the clergy.

The man-  
 ners of all  
 sorts of  
 men in  
 these days,  
 naught.

AND now let us stay a little, and look back upon the times in which this king reigned. How good soever he was, and what care soever was taken for the bringing in the knowledge of the gospel, and restoring Christ's true religion, the manners of men were very naught; especially of a great sort of them.

The nobili-  
 ty and gen-  
 try covet-  
 ous.

Among the grandees and noblemen, many were insatiably covetous; which appeared partly in raising their old rents. Which made Latymer use to call them *step-lords*, instead of *land-lords*. Which was done in this proportion, that what had gone before for 20 or 30*l.* a year (which was an honest portion to be had in one lordship, from other men's sweat and labours) was now let for 50 or 100*l.* a year. And this caused that dearth that continued for two or three years in the realm, or more, notwithstanding God sent plenteously the fruits of the earth. Provisions were unreasonably enhanced in their prices, occasioned by this raising of rent by the landlords. For then the tenants might reasonably, and did, raise the prices of their commodities, as pigs, geese, bacon, chickens, eggs, &c. as well as grain, and the fruits of the earth, and cattle. Another evil hereof was the impoverishing of the yeomanry, which was the chief stay of the nation. For out of the yeomen proceeded soldiers for the king's wars; husbandmen, for improving land for the producing fruits and corn; seamen, for the king and the merchants' ships; supplies of people for the trades and occupations of the city;

The yeo-  
 manry.



and scholars to be sent to the universities, to be bred up clergymen, for the services of the church. But this rank of men, so serviceable to the church and state, that used to be of good wealth, and live in a plentiful condition, was brought down to low and mean circumstances by these racked rents. 1553.

To give an instance: Latymer's father was a yeoman of Leicestershire, and had no land of his own: only he had a farm of three or four pounds a year at the utmost. And hereupon he tilled so much, as kept half a dozen men. He had walk for an hundred sheep, and his mother milked thirty kine. He was able, and did find the king a harness, with himself and his horse, while he came to the place that he should receive the king's wages. Latymer remembered how he buckled his father's harness when he went to Black-heath field. He kept this his son at school, until he was fit for the university, and maintained him there. He married his daughters with five pounds, or twenty nobles apiece. He kept hospitality for his poor neighbours; and some alms he gave to the poor. And all this he did out of the said farm. Whereas he that had the same farm in King Edward's days, paid sixteen pounds by the year, or more, and was not able to do any thing for his prince, for himself, nor for his children, or give a cup of drink to the poor. All this Latymer thought not amiss to say in one of his court-sermons, the more to expose this evil of racked rents. The wealth of yeomen formerly. p. 439.

Again, the covetousness of the gentry appeared, as in raising their rents, so in oppressing the poorer sort by inclosures; thereby taking away the lands where they had used, and their forefathers, to feed their cattle, for the subsistence of their families: which was such an oppression, that it caused them to break out into a rebellion in the year 1549. Inclosures.

Another way they had of oppressing their inferiors was, when these were forced to sue them at the law for some wrong they had done them, or for some means, which they violently detained from them. No redress at the law for the poor.

1553. For either they threatened the judges, or bribed them, that they commonly favoured the rich against the poor, delayed their causes, and made the charges thereby more than they could bear. Oftentimes they went home with tears, after having waited long at the court, their causes unheard. And they had a common saying then, *Money is heard every where*. And if a man were rich, he should soon have an end of his matter.

Latymer  
speaks for  
them to the  
king and  
great men.

In fine, the poor were so oppressed by these means, that Latymer, now aged, and a great court-préacher, and of authority with the king, and many of the great men, was never almost without poor suitors, that came to him to speak to the great men, that their matters might be heard; complaining to him, at what great costs and charges they had laid, to their undoing. Inasmuch as being at the Archbishop of Canterbury's house, where he used often to reside, he had no time, so much as to look in his book, as he told the king in his sermon. This countenancing of the rich men against the poor, was occasioned partly from the servants of the king's great officers, who did use to commit the hearing and examining of causes to them. Wherefore Latymer took the confidence in one of his sermons, to advise the king to hear causes himself; and so he advised the protector, and the lord chancellor, who left matters to others to hear and determine. He bad them in God's behalf, to sit upon the bench themselves, and not to put all to the hearing of *velvet coats*, and *upskips*, as he termed them.

The judges

For the judges also, some of them at least, were very corrupt, and would sell justice for money. A great man kept certain lands from a gentlewoman, and would be her tenant in spite of her teeth. She tarried a whole year in town for a hearing against him, and could get but one day; when the great man brought a great sight of lawyers on his side: the woman had but one on her's, and he threatened and frowned upon by the great man, And when the

matter was to come to a point, the judge himself was a meane to the gentlewoman, that she would let the other have her land. That she could have done at first, without all that waiting and charge, if she had seen it convenient for her so to have done. And this was all the relief she could have, that her judge became a pleader on her adversary's behalf. Latymer did more than once complain before the king of the judges, and would himself give them many a jerk in his sermons. Once he said, "That if a judge should ask him the way to hell, he would shew him this way: first, let him be a covetous man. Then, let him go a little further, and take bribes: and lastly, pervert judgment. There lacketh a fourth to make up the mess, which, so God help me, if I were judge, should be *hangum tuum*, a Tyburn-tippet, to take with him, if it were the Judge of the King's Bench, the Lord Chief Justice of England; yea, if he be my Lord Chancellor himself. To Tyburn with him." I suppose he might in these words glance at these men, or some of them, as not clear in this charge. And again, speaking of an evil judge that took bribes, "He would wish, that of such a judge in England now, we might have his skin hanged up. It were a goodly sight, the sign of the judge's skin. It should be Lot's wife to all judges that follow after."

1555.

p. 440.

Fifth sermon before the king.

The miseries also of the poor, and the wrongs and hardships they endured, occasioned by the covetousness of the rich, were set forth by another preacher in these days, in a sermon before the king. "Look, saith he, in all countries, how Lady Avarice hath set on work altogether mighty men, gentlemen, and all rich men, to rob and spoil the poor, to turn them from their livings, and from their right. And ever the weakest go to the walls. And being thus tormented, and put from their right at home, they come to London a great number, as to a place where justice should be had; and there they can have none. They are suitors to great men, and cannot come to their speech. Their servants must have bribes; and they no small

The miseries of the poor.

Bernard Gilpin's sermon before the king.

No relief from the rich;

1553. ones. All love bribes. But such as be dainty to hear the poor, let them take heed lest God make it as strange to them, when they shall pray, 'Who stoppeth his ear at the crying of the poor, he shall cry and not be heard,' Prov. xxi. God reproveth them, that it is so hard for the poor to have access to them; and coming into their presence, are so asot-nied and speechless, with terrible looks.—Oh! with what glad heart, and clear consciences might noblemen go to rest, when they had bestowed the whole day in hearing Christ himself complain in his members, and in redressing their wrongs! But alas! what lack thereof? Poor people are driven to seek their right among the lawyers. And there, as the prophet Joel saith, what the catterpillar hath left in their robbery and oppression at home, all that do the greedy locusts, the lawyers, devour in London. They laugh with the money which maketh others to weep. And thus are the poor robbed on every side without redress; and that of such as seem to have authority thereunto.

Nor the  
lawyers.

"When Christ suffered his passion, there was one Barabbas, S. Matthew calls him *A notable thief*, a gentleman thief, such as rob now adays in velvet coats. The other two obscure thieves, and nothing famous, the rustical thieves were hanged, and Barabbas was delivered. Even so now adays the little thieves are hanged that steal for necessity; but the great Barabbasses have free liberty to rob and spoil without all measure in the midst of the city.—Alas! silly, poor members of Christ, how you be shorn, oppressed, pulled, haled to and fro on every side! Who cannot but lament, if his heart be not flint? There be a great number every term, and many continually which lamentably complain for lack of justice; but all in vain. They spend that which they had left, and many times more: whose ill success here (at London) causeth thousands to tarry at home beggars, and lose their right. And so it were better than here to sell their coats: for this we see, such is



the poor man's cause, though never so manifest a truth, that the rich shall for money find six or seven counsellors stand with subtilties and sophisms to cloak an ill matter, and hide a known truth. A piteous case in a commonwealth!" 1553.

And again concerning the great oppression of landlords towards their tenants, by turning them out of all, to their utter undoing, thus he spake: "Now the robberies, extortions, and open oppressions of covetous cormorants have no end nor limits, no banks to keep in their vileness. As for turning poor men out of their holds, they take it for no offence, but say, their land is their own. And so they turn them out of their shrowds like mice. Thousands in England, through such, beg now from door to door, who have kept honest houses.—These, he added, had such quick smelling hounds, that they could live at London, and turn men out of their farms and tenements an hundred, some two hundred miles off. Oh! Lord, what a number of such oppressors, worse than Ahab, are in England, *which sell the poor for a pair of shoes*, Amos ii.; of whom, if God should serve but three or four as he did Ahab, to make the dogs lap the blood of them, their wives and posterity, I think it would cause a great number to beware of extortion. And yet, escaping temporal punishments, they are sure, by God's word, their blood is reserved for hell-hounds. England hath had alate some terrible examples of God's wrath, in sudden and strange deaths of such as join field to field, and house to house. Great pity they were not chronicled, to the terror of others."

But in the mean time, these mighty and great men said, "That the commonalty lived two well at ease: they grew every day to be gentlemen, and knew not themselves: their horns must be cut shorter by raising their rents, and by fines, and by plucking away their pastures." Their pretences.

And hereby the commonalty came to hate the gentry: for "They murmured, and grudged, and said, The gentry hated."

1553. that the gentlemen had all; and there were never so many gentlemen, and so little gentleness. And by their natural *logic* they would reason, how these two *conjugata*, these yoke-fellows, gentlemen and gentleness, should be banished so far asunder. And they laid all the misery of the commonwealth upon the gentlemen's shoulders."

Gold  
hoarded.

In fine, to this pass had covetousness brought the nation, that every man scraped and pilled from other; every man would suck the blood of others; every man encroached upon another. It cut away the large wings of charity, and plucked all to herself. She had chested all the old gold in England, and much of the new; which made the foresaid preacher add, "That she had brought it to pass, that there was never more idolatry in England, than at that day. But the idols were hid, and came not abroad, Alas! noble prince, said he, (turning his speech to the king) that the images of your ancestors, graven in gold, and yours also, contrary to your mind, are worshipped as gods: and all the poor lively images of Christ perish in the streets through hunger and cold."

p. 442.

Murders.

Many murders were in this reign also committed; and the murderers too often escaped, by the favour and affection of the judges. One of the king's searchers executing his office, displeased a merchantman; insoinuch, that when he was doing his office, they were at words. The merchantman threatened him. The searcher said the king should not lose his custom. The merchant goes home and sharpens his wood-knife, and comes again, and knocks him on the head, and kills him. This was winked at. They looked through their fingers, and would not see it. "Whether, saith Latymer, according to his coarse stile, it be taken up with a pardon or no, I cannot tell; but this I am sure, and if ye bear with such matters, the devil shall bear you away to hell." But these words of Latymer gave offence, as reflecting on the merchant's reputation, and his friends, when this searcher's death, they said, was but a kind of

chance-medley. But he understanding this, the next Lord's Day took notice of it, and said, "He intended not to empair any man's estimation or honesty, and that they that enforced it to that, enforced it not to his meaning: considering, he said, he *heard* but of such a thing; and according as he heard, so he took occasion to say, that no man should bear with another, to the maintenance of voluntary and pre-pensed murder." Of which sort, notwithstanding their mincing the matter into *chance-medley*, he supposed the fact was. "He knew not, he said, what they called *chance-medley* in the law, for that was not his study; but he knew what voluntary murder was, before God. If I shall fall out with a man, he is angry with me, and I with him, and lacking opportunity and place, we put it off for that season. In the mean time I prepare my weapon, and sharpen it against another time; I swell and boil in this passion towards him; I seek him, we meddle together. It is my chance, by reason my weapon is better than his, and so forth, to kill him. I give him his death's stroke, in my vengeance and anger. This I call *voluntary murder* by scripture; what it is in the law I cannot tell." And this, it seems, was the true state of the case between the merchant and the searcher. 1553.

Another there was that slew a man in a certain township, and was attached upon the same, and twelve men impannelled. The man had friends; the sheriff laboured the bench. The twelve men stuck at it, and said, except they should disburse twelve crowns, they would find him *guilty*. Means were found, that the twelve crowns were paid. The quest came in, and said, *Not guilty*. But it was observed, that some of the bench were afterwards hanged, as a judgment of God upon them for perverting justice. Another murderer was a woman, that brought forth three bastard children at a birth. She wrung their necks, and cast them into a water, and so killed her children. But being arraigned at the bar for it, she was brought in, *Not guilty*, though her neighbours,

More murders.

1555. upon suspicion, caused her to be examined, and she granted all: but the judge was bribed. And yet at the same sessions a poor woman was hanged for stealing a few rags off an hedge, that were not worth a crown. Another time a gentleman was indicted for murder: this man was a professor of the word of  
 p. 443. God, and fared, probably, the worse for that. He was cast into prison; but persisted in it, that he had no hand in that murder. Yet he was arraigned at the bar for it, and condemned. Suit was made for his pardon, but it could not be gotten. The sheriffs, or some others, bare him no good-will. And he died for it. Afterward Latymer, being in the Tower, and having leave to come to the lieutenant's table, heard him say, that a man was hanged afterward, that killed the same man, for whom this gentleman was put to death.

Divorces.

The nation now became scandalous also for the frequency of divorces; especially among the richer sort. Men would be divorced from their wives, with whom they had lived many years, and by whom they had children; that they might satisfy their lusts with other women, whom they began to like better than their own present wives. That which gave occasion also to these divorces was, the covetousness of the nobility and gentry, who used often to marry their children when they were young, boys and girls; that they might join land to land, possession to possession, neither learning, nor virtuous education, nor suitableness of tempers and dispositions, regarded. And so when the married persons came afterwards to be grown up, they disliked many times each other, and then separation and divorce, and matching to others, that better liked them, followed; to the breach of espousals, and the displeasure of God.

Adulteries.

These divorces, and *whoredoms* (a great cause of them) had especially stained the last reign, and introduced themselves into this: and prevailed so much, that the compilers of the Book of Homilies thought convenient to frame one homily against whoredom



and adultery ; which, how it spread, and what sense was then generally had of it, may appear by the beginning of that homily : “ That though there were great swarms of vices worthy to be rebuked, yet above all other vices, the outrageous seas of adultery, or breaking of wedlock, whoredom, fornication and uncleanness, have burst in, and overspread all the world : and that it was grown to such an height, that in a manner among some, it was counted no sin at all, but rather a pastime, a dalliance ; not rebuked, but winked at ; not punished, but laughed at. Therefore the homily was composed to declare the greatness of this sin ; how odious and abominable before God, and all good men ; how grievously it hath been punished, both by the law of God, and divers princes : and to shew a certain remedy to escape this detestable sin.” In the second part of this homily, the writer speaks of divorces, that then were so common, and shewed the occasion of them : “ Of this vice (of whoredom) cometh a great part of the divorces, which now adays be so common, accustomed, and used by men’s private authority, to the great displeasure of God, and the breach of the most holy knot and band of matrimony. For when this most detestable sin is once so crept into the breast of the adulterer, so that he is intangled with unlawful and unchaste love, straightway his true and lawful wife is despised, her presence is abhorred, her company stinketh, and is loathsome ; whatsoever she doth is dispraised : there is no quietness in the house, so long as she is in sight. Therefore to make short work, she must away, for her husband can brook her no longer. Thus through whoredom is the honest and harmless wife put away, and a harlot received in her stead. And in like manner it happeneth many times in the wife towards her husband.”

1553.

p. 441.

*Contention about religion*, reading the scripture, and maintaining doctrines out of it, true or false, with the greatest stiffness one against another, was another vice in this reign ; which was the cause of framing

Contentions.

1553. another homily, viz. against contention and brawling. "For too many there were (as that homily expresseth it) which upon the ale-bench, or other places, delighted to set forth certain questions, not so much pertaining to edification, as to vainglory, and shewing forth their cunning; and so unsoberly to reason and dispute, that when neither part would give place to other, they fall to chiding and contention; and sometimes from hot words to further inconvenience."

**Lawsuits.** It was a contentious age, and people seemed to quarrel for trifles, and often would run to the law to vex each other. One lawsuit was commenced upon this ridiculous occasion: the owner of a horse told his friend, that he should have him, if he would. The other asked the price. He said twenty nobles. The other would give him but four pounds. The owner said, he should not have it then. But the other claimed the horse, because he said he should have it, if he would. This bargain became a Westminster matter. The lawyers got twice the value of the horse: "And when all came to all, two fools made an end of the matter," as Latymer, according to his manner of speaking, told the king in one of his sermons.

**The clergy.** The clergy also were now generally very bad, from the bishops to the curates. As to the bishops, though some of them were learned and conscientious, yet the rest, and the greater part, were such, that there could be no good *discipline* exercised, for the restraint of sin, and for the due correction of swearing, rioting, neglect of God's word, and other scan-

**Discipline.** dalous vices. Of the need of discipline, and of the danger or insignificancy of committing it to the bishops, the good king was very sensible; as appears by that wise discourse of his, which he wrote, I suppose, in the year 1552; wherein he saith, "That it were very good that disciplin went forth—so that those that should be the executors of it were men of tried honesty, wisdom, and judgment. But because those bishops, who should execute it, some for

papistry, some for ignorance, some for age, some for their ill name, some for all these, are men unable to execute disciplin, it is therefore a thing unmeet for these men. Wherefore it were necessary, that those that be appointed to be bishops, were honest in life, and learned in their doctrin; that by rewarding such men, others might be allured to follow their good life." Therefore, for the present, he resolved to set up discipline, and yet to keep it out of the hands of ill bishops; as one of the king's memorials for religion, wrote in October, 1552, assures us: wherein he made a memorandum, "For commissions to be granted to those bishops that were grave, learned, wise, sober, and of good religion, for the executing of disciplin." And the bishops had exercised so much dominion and rigour, and been such *papalins*, that the very name of *bishop* grew odious among the people, and the word *superintendent* began to be affected, and come in the room; and the rather, perhaps, being a word used in the protestant churches of Germany. This the papists made sport with; but see what favourable construction one, who was a bishop himself, put upon this practice, and the reason he assigned hereof:

1553.

Bishops called superintendents.

p. 445.

And why.

"Who knoweth not that the name *bishop* hath been so abused, that when it was spoken, the people understood nothing else but a great lord, that went in a white rochet, with a wide-shaven crown, and that carried an oil-box with him, wherewith he used once in seven years, riding about, to *confirm* children, &c. Now to bring the people from this abuse, what better means can be devised, than to teach the people their error by another word out of the scripture, of the same signification; which thing, by the term *superintendent*, would in time have been well brought to pass: for the ordinary pains of such as were called superintendents, to understand the duty of their bishops, which the papists would fain have hidden from them; and the word *superintendent* being a very Latin word, made English by us, should in

Ponet, in answer to Dr. Martin.

1553. time have taught the people, by the very etymology and proper signification, what thing was meant, when they heard that name, which by this term *bishop* could not so well be done ; by reason that bishops, in time of popery, were *overseers* in name, but not in deed. I deny not (as that notable man proceeded) that that name *bishop* may be well taken ; but because the evilness of the abuse hath marred the goodness of the word, it cannot be denied but that it was not amiss to join for a time another word with it in his place, whereby to restore that abused word to his right signification. And the word *superintendent* is such a name, that the papists themselves (saving such as lack both learning and wit) cannot find fault withal." And then he quoted Peresius the Spaniard, and an arch papist, out of whom Martin had stolen a great part of his book ; who, speaking of a bishop, saith, " Primum episcopi munus nomen ipsum præ se fert, quod est, *superintendere*. Episcopus enim *superintendens* interpretatur." So Ponet. To the same purpose Tindal before him, in his notes upon that in Timothy, *He that desireth the office of a bishop, desireth a good work* : " *Bishop* (saith he) is as much as to say, a *seer* to, or a taker-heed to, or an *overseer* ; which, when he desireth to feed Christ's flock with the food of health, that is, with his holy word, as the bishops did in Paul's time, desireth the good work, and the very office of a bishop. But he that desireth honour, gapeth for lucre, thirsteth great rents and heart's ease, castles, parks, lordships, earldoms, &c. desireth not a good work, and is nothing less than a bishop, as S. Paul here understands a bishop."

Tindal's  
exposition  
of *bishop*.

Curates.

The *curates* were both ignorant, and scandalous for their ill lives. The people, in many places, did withhold their tithes from them ; and the reason they gave was, because their curates, some were ignorant, and some were idle, and took little care and pains in their cures, and many of them so intolerably bad, lazy, and wicked, that the parishioners oftentimes complained, and brought informations against them



to the bishops of the dioceses, nay, to the council. 1553.  
 They would ordinarily say, "Our curate is naught,  
 an assehead, a dodipot, a lack-latine, and can do  
 nothing. Shall I pay him tith, that doth us no good,  
 nor none will do?" The fault of this lay much in  
 patrons; many whereof would choose such curates for  
 their souls as they might call fools, rather than such p. 446.  
 as would rebuke their covetousness, ambition, unmer-  
 cifulness, and uncharitableness; that would be sober,  
 discreet, apt to reprove, and resist the gainsayers with  
 the word of God. Another evil in the clergy now-a-  
 days was, that chantry priests, out of good husbandry, Chantry  
 to save the king a little money, were taken into dig- priests:  
 nities and places ecclesiastical, who generally were  
 persons addicted to the old superstitions, notwith-  
 standing their outward compliance. For these, when  
 put out of their places, had pensions allowed them for  
 their subsistence. But as King Henry, to save his  
 pensions, preferred these abbots and priors of dis-  
 solved monasteries to bishopricks, and other good  
 places in the church, however otherwise unqualified  
 sometimes; so now, under King Edward, there were  
 whisperings of saving much money that way, which  
 went out in pensions to the chantry priests, the chan-  
 tries having been given by the parliament to this  
 king.

The clergy also were much cried out against, for The clergy  
 thrusting themselves so much into secular offices, to take secu-  
 the great neglect of their respective cures. For as it lar places.  
 was in King Henry's days, so it continued in King  
 Edward's, that many of the prelates, and inferior  
 clergy, were constituted in secular employments:  
 which the soberer part of the nation much disliked;  
 because, by this means their flocks were left without  
 due care of them. They lived in such high state, and  
 in so much grandeur, as did not become such as were  
 devoted to God and the church: many occupied in  
 the king's affairs, some were ambassadors and some  
 of the privy council, and some furnished the court,  
 and some were presidents (so was Lee, Bishop of

1553. Litchfield and Coventry, President of Wales), and one, comptroller of the mint. Which stuck so much in old Latymer's crop, that in a sermon preached in the Shrouds at St. Paul's, he exclaimed against them all, but especially against this comptroller: "Should we (said he) have ministers of the church to be comptrollers of the mint? Is this a meet office for a priest that hath cure of souls? I would here ask one question: I would fain know, who comptrolleth the devil at home in his parish, while he comptrolleth the mint? If the apostle might not leave his office of preaching to be deacon, shall one leave it for minting? I cannot tell you, but the saying is, that since priests have been minters, money hath been worse than it was before; and they say, that the illness of money hath made all things dearer."

A priest  
comptroller  
of the  
mint.

The ignorance  
of the nobility  
made it necessary  
to prefer the  
clergy.

p. 447.

But the reason of this placing religious men in secular offices, was indeed, because the laity, both nobility and gentry, were not fit for such places: they were bred up in so much ignorance and idleness, that the king was forced to employ the clergy, among whom was the learning, and the best abilities. And this made the foresaid good old father again to upbraid England for their nobility: "England, I speak it to thy shame, is there never a nobleman to be lord president, but it must be a prelate? Is there never a wise man in the realm to be comptroller of the mint?" Then he asketh this question: "Why are not the noblemen and young gentlemen of England brought up in a knowledge of God, and in learning, that they may be able to execute offices in the commonweal?" He advised, "That as the king had a great many *wards*, that there might be a school for the wards, as well as there is a *court* for their lands. He was for their being set to school, and sent to universities, that they might be able to serve the king, when they came to age. The benefit of this would be, that the gentry would not give themselves so much to vanity, and the common people would be better; for they were bad by following them. Therefore he exhorted much to

have teachers and schoolmasters set up and encouraged by stipends worthy their pains. He would have them brought up in *logic*, in *rhetoric*, in *philosophy*, in the *civil law*, and especially in the word of God." 1553.

Thus it was in the latter part of the reign of King Henry; but since King Edward came to the crown, these things began in a great measure to be remedied. The nobility began to be learned. They began to be brought up in learning and godliness, to the great joy and comfort of England; so Latymer, in place above mentioned, observed, "So that there was now good hopes (he said) that we shall another day have a flourishing commonweal, considering their godly education: yea, that there were already nobles enough, though not so many as he would wish, fit to be put into places of trust."

But to return to the clergy again; among the rest of whose faults must be added, their affectation of going too costly in their apparel. Some of them wore velvet shoes and velvet slippers: "Such fellows (saith our old Cato) were more fit to dance the Morice dance, than to be admitted to preach." We may conclude, the rest of their habit was agreeable to that piece of it. The habit of the clergy.

## CHAP. XXIV.

p. 448.

Observations concerning patrons; the universities; the city and court. Taxes in this reign.

HAVING taken some view of the nobility, gentry, and clergy, in these times, let us proceed to make our observations of patrons, of the universities, the city, the court, and so make an end of this book.

*Patrons* did shamefully abuse their benefices, sometimes by selling them to such as would or could give money for them, or other consideration; sometimes they would fee-farm them: insomuch, that when any afterward should have the benefice, there was

1553. neither house to dwell in, nor glebe-land to keep hospitality; but the curate was fain to take up his chamber in an ale-house, and there sit and play at tables all day.

Universi-  
ties.

Very ill also was the state of the *universities* now. Here was a mighty decay. Latymer conjectured, that there were ten thousand students less than there was within twenty years before. The reason whereof was, because the revenues of the church were gone away to laymen, and so little encouragement for the students in divinity. He prayed the king, therefore, that he would take order, that preaching might not decay; for that if it did, ignorance and brutishness would enter again. Those that were in Cambridge, very few of them studied divinity; no more but just that number that of necessity must furnish the colleges, according to the statutes. And the livings there were so small, and victuals so dear, that they tarried not there, but went elsewhere to seek livings; and only great men's sons remained in the colleges, whose fathers intended them not for preachers. So that the said father feared, it would come to pass, that they should have nothing but a little English divinity, and that the realm would be brought into very barbarousness, and utter decay of learning. And then he added, "It is not that, I wiss, that will keep out the supremacy of the Bishop of Rome." Upon this, he made a suit to his auditors, "That they would bestow so much to the finding of scholars of good wits, being the sons of poor men, to exercise the office of salvation (he means preaching God's word), as they were wont to bestow in pilgrimage-matters, in trentals, in masses, in pardons, and purgatory-matters."

City of  
London.

But let us leave these places of learning and go elsewhere, and look upon the great metropolis of England, the city of London; which was much degenerated, especially at the beginning of this king's reign. In times past, the citizens were full of pity and compassion; and when churchmen died, they were wont to appoint some share of their estate in



exhibition, for the maintenance of poor scholars in the universities, and for the relief of the poor: but now the poor died in the streets for cold, and laid sick at their doors, and perished for hunger. 1553.

And one reason of this plenty of miserable objects in London was, the destruction of tillage in the country, and the demolishing cottages there: whereby it came to pass, that the poor had neither work nor harbour; and so having no subsistence in the countries, they were fain to come up to get bread, or beg for it in the city, which made Thomas Lever, a very grave preacher, in a sermon before a solemn auditory, cry out, “O merciful Lord! what a number of poor, feeble, halt, blind, lame, sickly, yea, with idle vagabonds and dissembling caitiffs mixt among them, lie and creep begging in the miry streets of London and Westminster! It is a common custom with covetous landlords, to let their housing so decay, that the farmer shall be fain for a small regard, or none at all, to give up his lease, that they, taking the grounds into their own hands, may turn all to pastures. So now old fathers, poor widows, and young children, lie begging in the miry streets.”

And when Latymer was so curious to make inquiry, what helps for poor students were now distributed and sent to the universities, he could hear of little or none; nor of such gifts of charity bequeathed by the richer sort at their deaths, as was wont before to be. London also had enjoyed the preaching of the gospel in King Henry's time, more than any other place in the nation, and there sprang up a great harvest of gospellers here; but the city shewed itself little addicted to religion, and too much addicted to superstition, to pride, to malice, to cruelty, and uncharitableness. The latter end of the reign of King Henry, when the papists swayed all, had a mighty influence upon the city. So that there was a kind of apostacy among the Londoners; which made old Latymer, so often quoted before, in a sermon preached at the Shrouds in St. Paul's, before the citizens, cry out,

p. 449. “  
Pestered  
with beg-  
gars.”

Decayed  
in their  
charity.

1553. “O London, London! repent, repent.” And such was the vanity, and fickleness, and pride of the inhabitants, that another preacher styled them *butterflies*, rather than *burgesses*.

The citizens compared to butterflies.

But this made them clamour much against the preachers, for disparaging them. Latymer came up not long after, and vindicated that preacher, speaking thus: “What ado there hath been in London against this man, for what he said but too justly! And would God they were no worse than butterflies; butterflies do but their nature: the butterfly is not covetous, is not greedy of other men’s goods, is not full of envy and hatred, is not malicious, is not cruel. (Meaning to charge all this upon the citizens.) The butterfly glorieth not in her own works, nor preferreth the traditions of men before God’s; committeth not idolatry, nor worshippeth false Gods. But London cannot abide to be rebuked: such is the nature of man, if they be pricked they will kick; if they be rubbed on the gall, they will wince: London was never so evil as it is now.” And, to the scandal of the *reformation*, there were more loose houses in London, now in King Edward’s days, than ever were before. The Bank (in Southwark), when it stood, was never so common for whoredom as the city now; and it went unpunished: and so shameful and wicked were many grown, that some thought a wonder, that London did not sink, and the earth gape and swallow it up.

p. 450.  
Loose  
houses in  
London.

This uncleanness was chiefly confined unto certain places, that were called *privileged places*, where men might sin with impunity; that is, where the lord mayor had nothing to do, and the sheriffs could not meddle, and the quest did not make inquiry. There men brought their whores, yea, and other men’s wives. Here sometimes was blood shed, in quarrels about women. A Spaniard killed an Englishman, by running him through with his sword, about a whore; but the Spaniard escaped hanging. Here also were dicing-houses, where idle people used to

play, and spend their patrimony; and here many other follies were committed. So that the manly exercises that used to be among Englishmen, without doors and abroad, began to be laid aside, and turned into glosing, gulling, and whoring, within doors; and particularly that exercise of shooting, for which this nation had been so famous. This shooting was in time past much esteemed in this realm: "It is a gift of God (said Latymer) that he hath given us to excel all other nations withal. It hath been God's instrument, whereby he hath given us many victories against our enemies: and every man, in former times, used to teach his children the practice of it, or to make them practise it; as the law also enjoined this shooting in the bow. He spake of his father, that he was as diligent to teach him to shoot, as to learn him any other thing: he taught him how to draw, how to lay his body in his bow, and not to draw with strength of arms, as other nations do, but with strength of the body; and he had his bowes brought him according to his age and strength; and as he increased in them, so his bowes were made bigger and bigger. For men could never shoot well, except they were brought up to it. It is a goodly art, said he, a wholesome kind of exercise, and much commended in physic. And he urged the magistrates, even from the pulpit, and that in the reverence of God, that a proclamation might go forth, charging the justices of peace, that they saw such acts and statutes kept, as were made for this purpose."

1553  
Shooting  
in the  
bow.

From the city let us repair to the *court*. Here indeed was an excellent king, but he was a minor; and so was too much imposed upon by his courtiers and officers, who grew rich under him, while he grew poor: insomuch that he ran into debt, and could not pay what he ought. Poor artificers came for money for the works they had done for him, and went away without it. For the king's officers did so rake and scrape to themselves, that without liberal gratifications, no money would be parted with. Those

The court.

1553. that had accounts to make to the king for monies received for the king's use, used to defalcate a part, and put it into their own pockets: and those that took their accounts were gratified, and so they passed their accounts without any further examination. These things the king's preacher (so often mentioned before) knowing well enough, by his converse with the best of the court, plainly acquainted the king with, in his last sermon before him, which was in the year 1550: where in his own person he glanceth at some about the king. "I will become the king's officer for a while. I have to lay out for the king 2000*l*. or a great sum, whatsoever it be. Well, when I have laid it out, and do bring in my account, I must give 300 mark to (have) my bills warranted. If I have done truly and uprightly, what should need me to give a penny to my bills warranted? Smell you nothing in this? What needeth a bribe-giving, except the bills be false? Well, such practice hath been in England; but beware; it will out one day. Beware of God's proverb, 'There is nothing hidden, 'that shall not be opened.' And here now I speak to you, my master minters, augmentationers, receivers, surveyors, auditors; I make a petition to you, I beseech you all, be good to the king: he hath been good to you; therefore be ye good to him: yea, be good to your own souls. Ye are known well enough, what ye were afore ye came to your offices, and what lands ye had then, and what ye have purchased since, and what buildings ye make daily. Well, I pray ye so build that the king's workmen may be paid. They make their moans, that they can get no money. The poor labourers; gun-makers, powder-makers, bow-makers, arrow-makers, smiths, carpenters, soldiers, and other crafts, cry out for their dues. They be unpaid some of them, three or four months; yea, some of them half a year; yea, and some of them put up bills this time twelvemonth for their money, and cannot be paid yet. It seems ill-favouredly, that ye should

Some  
wrong the  
king.

p. 451.



have enough wherewith to build superfluously, and the king lack to pay his poor labourers." 1553.

Some of these cozeners of the king in their offices under him, were so touched in conscience, that they, Some make the king restitution. privately some, and some openly, made restitution to him. And that, chiefly, upon occasion of a sermon preached by Latymer at the court. About the year 1548, in Lent, he preached upon making Restitution : and that they who had wronged the king, must make *restitution*, or else *they would go to the devil*, to use his plain English. Some indeed, and I suppose the most part, were angry with him for his sermon. " Let him preach contrition (said they) and let restitution alone. We can never make restitution." But some were better touched in conscience. So that one came privately to him, and acknowledged he had deceived the king, and sent Latymer that Lent, in part of his restitution, twenty pounds, to be restored to the king's use ; and promised twenty pounds more that Lent. But it came not ; but the Lent after, he sent the twenty pounds, and three hundred pounds more with it. And Latymer paid it into the king's council. And the third Lent, the same sent in an hundred and eighty pounds ten shillings more : which Latymer paid also into the king's council. And so, according to his judgment, he made a godly restitution. The council asked him who this was ; but he concealed him. And Latymer conjectured, that if every one would make such restitution, it would amount to 20,000*l*. Nay, said another, an whole 100,000*l*. Another, named Sharington, came and made open restitution ; whom therefore Latymer called, an honest gentleman, and one that God loved. He openly confessed that he had deceived the king, and he made open restitution. This was Sir William Sharington ; of whom before.

Money was coined about the year 1549, in quantity less than the current money was before, and yet in value the same. Herein again was a great cheat Corruption in coinage.

1553. put upon the subject by the minters; which made old Latymer in the pulpit (who would take that opportunity to speak his mind to the king) give a nip at this new-coined money. “We have now a pretty little shilling; in very deed a pretty one. I have but one, I think, in my purse, and the last day I had  
 p. 452. put it away almost for an old groat (that being as big as this new shilling) and so, I trust, some will take them. The fineness of the silver I cannot see (which was the pretence, that the shilling was less in quantity) but therein is printed a fine sentence (which was to make amends for the smallness of it) *Timor Domini fons vitæ vel sapientiæ*: which was the motto of this coin.

The king  
 wronged in  
 his subsi-  
 dies.

And when to help the king's necessities, certain taxes were laid upon the subjects, they found out shifts to cheat the king, and to save their own purses: so that his taxes fell much of what was expected to be brought in. About the year 1549, or 1550, there was a tax, that every man should pay the fifteenth part of his goods to the king. But when the commissioners were sent abroad to take the value of every man's estate, each did exceedingly undervalue what he was truly worth, and gave a false estimate; and he that was worth, in cattle, corn, sheep, and other goods, 100 marks, or 100*l.* would give himself to be worth 10*l.*; another, that was worth 200*l.* besides money and plate, and married his daughter, and gave with her 400 or 500 marks, yet at the valuation was set but at 20*l.* Which, it seems, was an old trick; for, in the cardinal's time, for the preventing of it, men were put to their oaths, to swear what they were worth. “O Lord (saith Latymer) what perjury was in England by that swearing? For, doubtless, many one wittingly and willingly forswore themselves at that time.” Which course that father therefore called a *sore thing*, and would not wish to be followed. He knew it would tend more to the king's advantage, and to the safety of his subjects, to make them honest and true, than to administer to them an oath.

Latymer's  
 sermon at  
 Stamford.

*Bribery* was also very rife, both for ecclesiastical benefices, and civil offices and places. Many indeed would seem to refuse any gifts, when brought to them; but some, that were dependents, would receive them readily enough, for their master's use and service. Judges' wives would sometimes take bribes; they had servants *a muneribus*, as Latymer styled them. Such a servant would say, if you come to my master, and offer him a yoke of oxen, you shall speed never the worse: but, I think, my master will take none. When the party had offered something to the master, and he denied to take it, then came another servant, and saith, if you will bring it to the clerk of the kitchen, you shall be remembered the better. Which was like the Friars Observant, that would be seen to receive no bribes themselves, but had others to receive them for them.

1553.  
Bribery.

In short, in the court they took bribes; in the country they oppressed the poor, by raising their rents, taking usury, even to forty per cent. Landlords turned graziers, and bought up the grain, to sell dear against a hard time. In the city they bought up wood and coals. Some burgesses became regrators also; and some farmers regrated and bought up all the corn in the markets, and laid it up in store, to sell it again at a higher price, when they saw their time. There was a merchant, that had travelled all the days of his life in the trade of merchandize, and had got 3000*l.* or 4000*l.* by buying and selling: but in case he might have been licensed to practise regrating, he would undertake to get 1000*l.* a year, only by buying and selling grain here within the realm; and in London there were some aldermen that became colliers and woodmongers. So that there could not a poor body buy a sack of coals, but it must come through their hands; which made our preacher sue to King Edward that there might be *promoters*, such as were in King Henry's days, to *promote* (that is, inform against) the king's own officers, when they did amiss; and to promote all other

Abuses.

p. 455.

1553. offenders: such as rent-raisers, oppressors of the poor, extortioners, bribers, usurers. But he would have them to be of godly discretion, wisdom, and conscience.

Want of  
discipline  
the cause  
of these  
disorders.

One great reason of all these abuses, corruptions, and gross impieties, that reigned now in the nation, was, the neglect of ecclesiastical discipline: which the churchmen either could not, or would not, execute against immoralities. The manners of men were very bad; and upon occasion of the sins of uncleanness (for which the nation was very infamous, and especially London, and such lechery as was used in none other places of the world, and yet made but a matter of sport) hereupon good men wished that the law of Moses might be brought into force, for the punishment of this sin. And Latymer applied himself to the king, to restore discipline unto the church: "That such as were notable offenders might be excommunicated, and put from the congregation, till they be confounded; which would be a means (said he) to pacify God's wrath and indignation against us, and also that less abominations be practised than in times past have been, and are at this day. Bring into the church of England that open disciplin of excommunication (saith he) that open sinners may be stricken withal."

These  
times and  
the former  
compared.

And thus we have taken a sight how dissolute these times were. Not that these days of King Edward were worse than the former; but that now, upon the light of the gospel, these wickednesses, that were not so much regarded before, were now more observed. So the writer of the epistle dedicatory to Erasmus's Paraphrase in English: "Because it is in so great a manner amended, look where such corruption still remaineth, there doth it better and more notably appear; as strange things are commonly more wondred at. For all good and godly folks do now wonder, that God's word being spread abroad, and being now almost in every body's hand and mouth so common, there should be any creature, in whom any of the enormities afore-mentioned should reign." For though



these times were bad, yet they were better than the times before. So the aforesaid writer, concerning the beginning of King Edward's reign: "Of this young and green foundation, being yet very newly laid, thus much good edifying hath already grown in all persons' consciences, that blasphemy, perjury, theft, whoredom, making of affrayes, and other abominations, are more detested, than they were in the blind world, very late years gone." And again, "A great many that have hated matrimony, and yet have not hated fornication, incest, advoutry, begin now to abhor, and manifestly to fly these, and other like pestilences, and exercise the contraries." 1553.

The *taxes* that happened in this king's reign, and monies given him by parliament, may not be improper to be here set down, for the letting in some further light into this history. And to do this, I shall but transcribe a brief computation thereof, done to my hand by Sir Walter Raleigh. p. 454.

"In the second year of King Edward VI. the parliament gave the king an aid of twelve-pence the pound, of goods of his natural subjects, and two shillings the pound of strangers. And this to continue for three years. And by the statute of the second and third of Edward VI. it may appear, the same parliament did also give a second aid, as followeth: to wit, of every ewe, kept in several pastures, three-pence; of every wether, kept as aforesaid, two-pence; of every sheep kept in the common, three halfpence. The house gave the king also eight-pence the pound, of every woollen cloth made for the sale throughout England, for three years. In the third and fourth of the king, by reason of the troublesome gathering of the pole-money upon sheep, and the tax upon cloth, this act of subsidy was repealed, and other relief given the king. And in the seventh year he had a subsidy, and two fifteenths." Prerogative of parliaments.

I will add here, the sum of the charges of the king's household for one week, begining Sunday, December

1553.  
The ex-  
pences of  
the house-  
hold. MSS.  
*penes me.*

29th, in the third year of his reign; which were as follow:

*The charges of the household on*

	£.	s.	d.
Sunday, were . . .	149	19	09 <i>ob.q.</i>
Monday, . . .	131	01	08 <i>ob.q.</i>
Tuesday, . . .	129	03	10 <i>ob.</i>
Wednesday, . . .	164	12	09 <i>ob.</i>
Thursday, . . .	151	16	03
Friday, . . .	126	17	06
Saturday, . . .	149	11	00

---

Sum total . 1003 02 11*ob.*

---

The charges of the household for one week, beginning Sunday, March 16th, in the same third year of the king, were as follow:

*The charges of the household on*

	£.	s.	d.
Sunday, were . . .	124	07	04
Monday, . . .	117	19	00 <i>q.</i>
Tuesday, . . .	112	00	06 <i>ob.</i>
Wednesday, . . .	114	19	03
Thursday, . . .	117	19	11 <i>ob.</i>
Friday, . . .	118	18	04
Saturday, . . .	122	01	07

---

Sum total . 828 06 00 *q.*

---

I subjoin the expences of the king's household yearly; which were as follow:

	£.	s.	d.
The last half year of King Henry VIII. . . .	28,080	14	02 <i>ob.</i>
And the first half year of King Edward VI. . . .	21,107	04	06
In all for one whole year	49,187	18	08 <i>ob.</i>

The second whole year of	£.	s.	d.	1555. p. 455.
King Edward's reign . .	46,902	07	03	
The third year of his reign . .	46,100	03	11 <i>ob.q.</i>	
The fourth year of his reign . .	100,578	16	04 <i>ob.</i>	
The fifth year of his reign . .	62,863	09	01 <i>ob.q.</i>	
The sixth year of his reign . .	65,923	16	04 <i>q.</i>	

During these three last years of the king, his prerogative (of taking up provisions, I suppose, at an easy rate) ceased ; which heightened the account of his household expences.

To fill up this work, and for a conclusion of these historical collections, as I have hitherto endeavoured to give some account of *things* and *matters* remarkable, so I shall set before the reader the *men*, whether in state or church, of most eminence for their honours, qualities, or trusts committed to them ; and that under several distinct ranks and orders, as follow :

## CHAP. XXV.

Creations. The king's counsellors. Courtiers, and great officers.

THIS chapter shall shew what creations of noble-men happened in this reign, and give a catalogue of the names of the king's counsellors, lords lieutenants of the counties, and most of the chief officers of the household, or otherwise.

I. For the creations of nobility by this king, I am beholden both to a manuscript of the right reverend father John, late Lord Bishop of Ely, and likewise to the Office of Heralds. The nobles created by him were seventeen. Noblemen  
created.

### DUKES.

1. Edward Seymor, Earl of Hertford, and Viscount Beauchamp, created Duke of Somerset, Feb. 12, 1546; and had issue, Edward, Earl of Hertford.

1553.

2. Henry Grey, Marquis of Dorset, Lord Ferrys of Groby, Harrington, Bonvyle and Aystley, created Duke of Suffolk, October 11th, 1551. He had Henry, Lord Harrington, who died without issue, and three daughters.

3. John Dudley, Viscount Lysle, Baron of Somer-rye, Basset and Teyes, and Lord Dudley, created Duke of Northumberland, October 11th, 1551. Earl of Warwic, February 17th, 1546; then made High Chamberlain of England: made Earl Marshal of England in the 5th of Edward VI. April 20th: had issue Ambrose, Earl of Warwic, and Robert, Earl of Leicester, and other sons. He bore a crescent for distinction in his arms.

p. 456.

## MARQUISSES.

4. William Par, Lord Par, of Kendal, Marmyon, and S. Quintin; created Marquis of Northampton by King Edward VI. Feb. 17, 1546; and Earl of Essex by King Henry VIII. and died without issue.

5. William Paulet, Lord S. John of Basing, created Marquis of Winchester, October 11, 1551, and Earl of Wilts, Jan. 19, 1549; and afterward made Lord Treasurer of England. Bore a crescent in his coat for distinction. He left issue John.

## EARLS.

6. Thomas Wriothesly, created Earl of Southampt-  
ton, and Lord Wriothesly, of Titchfield, Feb. 17, 1546; of whom descended Henry, his son, Earl of Southampton. (Dugdale makes this, and the other creations about this time, to be Feb. 16, that is, three days before the coronation, which yet happened February 20.)

7. John Russel, Lord Russel, created Earl of Bedford, Jan. 19, 1549, and after made lord privy seal. Had issue, Francis, Earl of Bedford.

8. William Herbert, created Baron Herbert, of Cardiff, Oct. 10, 1551, and, the next day, Earl of Pembroke. Father to Henry, Earl of Pembroke.



## VISCOUNTS.

1553.

9. Walter Devoreux, Lord Ferris, of Chartley, created Viscount Hereford, Feb. 2, 1549. Of whom descended Walter Devoreux, Viscount Hereford, his grandson, by Sir Richard Devoreux, his son.

## BARONS.

10. Gregory Cromwel, son of Thomas Cromwel, Earl of Essex, was created Lord Cromwel, of Okeham; and had issue, the Lord Cromwel. (This is an error; for this creation happened not in this reign, but Dec. 18, 37 of Hen. VIII. This Lord Cromwel died 5 Edw. VI.)

11. Thomas Seymour, brother to Edward, Duke of Somerset, was created Lord Seymour, of Sudley, Feb. 17, 1546, and made Lord Admiral; and died without issue.

12. Richard Rich, created Lord Rich, of Lighes, Feb. 17, 1546; and had issue, Richard (Robert, according to Dugdale) Lord Rich.

13. William Willoughby, heir male to the Lord Willoughby, of Eresby (mistaken; in truth heir male to Sir Christopher Willoughby) created Lord Willoughby, of Parham, Feb. 17, 1546; and had issue, Charles, Lord Willoughby.

14. Edmund Sheffield, created Lord Sheffield, of Butterwick, Feb. 17, 1546. John, Lord Sheffield, his son and heir.

15. William Paget, called by writ to the lords' house, Dec. 3, created Lord Paget, of Beaudesert, Jan. 19, 1549, and Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter; who had issue, Henry, Lord Paget, that died without issue.

16. Thomas Darcy, created April 5, 1551, Lord Darcy of Chich, and Knight of the noble Order of the Garter; father to John, Lord Darcy.

p. 457.

17. . . . . Ogle, created Lord Ogle. (This is erroneous; for his creation was in the reign of Edward IV. not of Edward VI.)

1553.

II. The names of King Edward's council, upon his first access to the crown, to assist the protector, were as follow :

Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury.

William, Lord St. John, Great Master of the King's Household, and President of the Council.

John, Lord Russel, Keeper of the Privy Seal.

William, Marquis of Northampton.

John, Earl of Warwick, Great Chamberlain of England.

Henry, Earl of Arundel, Lord Chamberlain.

Thomas, Lord Seymour, of Sudley, High Admiral of England.

Cutbert, Bishop of Durham.

Richard, Lord Rich.

Sir Thomas Cheyney, Knight of the Order, Treasurer of the Household.

Sir John Gate, Knight of the Order, Comptroller of the Household.

Sir Anthony Browne, Knight of the Order, Master of the Horse.

Sir Anthony Wyngfield, Knight of the Order, Vice-chamberlain.

Sir Wm. Paget, Knight of the Order, Chief Secretary.

Sir Wm. Petre, one of the two Principal Secretaries.

Sir Ralph Sadleyr, Master of the great Wardrobe.

Sir John Baker, of the Augmentation Office.

Dr. Wotton, Dean of Canterbury and York.

Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber.

Sir Edward North, Chancellor of the Courts of Augmentations and Revenues of the Crown.

Sir Edward Montague, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

Sir Edward Wotton.

Sir Edmund Peckham, Cofferer of the Household.

Sir Thomas Bromely, one the Justices of the Common Pleas.

Sir Richard Southwel.

The names of the privy counsellors, anno 1552,  
were as follow :

Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury.	Lord Rich.	
Thomas, Bishop of Ely, Lord Chancellor.	Mr. Comptroller, Sir An- thony Wyngfield.	
The Lord Treasurer, Mar- quis of Winchester.	Mr. Treasurer, Sir Tho- mas Cheyne.	
The Duke of Northum- berland.	Mr. Vice-chamberlain, Sir John Gates.	
Lord Privy Seal, Earl of Bedford.	Mr. Secretary Petre.	
The Duke of Suffolk.	Mr. Secretary Cecyl.	
The Marquis of North- ampton.	Sir Philip Hoby.	
The Earl of Shrewsbury.	Sir Robert Bowes.	
The Earl of Westmore- land.	Sir John Gage, Constable of the Tower.	
The Earl of Huntingdon.	Sir John Mason, Secre- tary for the French	p. 458.
The Earl of Pembroke.	Tongue.	
Viscount Hereford.	Sir Ralph Sadleir.	
Lord Admiral, Lord Clin- ton.	Sir John Baker, Chancel- lor of the Court of	
Lord Chamberlain, Lord Darcy.	Augmentations.	
Lord Cobham.	Judge Bromely.	
	Judge Mountague.	
	Dr. Wotton.	
	Mr. North.	

These that follow were King Edward's council in  
the North :

Francis, Earl of Shrews- bury, Lord President.	John, Lord Conyers.
Henry, Earl of West- moreland.	Thomas, Lord Wharton.
Henry, Earl of Cumber- berland.	John Hind, Kt. one of his Majesty's Justices of the Common Pleas.
Cuthbert, Bishop of Dur- ham.	Edmund Molineux, Kt. Serjeant at Law.
William, Lord Dacres, of the North.	Henry Savyle, Kt.
	Robert Bowes, Kt.
	Nicolas Fairfax, Kt.

George Conyers, Kt.  
 Leonard Beckwith, Kt.  
 William Babthorp, Kt.  
 Anthony Nevyl, Kt.  
 Thomas Gargrave, Kt.  
 Robert Mennel, Serjeant  
 at Law.

Anthony Bellasis, Esq.  
 John Rokeby, Doctor of  
 Law.  
 Robert Chaloner, Esq.  
 Richard Norton, Esq.  
 Thomas Eymis, Esq. Se-  
 cretary.

The president and council in the Marches of  
 Wales, by a commission from the king, anno 1551,  
 were as follow :

Sir William Herbert, Pre-  
 sident.  
 The Earl of Worcester.  
 Walter, Viscount Here-  
 ford.  
 Robert, Bishop of St.  
 Asaph.  
 Edward, Lord Powis.  
 Sir Robert Townsend.  
 Sir Thomas Bromely.  
 Sir John Packington.  
 Sir John Savage.  
 Sir Richard Cotton.  
 Sir Anthony Kingston.  
 Sir John Setlow.  
 Sir George Herbert.  
 Sir Richard Mauxel.

Sir Thomas Johns.  
 Sir Walter Denys.  
 Sir Edward Carne.  
 Sir Roland Hill.  
 Sir James Croft.  
 Sir Robert Acton.  
 Sir Nicolas Arnold.  
 Sir John Price.  
 Sir Adam Mitton.  
 Griffith Leyson.  
 John Pollard.  
 Matthew Herbert.  
 John Skidmore.  
 Richard Hussal.  
 William Shelden.  
 John Basset.  
 John Throgmorton.

Lords jus-  
 tices and  
 lords-lieu-  
 tenants of  
 the coun-  
 ties.

III. These were the king's justices commissioned  
 in May, 1552, and lords-licutenants of the counties :  
 who were to inquire of all treasons, misprisions of  
 treasons, insurrections, rebellions, unlawful assem-  
 blies, and conventicles, unlawful speaking of words,  
 confederacies, conspiracies, false allegations, con-  
 tempts, falsehood, negligences, concealments, oppres-  
 sions, riots, routs, murders, felonies, and all other  
 evil doings. And to appoint certain days and places  
 for inquiry thereof : and to be the king's licutenants for  
 levying of men, and to fight against the king's enemies



and rebels, and to execute upon them the martial law; and subdue all invasions, insurrections, &c. as should chance to be moved in any place; as it ran in their commissions : p. 459.

The Duke of Northumberland, for the counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and Barwick.

The Earl of Bedford, for Dorset, Somerset, Devon, and Cornwall.

The Earl of Sussex, Lord Dudley, Sir William Fermour, and Sir John Robsert, for Norfolk.

The Earl of Shrewsbury, for Yorkshire, and the city of York.

The Lord Darcy, the Lord Wentworth, and Sir Anthony Wyngfield, for Suffolk.

The Duke of Northumberland, and Viscount Hereford, for Staffordshire.

The Earl of Darby, for Lancashire.

The Lord Chancellor, for the Isle of Ely.

The Lord Marquis of Northampton, for the counties of Northampton, Bedford, Surrey, Hertford, Cambridge, Berks, and Oxon.

The Lord Treasurer, for Southampton, and the Isle of Wight.

The Lord Clinton, for Lincolnshire.

The Earl of Oxford, Lord Darcy, Lord Rich, and Sir John Gates, for Essex.

The Earl of Westmoreland, for the Bishoprick of Durham.

The Duke of Northumberland and Earl of Warwick, for Warwick.

The Earl of Pembroke, for Wilts.

Sir Robert Bowes, for Middlesex.

The Duke of Suffolk, for Leicester.

The Earl of Huntingdon, for Darby and Rutland.

The Lord Warden, for Kent and Canterbury.

The Earl of Rutland, for Nottingham.

Sir Robert Tyrwit, and Thomas Audley, Esq. for Huntingdon.

The Lord Russel, for Bucks.

The Lord La Ware, for Sussex.

The Earl of Cumberland, for Westmoreland.

The Earl of Pembroke, for Wales, and the Marches thereof.

IV. Of persons in place and office, and chief about the king, these were the most eminent :

Goodrick, Bishop of Ely, Lord Chancellor.

Lord Marquis of Winchester, Lord High Treasurer.

The Earl of Bedford, Lord Privy Seal.

The Duke of Northumberland, Lord Great Master.

The Marquis of Northampton, Lord High Chamberlain of England.

Lord Darcy, of Chiche, Lord Chamberlain of the Household.

Lord Clinton, Lord High Admiral of England.

The Earl of Warwick, Master of the King's Horses.

Sir Anthony Wyngfield and Sir Richard Cotton, successively Comptrollers of the King's House.

Sir John Gates, Vice-chamberlain, and Chancellor of the Duchy.

Sir John Williams, Master of the Jewel-house.

p. 460. Gentlemen of the king's privy chamber ; whereof four were called, The Principal Gentlemen.

The Lord Strange, Sir Robert Dudley,

Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Henry Nevyl,

Sir Thomas Wroth, Sir Henry Gates,

Sir Nic. Throgmorton, Sir Henry Sidney,

Barnaby Fitz-Patric, Sir William Stanley,

Sir John Cheke, And some others.

Sir Ralph Sadleyr, Master of the Wardrobe.

Sir William Cavendish, Treasurer of the Chamber.

Sir William Petre and Sir William Cecyl, Principal Secretaries of State.

Sir John Mason, Secretary for the French Tongue.

Sir George Howard, Master of the King's Henchmen.

Sir John Gage, Constable of the Tower.

Sir James Croft, Lord Deputy of Ireland.

Richard Cecyl and Robert Robotham, Esqrs. Yeomen of the Robes.

Clerks of the council.

Sir Thomas Chaloner,	William Thomas,
Bernard Hampton,	William Honnins.
Armagil Waad,	

Cutbert Vaughan, Esq. Master of the King's Bears, Bulls, and Dogs.

V. The names of the high sheriffs of Essex and Hertfordshire were these :

An.Reg.

1. Edward Brocket, of Hatfield, Esq.
2. John Cock, of Brokesburn, Esq.
3. Sir John Gates, of Chesthunt, Kt.
4. Sir George Norton, Kt.
5. Sir Henry Tyrrel, of Heron, Kt.
6. Sir Thomas Pope, of Tittenhanger, Kt.

VI. The names of the king's chief captains, and head officers in Calais and Guisnes, and the Marches thereof, in the latter end of his reign, were these :

The Lord William Howard,	John Harleston,
	George Brown,
The Lord Grey,	Edward Grimston,
Sir Anthony Aucher,	Sir Thomas Cotton,
Sir Raynold Scot,	Nicolas Alexander,
Sir Maurice Denys,	Eustace Abingdon.

## CHAP. XXVI.

p. 461.

A catalogue of the bishops in this king's reign ; with remarks upon them.

AND as these were the chief of quality and honour among the laity, so for those of that figure among the spiritualty, I shall offer here the names

of the several archbishops and bishops that governed the respective sees under this king; of whom were not above half a score that heartily favoured and furthered the reformation of religion.

#### ARCHBISHOPS.

Canter-  
bury.

*Cranmer*, a privy counsellor: memorials of whom were some years ago published. To him the church of England oweth her excellent reformation. He was a married man, and left a son of his own name, who was restored in blood in the fifth of Queen Elizabeth. This archbishop was martyred by fire at Oxford, under Queen Mary.

York.

*Holgate*, a favourer of the reformation. The only wealthy prelate in this reign, and a married man. He purchased of the king the manor of Scrowby, in Nottinghamshire; and, after his own, and his wife's death, laid it to the archbishoprick of York. Upon the coming of Queen Mary to the crown, he was cast into the Tower, spoiled of vast treasure, plate, and jewels, and household stuff, at his houses at Cawood, and at Battersea, in Surrey, and other places, where he sometimes resided.

#### BISHOPS.

London.

*Boner*. He was deposed under King Edward's reign; but restored under Queen Mary, by sentence of Dr. John Tregonwel. Commonly called Bloody Boner, for his popish zeal, in sentencing so many professors of the gospel to the flames. He was deprived again under Queen Elizabeth, and remained excommunicate several years before his death. Supposed to be base son of one Savage, a priest. He died in the Marshalsea.

*Ridley*. He succeeded upon the deprivation of Boner. A great instrument, and assistant to Cranmer, in the reformation of this church; very learned and pious. He was chaplain to King Henry VIII. before whom he once preached a notable sermon, at the marriage of the Lady Clynton to Sir Anthony



Browne, master of the horse to that king. He was martyred by fire under Queen Mary; and died unmarried.

*Gardiner*, deprived under this king, and laid in the Tower; but under Queen Mary restored, and advanced to be Lord Chancellor of England. He was Chancellor also of the University of Cambridge, and Master of Trinity Hall there, which place he held to his death. He is supposed to be the base son of Woodvile, Bishop of Salisbury; but he gave the coat of the Gardiners, of Glemsford, near Ipswich, in Suffolk; which was, azure, a cross, or, charged with a cinquefoil, gules, pierced; or rather, a rose (which, I suppose, was an addition granted him by the king) between four griffins' heads erased, argent, languid, gules: as I observe from an ancient picture of this prelate's, in the possession of my worthy friend, Sir Richard Gibbs, of Whetham, in Suffolk, Kt. Upon the frame is writ his motto, *Vana salus hominis*. When that picture was taken of him, he was fifty-three years of age. He is represented with a surplice close at the wrists, and a scarf over it; a square cap on his head, a book in his hand, two great stoned rings upon his two fore-fingers, the one a ruby, and the other a sapphire; and another small ring upon the little finger of his left hand. A severe, black visage, shaven close, and his eyebrows somewhat hanging over his eyes.

Winches-  
ter.

p. 462.

*Ponet*. Upon Gardiner's deprivation, he succeeded. He had been Archbishop Cranmer's chaplain. He had 2000 marks a-year settled upon him: the rest of the temporalities of this rich bishoprick was taken into the king's hands, who bestowed most of the good manors and lands thereof upon several of his courtiers. This bishop was one of that order in this reign that cordially favoured religion, and was an exile under Queen Mary. Bale, the antiquary, and Goodacre, were at one time this bishop's chaplains, and went both together into Ireland; one to be Bishop of Ossory, and the other Archbishop of Armagh.

Durham.

*Tonstal*, a privy counsellor, and long experienced in matters of state. He went along with the reformation for some years, till at length he was laid in the Tower for misprision of treason, in concealing a conspiracy in the North, and was deprived. He was base born; restored by Queen Mary, and died a very aged man, about a year after Queen Elizabeth's access to the crown. He wrote a book, "*De Veritate Corporis et Sanguinis Domini nostri in Eucharistia*," in the year 1551; and was then seventy-seven years of age. Archbishop Parker buried him in Lambeth church, with the respect due to his character.

*Horn*, Dean of Durham, had the grant of this bishoprick, but enjoyed it not, having no mind to it, *Tonstal* being alive. It was soon after, by some resolves of council, dissolved by act of parliament. Upon a design of founding it anew, *Ridley*, Bishop of London, was nominated to it; but it went no further.

Ely.

*Goodrick*, a privy counsellor: he was advanced to be lord chancellor, after the resignation of Lord Rich. Noted for his impartial distribution of justice: gentle to his enemies, but somewhat too harsh to his friends and dependents. Under him the reformation succeeded well. He was employed much by King Henry, and King Edward, in embassies and matters of state. He was the son of Edward Goodrick, of Kirby, in Lincolnshire, by Jane his wife, daughter and heir of Williamson, of Boston, in the same county: and gave for his coat, argent, on a fesse, gules, between two lions passant gardant, sable, a flower-de-llys of the first, between two crescents, or.

Lincoln.

*Holbech*, a true favourer of the gospel, and made much use of in the reforming and settling of the church. He was called sometimes Henry Rands, of Holbech, in Lincolnshire. He had been Lord Prior of Worcester, and upon the new establishment of the cathedral churches, was made the first Dean of Worcester. He was married, and left a son, named

Thomas. Thirty-four rich manors, belonging to this see of Lincoln, were alienated in his time, though not by his fault. The sons of Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, were for some time educated under him at Bugden, and both died there of the sweating sickness. p. 463.

*Taylor*, a true well-willer to the reformation. Formerly incumbent of St. Peter's, Cornhill, in London; more lately Master of St. John's College, in Cambridge, and Dean of Lincoln. Succeeding Holbech in the year 1552. He was married; and upon that pretence thrust out of the parliament-house in the first of Queen Mary. Godwin tells us he died soon after at Ankerwick; perhaps at Sir Thomas Smith's house there, formerly a nunnery: for he and the bishop seem to have been old acquaintance at Cambridge.

*Sampson*. He was bred in St. Clement's Hostle, Cambridge. Though a papist, yet he complied so far, that he continued bishop throughout King Edward's reign. In the year 1551, he was appointed one of the commissioners for the limits of Scotland: and died under Queen Mary, anno 1554. Coventry and Lichfield.

*Salcot*, alias *Capon*, a papist, but made a shift to keep in all this king's reign. He spoiled the bishoprick; so that Jewel, his successor, found it so bare, that he complained he had no benefices to maintain learned men. He enriched himself, by making his bishoprick poor. Salisbury.

*Knight*. Employed much in embassies by King Henry. His house, by some exchange, was the nunnery without Aldgate, called The Minories; in a chapel whereof he was consecrated. Bath and Wells.

*Barlow*. A married man, and real friend to the reformation. He made some compliance in the beginning of Queen Mary, to save his life. Afterwards got beyond sea; and returned upon Queen Elizabeth's access to the crown; and was then made Bishop of Hereford. He left several daughters; all married to bishops.

*Voysey*, or *Veysy*, alias *Harman*. He was governor to the Lady Mary, when she had the title of Exeter.

Princess of Wales, and kept a great court. He was a brave courtly prelate, but made great spoil of the bishoprick, by selling away many lordships and seats from it. He, upon persuasion, and some good terms made for himself, resigned: but took his bishoprick again under Queen Mary. He sold the manor and burge of Paington, in Devon, and other lands and tenements, unto Sir Thomas Speke, Kt. by indenture, bearing date Decemb. 21, 1549, with the assent of the dean and chapter; which estate, it seems, the king had some pretence unto: therefore there was made by the king a confirmation, in Novemb. 1551, of the said purchase to him, with a release of all the king's right thereto. The Earl of Bedford also, and others of the council of King Edward, purchased good pennyworths of him. For the assuring of whose titles a letter was sent from the king and council to the bishop, March 10, 1550, to suffer the said earl, and others of the council, to procure the best assurance for the lands bought of him, appertaining to the bishoprick: for, it seems, he was not yet actually out of the bishoprick, though, in November before, a letter of thanks was sent him for surrendering thereof: which, I suppose, must be understood of his promise to surrender.

p. 464.

*Coverdale.* He lived long in Germany and Denmark; where he had a benefice, and married a sober woman, named Elizabeth, born in those parts. A grave, reverend, good man, and a serious promoter of the reformation of this church. He lived in exile under Queen Mary; returned home in Queen Elizabeth's reign, and assisted at the consecration of Matthew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury. He lived privately in London for some time: but in 1563 he was preferred to be rector of St. Magnus, London; whose poverty was such, that the queen forgave him his first-fruits. And such was the esteem he bore, that he had no less persons for his intercessors with the queen, than the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of London, the Earl of Leicester, and the



Secretary of State. He was a diligent corrector of the English Bible after Tindal : which is commonly called Coverdale's Translation.

*Rugge*, alias *Reps*. He had his name of Reps, Norwich. from the denomination of the town where he was born, or where his father lived, viz. North Reps, in Norfolk. He was Abbot of St. Benedict de Hulmo.

*Thirleby*. He was of Trinity Hall, in Cambridge, and kept under Bilney's chamber; being then a scholar, he used often to play upon his recorder for his diversion; and then good Bilney would go to his prayers. He was often sent abroad, as ambassador, by King Henry; who first preferred him to be Bishop of Westminster. He was dean of the chapel to King Edward, and by him sent to the emperor. He became Bishop of Ely under Queen Mary: and under Queen Elizabeth was deprived; but lived and died, with much freedom and good usage, with Archbishop Parker; who gave him honourable burial in Lambeth church.

*Hethe*. He was deprived in the year 1550, being Worcester. of the age of 49 years. After his deprivation he lived with Ridley, Bishop of London, during the reign of King Edward. And under Queen Mary, was advanced to be Archbishop of York, and Lord Chancellor of England. Deprived again under Queen Elizabeth, and lived many years in great plenty and freedom, at his manor of Cobham, in Surrey.

*Hoper*. Once a monk at Gloucester. He lived long in Germany, especially in Switzerland; where he became well known to Bullinger. Under King Edward he returned into England, and was chaplain to the Duke of Somerset, and a great preacher in and about London. He married a discreet woman of the Low Countries, and had by her several children. A zealous favourer of pure religion; and for that cause, martyred under Queen Mary, very cruelly.

*Wakeman*. He was the last Abbot of Tewkes- Gloucester bury, and the first Bishop of Gloucester.

*Hoper.* In the year 1552, this diocese of Gloucester and that of Worcester were united into one, by the king's patents; and from thenceforth to be taken and reputed for one: and Hoper was constituted the first bishop of the diocese of Worcester and Gloucester.

Hereford.

*Skyp.* He was once chaplain to Queen Anne Bolen, and her almoner. A forward man once for religion. He made away, by a long lease of two hundred years, his London house or inn, belonging to the bishops of Hereford, situate in the parish of St. Mary Mounthaw, or Mounthault, to the Lord Clinton, lord admiral.

p. 465.

*Harley.* An hearty friend to the reformation. Dr. Laurence Humfrey, President of Magdalen, and the king's professor of divinity, was his scholar in Magdalen College, Oxon. In Queen Mary's reign he instructed his flock in woods and secret places, and administered the sacrament according to the order of the English book; lurking up and down in the nation; and died in the hard reign of the said queen: yet living to the last year of her reign. Therefore it is an

De Minist.  
p. 393.

error of Mason's book, where he saith, that Harley assisted at the consecration of Bishop Grindal. It is an error also, that he makes those that assisted Archbishop Cranmer at the consecration of Harley, to be the suffragan of Sydon, and Tayler, Bishop of Lincoln, when indeed neither of them did, but Nicolas, Bishop of London, and Robert, Bishop of Carlisle, as may appear by the Archbishop's Register.

Ibid.

Chichester

*Day.* He complied for some years with King Edward's proceedings: but afterwards, for refusing to take down the altars in his diocese, he was deprived: yet restored under Queen Mary, being a zealous papist. He told Bradford in prison, who had charged him with departing from the reformed church in King Edward's days, "That he was but a young man, and then coming from the university, he went with the world, but it was always against his conscience." Under Queen Mary, he was one of the commis-

sioners for trying, judging, and sentencing the protestant divines, and other professors of religion.

*Scory.* An hearty embracer and furtherer of religion. He had been Archbishop Cranmer's chaplain, and one of the six preachers in Canterbury. A married man. He made some compliances under Queen Mary: but afterwards fled abroad, and was an exile, till he returned under Queen Elizabeth; and was placed by her, not in Chichester again, but over the diocese of Hereford.

*Ridley, Poynt, Scory.* Afterwards translated to Rochester. other dioceses, as above is shewn; and the diocese remained void for near two years.

*King.* He was first a monk of Rewly, or Royal-<sup>Oxford.</sup> lieu, near Oxford; then Abbot of Bruern, in Oxfordshire; after Abbot of Thame; and lastly, Abbot of Oseney; who surrendering those religious houses, or some of them, to King Henry VIII. was rewarded by being constituted the first Bishop of Oxford, having been suffragan Bishop of Reon, and called commonly Bishop of Thame, where he had been Abbot, and probably lived. He passed through all the changes under King Henry, King Edward, and Queen Mary, and died towards the latter end of her reign.

*Chambre.* There were two John Chambres con-<sup>Peter-</sup>temporary, and both eminent, and in holy orders: borough. one a doctor of physic, bred in Merton College, Oxon, where he was successively fellow and warden; and one of King Henry's physicians in ordinary, and that signed a letter, with five others of the said king's physicians, writ to the council, concerning the dangerous condition of Queen Jane, after the birth of Prince Edward; there styling himself Priest. He was Dean of St. Stephen's, Westminster, Archdeacon of Bedford, and one of the famous convocation, anno 1536, when the articles of religion were framed, and then signed himself *Johannes Chambre, Divi Stephani Decanus, et Bedford. Arch.* He died 1549. The other John Chambre was bachelor in divinity, a Bene-

p. 466. dictine monk, bred up chiefly in Cambridge; after made Abbot of Peterborough; and having resigned the said abbey to the king, he was constituted the first bishop thereof: and died 1556. It was Godwin's error (and an easy error it was) to confound both these Chambres, supposing them to be one and the same person; which Mr. Anthony A Wood hath taken notice of.

Bristol. *Bush.* This man also was governor of a religious house, and provincial of the order of religious men, called Bon Hommes, and well skilled in Physic, as well as divinity; and wrote learned books. He was married, and therefore deprived under Queen Mary. He was forced, though he opposed it stiffly for a time, to comply with the iniquity of this age, and to part with a good manor belonging to the bishoprick, in exchange with the king, namely, the manor of Leigh; which one Norton coveted, and obtained.

Carlisle. *Aldrich.* A man of good learning. A complier throughout this reign, though not well affected to the reformation.

Chester. *Bird.* About the year 1530 this man was sent to Bilney, then in prison, to confer and argue with him. He was then provincial of the White Friars; and then, or after, a suffragan in Coventry, where he was born. After, suffragan of Penrith; after, Bishop of Bangor; and then of Chester. He was married, and therefore deprived under Queen Mary: but in her reign, suffragan to Bishop Boner, and vicar of Dunmow, in Essex.

St. David's. *Barlow.* Of him somewhat before was said. He was the king's chaplain. When Stephen Gardiner, in the year 1528, then the king's secretary, commonly called Dr. Stephens, was ambassador at Rome with the pope, the king dispatched this Barlow, then a canon of St. Osyth's, in Essex, with letters to him. He was preferred to the priory of Haverford West by Queen Anne Bolen. When he was Bishop of St. David's, in the year 1537, he laboured with the Lord Cromwel, for the translation of the see to Car-



marthen, and the disposing of Aberguilly College to Brecknock, the principal towns of South Wales ; whereby provision being made for learning and knowledge in the scriptures, the Welsh rudeness might have been framed into English civility, and their gross superstitions in religious worship rectified and reformed. He wrote several books against popery. As, “ A Treatise of the Burial of the Mass :—A Dialogue between the Gentleman and the Countryman :—The climbing up of Friars, and Religious Persons, pourtrayed with figures :—A Description of God’s Word, compared to the Light.” Also a “ Dialogue, inveighing especially against St. Thomas of Canterbury :” but this was never printed.

*Ferrar.* A real professor and friend to the reformation, once a chaplain to the Duke of Somerset. He was one of the king’s visitors in the first year of his reign, and one of the preachers in that visitation. A married man. Unhappy in the contest some of his church raised against him, for their own ends, to stop his episcopal visitation of them. Whereby he was the less able to take care of collecting and returning of the tenths of his clergy : and so was cast into prison by the council for the king’s debt. And under Queen Mary, who found him in the Tower, martyred in the flames, for adhering to the gospel. He left children.

*Kitchin*, alias *Dunstan*. This man, according to the practice of several others of the popishly-affected bishops under King Edward, made a grievous waste and spoil of a very wealthy bishoprick. He was the only bishop, under Queen Mary, that continued in his bishoprick, and complied with the changes under Queen Elizabeth. p. 467.  
Landaff.

*Bulkley.* He sat bishop from the year 1541 to Bangor. the year 1555, that is, in three princes’ reigns. He was blind some time before his death. Being suddenly struck with blindness, as though it had been some judgment upon him for sacrilege.

*Parfew*, alias *Warton*, well affected to popery. St. Asaph.

Once Abbot of Bermondsey in Southwark. He made a spoil of his bishoprick by long leases. Under Queen Mary, he was translated to the see of Hereford.

## CHAP. XXVII.

A catalogue of divers letters, orders of council, commissions, &c. sent and given out in this reign: collected and preserved by John Fox.

FOR the conclusion of these collections of this reign, to let in some further sure light thereinto, especially as to the ecclesiastical state thereof, and to make up any defects in some of the foregoing relations, I shall here subjoin a catalogue of letters, orders of council, commissions, and other authentic records of this time, exemplified by Fox in his ninth book of Acts and Monuments. Fox is the storehouse, I am only the Index to point thereunto.

1. A Letter missive of Boner, Bishop of London, to the Bishop of Westminster, for the tenor of the archbishop's letter, for abolishing of candles, ashes, palms, and other ceremonies. Dated Jan. 28th, 1548.

2. A Letter of the Council, sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury, for abolishing images. Dated Feb. 11th, 1548.

3. Boner, Bishop of London, his letter sent with the archbishop's mandate to the Bishop of Westminster, for abolishing images. Dated Feb. 20th, 1548.

4. Letters missive from the Council to the Bishops of the land, concerning the communion to be ministered in both kinds. Dated March 13th, 1548.

5. A Letter directed from the King's Council to Boner, Bishop of London, for abrogating private masses, namely, the apostles' mass, within the church

of St. Paul's, used under the name of the Apostles' Communion. Dated June 24th, 1549.

6. A Letter of the said Bishop to the Dean and Canons, Residentiaries, Prebendaries, Sub-dean, and Ministers of the same Church, to the same import. Dated June 26th, 1549. p. 468.

7. The Lord Chancellor Rich his Speech in the Star-chamber to the Justices of the Peace, for the advancement and setting forward of the king's godly proceedings.

8. A Letter from the King and Council to Boner, Bishop of London, partly rebuking him of negligence, and partly charging him to see to the better setting out of the Service Book within his diocese. Dated July 23d, 1549.

9. Bishop Boner's Letter to the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's, in pursuance of the Letter abovesaid. Dated July 26th, 1549.

10. Certain private Injunctions and Articles, in number six, given, August 11th, 1549, to Bishop Boner by the Council, to be followed and observed by him.

11. The Articles of the Commons of Devonshire and Cornwall, sent to the King, anno 1549.<sup>1</sup>

12. A Message sent by the King's Majesty to certain of the People, assembled in Devonshire. Given at Richmond, July 8th, in the third of his reign.

13. The Council to Sir Anthony Cook, and the rest of the Commissioners for the Visitation at London, concerning Bishop Boner's Recantation, made before them, of his Protestation at the receiving of the Injunctions and Homilies. Dated Sept. 12th, 1547.

14. The Form of Boner's Recantation.

15. The Copy of the King's Commission sent down for the examination of Boner, Sept. 8th, 1549.

16. The Tenor and Form of Boner's Protestation, exhibited to the King's Commissioners at his first appearing.

17. A certain Declaration or Interpretation of the King, touching certain points and doubts in his former commission, with license given to the commissioners, as well to determine, as to hear, the case of Boner. Dated Sept. 17th.

18. Boner's Recusation of the Judgment of Sir Thomas Smith.

19. The first Appellation intimated by Boner, Bishop of London.

20. The second Recusation made by the said Bishop.

21. Bishop Boner's Letter to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London; charging them not to be abused with naughty preachers at Paul's. Dated Sept. 16th, 1549.

22. Boner's Declaration before the Commissioners.

23. His Supplication to the Lord Chancellor of England, with the rest of the Privy Council, from the Marshalsea, complaining of his imprisonment by the commissioners. Dated October 7th, 1549.

24. *Sententia Deprivationis lata contra Eadmund. London. Episcopum.*

25. Boner's Appeal in words from the Sentence Definitive.

26. Boner's Supplication to the Lord Chancellor, and the rest of the Council, complaining of the commissioners. Dated October 26th, 1549.

27. The Heads of another Supplication to the King from the said Boner, desiring his Majesty's Letter of Supersedeas against the Commissioners; and that the matter might be heard before the council.

p. 469. 28. The King and Council's Letter to Nicolas, Bishop of London, for taking down of altars in churches, dated Nov. 24th, 1550, with certain reasons, why the Lord's board should rather be after the form of a table, than of an altar.

29. The Lady Mary to the Protector and the rest of the Council, concerning her conformity to the king's proceedings. Dated June 22d, 1549.

30. A Remembrance of certain Matters appointed



by the Council to be declared by Dr. Hopton to the Lady Mary's grace, for answer to her former letter. Dated June 14th (24th) 1549.

31. The Lady Mary to the Lord Protector and the rest of the Council. Dated June 27th, 1549.

32. The King's Majesty's Letter to the Lady Mary. Dated Jan. 24th, 1550.

33. The Lady Mary to the King's most excellent Majesty. Dated Feb. 3d.

34. The Lady Mary to the Lords of the Council, Dec. 4th, 1550.

35. The Council to the Lady Mary, Dec. 25th.

36. The Lady Mary to the Lords of the Council, May 2d, 1551.

37. The Council to the Lady Mary, May 6th, 1551.

38. The Lady Mary to the Council, May 11.

39. The Council to the Lady Mary, May 27th, 1551.

40. The Lady Mary to the Lords of the Council, June 21st, 1551.

41. The Council to the Lady Mary, June 24th, 1551.

42. The Lady Mary to the King's Majesty, August 19.

43. The King to the Lady Mary, August 24th.

44. The King's Majesty's Instructions concerning their Message to the Lady Mary, given to the Lord Chancellor, Sir Anthony Wyngfield, and Sir William Petre, August 24th.

45. A Writ or Evidence touching the order and manner of the Misdemeanor of Stephen, Bishop of Winchester; with declaration of the faults where-with he was justly charged.

46. Letter of the Bishop of Winchester to Mr. Vaughan of Portsmouth, concerning pulling down certain images in that town. Dated May 3d, 1547.

47. Divers Letters of the Protector to that Bishop, and of that Bishop to the Protector, dated from Southwark and Winchester, 1547.

48. The Bishop of Winchester to Ridley, containing matter and objections against a certain Sermon of his, made at court.

49. The Tenor and Copy of a Letter sent from the Duke of Somerset to the Bishop of Winchester, touching such points as the said Bishop should intreat of in his Sermon. Dated June 28th, 1548.

50. A Letter sent to the Bishop of Winchester, signed by the King, and subscribed by the Council, together with certain Articles for him to subscribe. Dated July 4th, 1550.

51. The Sequestration of the Bishop of Winchester.

52. The Appeal of the said Bishop before the Sentence Definitive.

53. The Sentence Definitive against him.

54. A Letter of the Lord Protector to the Lord Russel, Lord Privy Seal, concerning troubles working against him. Dated October 6th, 1549.

55. The Lord Protector to the Council at London, October 7th, 1549.

p. 470.

56. The King's Letter to Sir Henry Amcotts, Lord Mayor, and Sir Rowland Hill, Mayor elect, and to the Aldermen and Citizens of London, to levy men to attend upon him, and his uncle the Protector. Dated October 6th, with the Protector's name subscribed.

57. The Lord's Letter to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens of London, for a supportation of armed men against the Protector. Dated also October 6th, 1549.

58. Articles objected against the Lord Protector.

59. An Epistle of young Prince Edward to the Archbishop of Canterbury, his godfather.

60. Another Epistle of the same to the same.

61. The Answer of the Archbishop to Prince Edward's Epistle.

62. Dr. Cox, the Prince's Schoolmaster, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, concerning the prince's proficiency.

## 63. The Prayer of King Edward before his death.

From all which may be collected, ample matter for a further illustration of the state of affairs in this king's reign.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

## Animadversions upon Sir John Hayward's Life and Reign of King Edward VI.

AS I have in several places of the foregoing History taken occasion to correct some errors, or defects, in Sir John Hayward's book, so I cannot conclude my Collections of this king, without some few more Animadversions thereon; and that out of that private love I bear to the truth of history, and that public concern that inspires me with a care of posterity; and that it be not (as it is too much) imposed upon with falsehood: and that those that are long since dead, be not represented quite different from what indeed they were; and that, too often, to the diminishing of their reputation to posterity.

Posterity  
not to be  
imposed  
upon, nor  
the dead  
to be mis-  
represented.

Hayward's style and language are good, and so is his fancy too, only he makes too much use of it for an historian; which puts him sometimes to make speeches for others, which they never spake, nor perhaps thought on. There is one made for the king, upon his reflection on the loss of his uncle, the Duke of Somerset, too wise, and too deep, for a child-king to think, or utter. It is another imperfection in our author, that he shewed himself too partial, seldom speaking well of the reformation, nor of the chief reformers, especially those of the clergy, as of Goodrick, Bishop of Ely; Latymer, sometime Bishop of Worcester; and Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury. Against the two last whereof, especially, he shot out his arrows, even bitter words, and framed such characters of them, as, if true, would have rendered them very evil men. His pen is, for the most

Hayward's  
imperfec-  
tions.  
Life of K.  
Edw. 4to.  
Pr. 1630.  
p. 111.

p. 471. part, dipped in vinegar and gall, giving sharp and ill descriptions of men generally, and making the reign to run altogether upon intrigue and ill design; and that, however plausibly things outwardly appeared, other matters were drove at. And lastly, it is a fault in him, that he wrote a history without any chronology, and leaves his reader to grope for the knowledge of the time, and the months, and years, wherein the respective things fell out; the want of which spoils the beauty and evidence of history, and makes the notices of things confused and uncertain.

The authors by him used.

Page 3.

The authors he is beholden to for assisting him with the materials of his history, are four especially: the first is, Patten's Account of the Expedition into Scotland, by the Duke of Somerset, in the first year of the king (which author is transcribed into Hollingshed, whence, I suppose, he had it), and that is the reason he is so large and particular in that affair: but that author assists him no farther than where that expedition ended. His second assistant is Hollingshed's History, which he often transcribes, and sometimes mends the speeches which he meets with there, by his own fancy and additions. His third author is King Edward himself, in his excellent Journal, which, it seems, he had the perusal of by the favour of Sir Robert Cotton; and so he acknowledges: but this Journal containing but short and imperfect notices of things that fell out, our author hath taken too much liberty sometimes, to fill up and add unto them by his own mere conjectures, confidently related as matters of truth, which yet sometimes prove mistakes; and where the Journal is at an end (for it concludes in November, 1552) his history is well near ended too, though there were eight months between that and the king's death. The fourth author he makes use of, is Nicolas Sanders, "*De Schism. Anglicano*;" a most profligate fellow, a very slave to the Roman see, and a sworn enemy to his own country, caring not what he writ, if it might but throw reproach and dirt enough upon the reforming kings and princes, the reformers,



and the reformation. From this man he ventures to take some things that he sets down in his book, scurrilous and false: but as for records, registers, manuscript letters, to improve or justify his history, and to present his readers with some new things, and unknown before, he offers nothing else.

This for the faults of the history in general. I proceed now to make some particular remarks and observations upon some passages in it: yet prefacing this before I begin, that I do not this out of any prejudice or vain-glory, or love of contention or contradiction, or any other ill end (for I know mine own imperfections), but for the sake of truth only, and to contribute my poor mite towards the maintaining of it.

Page 1, Hayward writes, King Edward was born the 17th day of October, 1537.] Whereas, according to Cooper, Stow, Hollingshed, the Lord Herbert, and the best historians, the 12th, being the eve of St. Edward, was the day of his birth.

The day of the king's birth.

First edit.

*Pag. eadem*, he writes, That all reports constantly ran, that his mother's body was opened for his birth, and that she died of the incision the fourth day following.] This, I make no question, was a popish invention at first, and the report soon became current among that party, out of ill-will to King Henry, to render him cruel, and the prince his son unluckily born. Sanders, as far as I can see, first gave out the story; who writes, That when the queen was in hard labour, they asked the king whose life they should save, the queen's, or the young infant's? and he answered, *He could very easily have more wives.* But neither Cooper, in his *Epitome of Chronicles*, nor Hollingshed, nor the Lord Herbert, say a word of this. And Bishop Burnet mentions original letters in the Cotton Library, that shew how the queen was well delivered of the prince, and died in child-bed the next day; or rather, two days after, according to Hollingshed and Herbert, and other our best historians. Those letters are exemplified by Dr. Fuller, in his

Not cut out of his mother's womb.

P. 472.

Book VII. Church History; the one from the queen herself, the  
 p. 421, 422. other from her physicians; both wrote to the council.

Cox and  
 Cheke his  
 instructors. P. 3, he speaks of the instructors of the young  
 prince, namely, Dr. Cox and Mr. Cheke.] But he  
 leaves out Sir Anthony Cook, who was also a great  
 guide of his learning and manners in those early years  
 of his.

Moreover, of Cox and Cheke he asserts, that they  
 were of mean birth, and that they might be well said  
 to be born of themselves.] As for the former, I can  
 say but little; only that one of both his names, viz.  
 Richard Cox, was an eminent citizen and skinner of  
 London, and buried at St. Austin's church, anno 1467,  
 where he had a monument. As for Cheke, his family  
 was ancient, and of good wealth: I find one Mar-  
 garet Cheke, under King Richard III. who granted  
 her a licence to found a chantry, with one priest, in  
 the parish church of Long Ashton, nigh Bristol, which  
 bespake her a woman of quality and wealth. This  
 Cheke was sprung from the Chekes of the Isle of  
 Wight; the antiquity of which family is traced as far  
 upward as King Richard the Second's time, when a  
 Cheke married a daughter of the Lord Mountague:  
 as Dr. Fuller teaches us, who also takes notice of this  
 error of our author.

Ecclesiast.  
 Hist.

Upon Cheke's learning also he casts a blur, when  
 he says, That for his other sufficiencies, besides skill  
 in Latin and Greek, he was pedantic enough, as ap-  
 pears by his books.] I believe Sir John Hayward  
 saw only three books written by him, and scarcely  
 them (no more of his, I think, being ever published),  
 viz. his Translation of two Orations of St. Chrysostom,  
 that then first saw the light; his Letters to Bishop  
 Gardiner, concerning the true way of pronouncing  
 Greek, wrote in Latin; and his "True Subject to  
 the Rebel," in English, which no man can depart  
 from the reading of, but with very high opinion of  
 Cheke's great ingenuity and learning. He was a man  
 of great reading, an excellent Platonist and philoso-  
 pher; one of the first restorers of good polite learn-

ing in Cambridge. Dr. Thomas Wylson, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, and his contemporary in the university, who well knew him, called him, "That rare learned man, and singular ornament of the land." Much more might be said of the worth of the man, if this were a place.

Epist. Dedic. to Sir Will. Cecil, before his translation of De-mosth. Orat.

P. 4. Great preparations were made, after he was nine years old, for the creating or declaring him Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Count Palatine of Chester.] The Lord Herbert writes, This prince was made so six days after his birth; at which time there was a creation of two other earls, viz. the Earls of Hertford and Southampton. But this, indeed, Hayward took out of the King's Journal, that speaks of the great preparations for it, when he was about that age. But he, as doubting of the prince's creation now, added, *or declaring* him so to be.

The prince's creation. P. 494.

p. 473.

*Ibid.* The Earl of Hertford, and Sir Anth. Brown, were dispatched from the council, to fetch the king, then lying at Hertford.] This likewise he had from the Journal. But Hollingshed makes the place of the king's present residence now to be, not Hertford, but Hatfield.

The king whether at Hertford or Hatfield.

P. 6. A few days after the king's coronation, the Earl of Southampton was not only removed from his office of chancellor, but from his place and authority in council.] This he hath *verbatim* from Hollingshed; but both he and his author must be understood warily here, so as not to mean that he was removed from being a privy counsellor, but from that authority he had at the board before: for this earl was not removed from being a counsellor till the fourth of the king, at Candlemas, when he and the Earl of Arundel were both put out, as Hollingshed himself writes.

The Earl of Southampton discharged.

P. 1062.

P. 7, he writes, That Archbishop Cranmer was violent with the king, by persuasions and intreaties, to seal the warrant for the execution of Joan Butcher, an Arian; and by his importunity prevailed with the king, who told the said archbishop, he would lay the charge thereof upon him before God. And then the

Archbishop Cranmer vindicated.

author adds his conjecture hereupon, that it might be Cranmer's importunity of blood, whereby that woman was burnt, that he himself afterwards felt the smart of fire.] This passage, whether it be true or no, I cannot tell: the king mentioneth nothing of it in his Journal, only that she was burnt for her obstinacy in her heresy. And the character is utterly disagreeing from Cranmer's spirit: for none was more tender of blood than he, none more pitiful and compassionate; nor was he a man for rigorous methods and violent courses. Indeed, Fox mentions, That the council put Cranmer upon moving the king to sign this warrant; which was a sign he had no great forwardness to it himself; and in obedience to them he did labour with the king about it, and obtained it; and though he did this, it neither argued *violence*, nor *importunity for blood*: for as he was not present at her condemnation, as appears by the Council Book, so he may be concluded to have had no desire of her death, though the warrant by his means was signed for her execution. His thoughts, I am apt to think, were, that this fear of death, which she saw so near, might serve to reclaim her from her error, when his and other learned men's reasonings with her, being both ignorant and obstinate, were ineffectual. So that this you must look upon as another strain of Hayward's pen, and good-will to churchmen.

Duke of  
Somerset's  
name  
wronged.

P. 15, he saith, the Duke of Somerset was a man little esteemed, either for wisdom, or person, or courage in arms.] The wrong this author hath done the name of this good duke to posterity, by this and such like characters of him interspersed through his book, I have endeavoured to right in these Collections; and he that shall but read forward in the same paragraph where these undervaluing words are bestowed upon the duke, will find the author confuting himself.

See Chap.  
II. & III.

The alterations made  
in religion.

P. 43, 44, he blames the counsels as unadvised, that were taken for alterations, both in respect of religion and inclosures, because of the danger thereof in



the new reign of the young king; and says, that some respect should have been given to those green times. And that, as to religion, though King Henry VIII. passed the like change before, yet that example was not then to be followed, the king being not equal either in spirit or power.] These were the very considerations that Bishop Gardiner, and the papists in those times, used with the protector, and others of the council, for the continuance of the popish religion. p. 474.

He dislikes the protector's proclamation for laying down *inclosures* by a certain day; which, he saith, being not obeyed, gave occasion to the multitude to make tumults.] In truth, the inclosures themselves, whereby vast numbers of poor people had the food taken out of their mouths by the rich, were the causes of tumults. The proclamation was but just and reasonable, to redress such wrongs done to the king's poor subjects. And proclamation against inclosures, disliked by Hayward;

P. 45, he seems to disapprove of the *Injunctions* that were set forth in the beginning of the king's reign, for removing images out of the churches, and for abolishing some ceremonies; because the people stood so affected towards them.] If such regard were to be had to the pleasing of the people, why should they not be as well regarded in the matter of inclosures, which he expresses himself much for? But herein, whatsoever of a politician, our author shewed himself surely but an indifferent protestant. If it were ground sufficient not to reform religion, because it would give distaste to the superstitious people, religion must never be reformed. But in truth, vast were the numbers of people throughout this land, especially the most civilized parts of it, that at this time of day did earnestly desire a reformation in the worship of images, and the use of superstitious ceremonies. And the Injunctions.

P. 46, he makes the commitment of Bishop Boner, Bishop Gardiner, Bishop Tonstal, and Bishop Hethe, to be all in the first year of the king.] Boner, indeed, endured a short restraint in the Fleet then; but that Bishops committed, and why.

which may be truly called his imprisonment, happened but in September, 1549; Hethe's the same year; Tonsal's not before the year 1551; and only Gardiner's happened in the king's first year, though he were put at liberty again not long after. Nor was Boner put in prison for refusing the king's Injunctions, as Hayward asserts, to make Boner's merits look the greater, for he did receive them, though under a protestation; but the true reason was, because he did not publish in a sermon the king's authority during his minority, as he was commanded. But hitherto, having recanted before the council, for the ill manner of his receiving the Injunctions and Homilies from the king's visitors, he went along with the king's proceedings, swore obedience to the king, professed his assent and consent touching the state of religion then settled, directed out his letters according to the archbishop's precepts, for abolishing images, abrogation of the mass, setting up Bibles in churches, &c. Neither was Gardiner's imprisonment this first year of the king, as this author asserts, because he preached that it were well these changes in religion should be stayed till the king were of years, but for his refractoriness to the king's proceedings. His second imprisonment, indeed, was occasioned by a sermon which he preached on St. Peter's Day, in the second year of the king; not for preaching that the changes in religion should be stayed, but for omitting to speak of several matters committed to him in writing, by command of the council: as, concerning the usurped power of the Bishop of Rome, the superstitions used towards St. Nicolas and other saints, concerning the authority of the king in his minority, concerning auricular confession, and some other things. Hethe was committed for refusing to subscribe the new book of Ordinations. Nor was Hethe now Bishop of Rochester, as our author names him, but of Worcester. He leaves out Day, Bishop of Chichester, whom he might have mentioned among the rest of the said bishops committed.

P. 47, he holds the setting down acts of parliament in history to be fruitless, and improper for a *true carried history*, as he expresses it; though he confesseth, a noble writer esteemed it a main in history not to recite them.] And surely that noble writer, whoever he were, was right. And this was the practice of that noble historian the Lord Herbert, and that complete historian Mr. Camden. And certainly that must be but an imperfect history, however *true carried* he fancies it, that shall take little or no notice of the great and public transactions that pass through the chief and high council of the nation, consisting of the peers, and wisest and wealthiest of the commons, assembled together in their parliaments.

Reciting  
acts of par-  
liament,  
whether fit  
for history.

P. 82, he suggests, that the Lord Sudley dissented from his brother the Duke of Somerset's opinions.] That is, in other words, that he was a papist. No such thing appears in history, but rather, that he was of the religion now professed and countenanced: for one of his last requests, when he had the message sent to him to prepare for death, was, that his daughter might be committed to the care of the Duchess of Suffolk, a fast protestant; and another was, that Mr. Latymer might be sent to him, to assist him with his counsel and prayers; who would not have been a ghostly father fit for his turn, had he been a papist.

L. Sudley,  
whether a  
papist.

*Ibid.* he makes the first cause of dissolving the knot of the two brothers' love, viz. of the duke and the lord admiral, to proceed from the duchess; and that she rubbed into the duke's *dull capacity*, as he unhandsomely reflects on that great peer, that his brother sought to take away his life, and to attain his place.] And,

His fall.

P. 83, that the duke, at length yielding himself to her, did devise his brother's destruction; and that being condemned by act of parliament, within a few days after, a warrant was sent under his brother's hand for his execution. And lastly, that the accusations against him consisted of frivolous or pitiful matters.] By all this account of this lord's fall, he

The duke  
vindicated  
about it.

is represented to have come unjustly by his death, by the unnatural acting of his brother against him; and that he was set on to all this mischief, like a weak man, by his wife. This, if it were true, layeth a most heavy imputation upon the duke. But surely he was no such man, as he is here delivered down to be: he had better morals, and more religion, than this came to. The admiral was certainly an evil man, turbulent, and full of ambitious designs, from the beginning of this king's reign; and his brother the duke did often advise him, and earnestly dissuade him from his dangerous courses, and used all the fairest means with him, pardoning what was past, and (that he might meet with his high mind) gratifying him with possessions, and the high and honourable office of lord admiral. Yet was he continually practising after this: he raised soldiers, and threatened *he would*  
p. 476. *make the blackest parliament that ever was in England.* He is suspected to have poisoned his wife, that excellent woman Queen Katharine, that, being single, he might make his addresses to the Lady Elizabeth, the king's sister. So that, in fine, the parliament did judge these things to be a traitorous aspiring to the crown. And surely Sir John Hayward had never read the act of parliament, whereby that lord was attainted, to term his accusations to be *frivolous or pitiful matters*. But I refer the reader to the fifteenth chapter of these Memorials, for further satisfaction about the justice of this lord's death. Indeed it doth appear, that his brother, with the rest of the council, signed the warrant for his execution; but I am so far from believing that his death was acceptable to him, that surely it was a thing went very near him, out of that natural love and affection that he ever shewed to have had for him.

And verily, all this is the less to be credited, viz. the controversy between the two wives for precedency, and the Duchess of Somerset's setting her husband upon this mischief, because it is taken from lying Sanders, or at the best, from vulgar report.



*Ibid.* he speaks of the admiral's protestation at the point of his death; and that the open course and carriage of his life cleared him in the opinion of many.] The admiral's ill life. What his protestations were, I know not; nor do I know any history that relates them; any more than that Stow writ, that he took it on his death, that he had never committed nor meant treason to the king or realm. The contrary to which his deeds declared; and he confessed himself, in the Tower, that he would have had the government of the king's person: but the course and carriage of his life, I am sure, could not clear him, having, during all this reign, lived so known a turbulent and vicious life.\*

Then follows another most vile insinuation against the protector, and the said reverend father and martyr, Hugh Latymer, viz. That he was set up by the said protector, an instrument to preach false stories to the people, to take off the *odium* of the lord admiral's death, in these words:

P. 83. Dr. Latymer, pretending all the gravity and sincerity of a professed divine, yet content to be serviceable to great men's ends, declared in a sermon before the king, that while the Lord Sudley was a prisoner in the Tower, he wrote to the Lady Mary and the Lady Elizabeth, that they should revenge his death. He adds, that Latymer cast forth many other imputations, most doubted, many known to be untrue; and then from this story the author takes occasion to express his cankered mind against men in holy orders, in these words: "Some theologians have been employed to defile places erected only for religion and truth, by defending oppressions and faction; distaining their profession, and the good arts which they have learned, by publishing odious untruths, upon report and credit of others."] Latymer slandered. As though

\* Thus Latymer concerning him, in one of his sermons before the king: "That when the good queen, his wife, had daily prayers before and after noon in her house, the admiral would get him out of the way. And that he was a covetous, an ambitious, a seditious man, and a contemner of common prayer."

they were a mercenary, base sort of men, that, however sacred their office is, would be hired to be the trumpets of other men's lying inventions, for the better deceiving of the people. This author going thus out of his road, that he might give a lash to the theologians, as he calls them, shews his good-will to that order of men. But to return to Latymer.

Vindicated Thus doth our author what lay in his power, to render that grave and good man, and constant martyr for religion and truth, to be a public liar in the pulpit, to do a piece of service to the duke; and he, that chose to die rather than to subscribe or acknowledge that to be true, which he thought to be false, is made such a profligate wretch, wilfully and openly to promulgate, before so solemn an assembly, uncertainties, and downright lies.

Hayward  
goes with  
Sanders.

Hayward seems indeed to go hand in hand with Sanders, to defame this reverend man; who, speaking of Latymer, gives him this broad compliment, *His apostleship consisted in lying*; and then tells this story of him: that after the duchess had invented the mischief against the admiral, the protector went and dealt with Latymer, that he should in his sermon traduce him before the people, for a traitor; and that accordingly Latymer readily undertook it, and soon after in the pulpit told a tale of, I know not what, snares preparing against the king's majesty by the admiral; and therefore that he deserved death. So that by this account the duke and the divine are represented as a couple of bloody wretches, combining together to make an innocent man seem guilty of treason, and then cry out for execution against him.

P. 85. The author here begins the relation of the duke's first troubles; wherein he follows, almost word for word, Hollingshed's History; only framing two fine speeches; one to be spoken by the Lord Rich, lord chancellor, to the mayor and citizens of London, whereof we have not any footsteps in history, as I can find; the other to be delivered by George Stadow, a grave citizen, to his fellow-citizens; whose

speech indeed we have in Hollingshed. But our author is pleased to dress up and adorn it with much florid language, and several additions of his own; which seems more proper for a romance, than an history.

P. 94. Of Secretary Petre he gives this character: Secretary Petre. "Who, under pretence of gravity, covered much un-trustiness of heart." An unfair character of a very wise and honest man, and long experienced in the public affairs, without any spot, that ever I could find, except that he did comply with the changes of religion, under the princes in whose reigns he served; which was a practice of a great number more besides himself.

P. 101. Speaking of the duke, after his subscription to the articles laid against him, and acknowledgment of his fault, and desire of pardon, our author thus gives his judgment: "Assuredly he was a man of a feeble stomach, unable to concoct a great fortune, prosperous or adverse: and that he should have lost his life, to preserve his honour; and that he cast away life and honour together: and that as he thirsted after his brother's blood, so others thirsted after his." Would a man of a cooler temper than our author, have presently judged the duke so impotent and feeble, and unable to govern himself? Would he not rather have considered the circumstances wherein he stood, and what powerful enemies combined together against him, and thirsted for his ruin? The duke might, perhaps, have been somewhat too hasty, if Sir John Hayward had been his counsellor, to have presently taken up arms, and ventured life and honour together; and so might have lost both together, as in all probability he would, being so inferior in strength to his adversaries, who were in effect all the council, except one or two. The duke undoubtedly considered this, and also the danger the king was and would have been in, if this broil had proceeded further; and the danger of religion too, to which many of the other side had no great favour; and

Whether the duke were of a feeble spirit.

p. 478.

who, upon the condition of their assistance, would have made their terms; and it was not his feebleness, therefore, but rather his caution and wisdom, that made him submit as he did, and ask pardon. As for his thirsting after his brother's blood, it was a calumny, as I have mentioned before.

Sir John  
Mason.

P. 105. Sir John Mason, secretary of state.] He was not secretary of state, but secretary for the French tongue.

The Duke  
of Suffolk.

P. 128. Having occasion to speak of the Marquis of Dorset, who was now raised to be Duke of Suffolk, according to his wont, he gives this disparaging character of him: "A man, for his harmless simplicity, neither disliked, nor much regarded."] This nobleman was a great friend to the reformation, and a patron of learned men. I have seen letters of Bucer and Bullinger to him; and, which is instead of all that can be said of him, he was the father of a very admirable, though unfortunate woman, the Lady Jane Grey. He was no such domineerer, or boutefeu, as Northumberland; but, surely, was never the worse for that.

Sir Robert  
Dudley.

*Ibid.* But, of all the ill characters our author gives of men, none exceeds that he bestows upon Sir Robert Dudley, the great Duke of Northumberland's son, whom he calls, "The true heir of his father's hate against persons of nobility, and of his cunning to dissemble the same. He was afterwards (he means under Queen Elizabeth, when he was Earl of Leicester) for lust and cruelty, a monster of the court, as apt to hate, so a most sure executioner of his hate, yet rather by practice than by open dealing, as wanting rather courage than wit." And, finally, he attributes the king's death to him.] It is true; this man was none of the best, but is represented commonly worse than he was, especially by Parsons, in his book, entitled, "Leicester's Commonwealth;" out of which Hayward hath taken a character for Dudley; when other more wary men would hardly set down for truth, what they read in that malicious book, and



wrote by so envenomed an author. This character must not be denied him, that he was a good soldier, a gallant courtier, and a favourer of learning.

P. 136. Of the Marquis of Northampton he had but a mean opinion too, and set an ill mark upon him, as well as he did upon the rest of the nobles of this king's court. Of this marquis he saith, that when he was crossed, or contentious with any, he never replied to any answer; which, he said, was a manifest sign of no strong spirit.] It was a manifest sign indeed of no contentious spirit, and that delighted not in fending and proving, as we say; but he means a meanness and lowness of spirit and courage. I think it not so manifest a sign, because sometimes this sparingness of words, and slowness of replies, proceeds from wisdom and discretion. But where he met with this account of the marquis's temper, I know not; he was certainly able enough to make replies, if he had pleased, being of a very gay and florid fancy and wit.

P. 137, he writes not like an historian, when he gives us so lame an account of the imprisonment of the Bishop of Durham. He saith, "He was sent to the Tower for concelement of I know not what treason, written to him, I know not by whom, and not discovered until, what shall I call the party, did reveal it." In the Journal our author met with the commitment of this bishop for concealment of treason; and, because he had read no more particulars of it, he would hint as though his imprisonment were unjust, and would cast the imputation of it upon the state, as a piece of forgery and oppression. Whereas by the minutes in the Council Book, and the Book of Warrants to the Seal, the particulars of this matter appear.

*Ibid.* Concerning the reason of the Lord Rich's relinquishing the chancellorship, and the ill character given by our author to the Bishop of Ely, that succeeded in that office, I have spoken in the foregoing book.

Marquis of  
Northampton.

p. 479.  
Bishop of  
Durham,  
why committed.

Lord Rich,  
Bishop of  
Ely.

The commission for framing ecclesiastical laws.

P. 144. The commission to thirty-two persons for framing a body of ecclesiastical laws, to be used in this kingdom, he saith, took no effect.] It took effect so far, that a book of laws was drawn up, and completely finished, and wanted nothing but the king's confirmation; which his death, and some other causes, unhappily prevented.

And the reason he gives why this took no effect, was, because of the number of the commissioners, and divers of them far remote, and others had great offices, that they could not afford meetings for so great a business. Also their differences of professions and ends necessarily raised difference in judgment.] But for remedying of all this, he might have known, that the king therefore issued out another commission, in October, 1551, to eight persons only, leaving the work in their hands to finish; and the Archbishop of Canterbury being one of these eight, knowing the great usefulness of the thing, hastened it, and, in effect, himself completed it, as is shewn in the Memorials of Archbishop Cranmer. But, indeed, the true reason why this excellent book, with so much study, and care, and consultation, well framed, had not authority given to it, was because the nation, especially the great men, could not endure ecclesiastical discipline; and so Cox, one of the eight commissioners, wrote about this time to Bullinger, in the course of his correspondence, "We hate those bitter institutions of Christian disciplin."

The king's debts.

P. 155. The king's debts, he saith, were given forth to be at least 251,000*l*.] The king's debts, anno 1551, owing at home and abroad, were, in all, 241,179*l*. 14*s*. 10*d*. as they are particularly set down in a paper of Secretary Cecyl's, which may be seen before.

Chap. IX.

And in the page before, he is setting down from the Journal an account of what the king had paid of the money he took up at interest from abroad, namely, 63,000*l*. Flemish, paid in February, and 24,000*l*. in April.] Whereas, in the Journal, the last

sum is 14,000*l.* which two sums came to 77,000*l.* together ; and so it is set down in the Journal. From which he varies again, and, instead of 77,000*l.* writes 87,000*l.* wilfully, the better to cover his former mistake.

P. 156, he errs again from the King's Journal ; from which now all along he does but copy, with some little descants of his own. He writes, that Beaumont, master of the rolls, lent above 700*l.* of the king's money.] Whereas in the King's Journal it is 9000*l.* p. 480.  
Beaumont,  
master of  
the rolls.

P. 173, he saith, the Duke of Northumberland, in the contrivance of the settlement of the crown upon the Lady Jane, used the advice of two persons especially, viz. the Lord Chief Justice Mountague, who drew the letters patents, and Secretary Cecyl ; both which furnished the patents with divers reasons, some of law, and some of policy, in state.] Herein Sir John Hayward grossly wrongs the memory of both these gentlemen ; out of what design, I know not.

First, As for Cecyl, he was so far from assisting and drawing up this instrument of settlement, that he opposed it as much as he could (and so Camden expressly saith) though he signed with the rest. Moreover, I have seen an apology of his own drawing up, about this matter ; wherein he writ, how he refused to subscribe to the book, when none of the council did refuse, whereby he incurred the indignation of the Duke of Northumberland. That he refused to make a proclamation (which was for the proclaiming Queen Jane) and turned the labour to Throgmorton. That he refused the writing of a letter to send abroad in the realm, for the shewing Queen Jane's title. This he refused, because he would not write Queen Mary, *bastard* ; and the duke wrote it himself. That he avoided being present at the drawing up of the proclamation for the publishing of Jane's title, though he were especially appointed thereunto. That he avoided answering of the queen's letters, which she

Cecyl assisted not in the new settlement of the crown ;

wrote from Kenninghal to the council, requiring their obedience. That he avoided likewise writing all public letters to the realm, upon Jane's access to the crown. Moreover, that he practised with the lord treasurer to win the lord privy seal, that he might, by the Lord Russel's means, cause Windsor Castle to serve the queen: and they two to levy the west parts for the queen's service. That he opened himself to the lord admiral, whom he found thereto disposed. That he did the like to the Lord Darcy. That he purposed to have stolen down to the queen's highness, and Gosnold offered to lead him thither, because he knew not the way; and he had his horses ready at Lambeth for that purpose. That when he heard of this purpose first, secretly, he disliked it; and, fearing the event, conveyed away his lands, his goods, and his leases. All these things considered, who can think it true, that he furnished the settlement with articles taken from policy? The most he did was, to sign with the rest; which also he did as a witness to King Edward's hand, and not as an abettor, or counsellor.

And Mountague sore against his will.

Church Hist.  
B. VIII.  
p. 1.

p. 481.

This for Cecyl. Then for Sir Edward Mountague, the lord chief justice, how he stood affected, and what he did in this affair, may be seen by an original paper, drawn up by that judge's own hand, which his great grandchild, Edward, Lord Mountague, of Broughton, communicated unto Dr. Fuller. The sum of which was, that he, and the rest of the judges, told the king, that the Bill of Articles shewed to them, according to which they should frame a book for the settlement of the crown in the Lady Jane, was directly against the Act of Succession; which was an act of parliament, and would be taken away by no such device. But when it was the king's absolute will, that a book should be made according to those articles, he took them. And the next day, he and the rest concluded, to do nothing; but to report to the lords, that not only the executing of this device was treason after the king's death, but the making of this



device was presently treason ; and so they did report to the council. And that the Duke of Northumberland upon it was in a great fury, and called Sir Edward traitor ; and so he departed home, without doing any thing more. Afterwards Mountague received another letter from the council, to come to the court, he, and some other of the judges and lawyers. And being come, they were brought to the king : who demanding, why they had not made the book, Mountague told the king the reason ; and moreover, that if they had, it were of no effect nor force, but utterly void, when the king should decease ; and that the statute of succession could not be taken away, but by the same authority that made it, and that was a parliament : and advised the king that all might be deferred to a parliament. The king said, they should make it, and afterwards it should be ratified by parliament. That divers of the lords then said, that if he and the rest refused now, they were traitors. So that, what with the duke's anger the day before, and the king's, and other lords now, he was in the greatest fear that ever he was in all his life ; and so at last, being an old man, and for safety of his life, he told the king, that he had served his father, and his highness during his life, and loth he would be to disobey his commandment, and would for his own part obey it, so that he had his highness's licence and commission under the great seal for the doing of it, and, when done, to have a general pardon. Both which were granted him. And he and the rest made the device, as he writ, with sorrowful hearts and weeping eyes. And, lastly, after he had done this, to shew how little he approved of putting by the true succession, he sent his son to serve and assist Queen Mary, with twenty men, with other gentlemen of Buckinghamshire. By what is written, sufficiently appears, our author hath wronged the memory of these two worthy men, and wronged posterity also, in imposing upon their belief matters of falsehood.

Hayward's  
sense of his  
own writ-  
ings.

His book  
called Da-  
vid's Tears.

Sir John Hayward, in his lifetime, was esteemed for his writings of English history; of which what his own thoughts were, may appear in his preface to a devout treatise of his, named, *David's Tears*, written when he was not far from the conclusion of his life, and printed anno 1626: "Of mine own productions never any did fully content me: and the approbation of others is no warrant to my own judgment, tender and severe in what I do. They (his productions) may happily be sprinkled over, but thorowly died I conceive they are not. In case any thing is excusable in them, it is not in regard of themselves, but in comparison with some other formless, unsinewy writings; whereto, notwithstanding, I find good allowance to be given. Assuredly knowing mine own ignorance and defects, I wonder much at the constant assurance of many others. But modesty forbids us to speak good or evil of ourselves." This is his own sense of his writings, which he calls his *productions*; wherein first, he declared, that he was not satisfied with them: whether he were conscious of some wilful mistakes, or interpolations, or other deficiencies in them, I know not. And perhaps he thought the best quality in them was his style and language; which he seems to mean by their being *sprinkled over*, and his partiality and neglect of truth, meant by his phrase of their *not being thorowly dyed*. But how imperfect soever they were, secondly, he valued them before other men's; which, however well thought on by other readers, and by the authors themselves, yet to his most accurate eye, they were *formless and unsinewy*. And though in a seemingly modest fit, he reckoned but meanly of his productions, and knew his own ignorance and defects, yet his judgment he valued sufficiently, styling it, *tender and severe in what he did*.

p. 481.

Some cha-  
racter of  
this writer.

In truth, his temper seemed not well qualified for an historian, being touchy and morose, censorious, conceited, and too much aspiring; which was the cause, in probability, that as he had enemies, so he

wanted interest enough to overpower them that opposed him, and his advancement, and that intercepted him in it; so that he fell short of his expectation of some things he aimed at, and thought his merit deserved. And so in his old age he gave himself to retirement in some discontent, and there wrote his *David's Tears*: which those words of his do express: "This is the reason wherefore many well-esteemed for sufficiency (meaning himself for one), whose virtue forbids them to be base, hang under the wheel, and cannot advance. Yea, sometimes it happeneth, that while they are most honestly busied, men of scornful and beggarly ignorance, separate from imitable qualities or endeavours, will be nimble to nip from them such small matters as they have. I confess I have been bitten by some such vipers (a just punishment, as he had in his censures bitten others), who think nothing sufficient that they have, nothing dishonest that they do. But I envy not the gravel in any man's throat. It sufficeth for me, that I have attained a quiet contented life, free either from anguish in myself, or envy at others, free either from wishing great matters, or wanting some small." And so we leave this historian.

Preface to  
David's  
Tears.

## CHAP. XXIX.

p. 483.

Commissions and Proclamations issued from the King upon divers occasions, in the years 1550, 1551, 1552, and 1553.

BESIDES various notices and instructions which I have been furnished with from the Lord Chancellor Goodrick's Ledger-Book, and King Edward's Book of Warrants, occasionally made use of by me in the foregoing history; there be many considerable matters besides, remaining in those manuscripts, which will serve notably to illustrate this reign: and therefore I shall here insert them under divers heads, for better method, as precious REMAINS, viz. com-

1550.

1550. missions, and proclamations, gifts, grants, annuities, pardons, purchases, and offices; letters, warrants, licenses, and passports; collations, presentations, and other grants, to churchmen and universities; schools founded; and lastly, particular matters relating to the king's household; commencing from the fourth year of the king's reign, and the year of our Lord 1550.

#### I. COMMISSIONS.

A Commission for the trial of Gardiner Bishop of Winton.

A Commission to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Nicolas Bishop of London, Thomas Bishop of Ely, Henry Bishop of Lincoln, Sir William Petre, Sir James Hales, Knights, Griffyn Leyson, John Olyver, Doctors of Law, Richard Goodrick and John Gosnal, Esquires, or to nine, eight, seven, six, five, or four of them, whereof the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of London, the Bishop of Ely, the Bishop of Lincoln, and Sir William Petre (and Sir James Hales, for he is added in the commission itself) to be one: to call before them, at such days, times, and places, as they shall think convenient, Stephen Bishop of Winchester, and all others, whom they shall think good and necessary to be called, for the examination, trial, proof, and full determination of such matters as appertaineth unto him: and to require every such process, writing, and escript, as have passed in that matter: and he being called eftsones (if he shall) refuse to conform himself according to the king's majesty's commandment, to proceed against him to deprivation of his bishoprick, and removing of him from the same. Decemb. 1550. This full commission at length is preserved by Fox, in his *Acts and Monuments*, first edit. p. 776.

A Commission to pro-  
rogue the  
parliament

A Commission to Edward Duke of Somerset, to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Rich, Kt. Lord Rich, &c. William Earl of Wiltshire, John Earl of Warwick, John Earl of Bedford, William Marquis of Northampton, Edward Lord Clinton, Thomas Lord Wentworth, Cutbert Bishop of Dur-



ham, William Lord Windsor, and William Lord Paget, or to two of them, to prorogue the parliament, that was adjourned to the 20th of January next, unto the 2d day of March following.

A Commission to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Ely, London, Lincoln, Norwich, Rochester, Nicolas Wotton, Dean of Canterbury, William Petre, William Cecyl, Richard Cocks, Anthony Coke, James Hales, Thomas Smith, John Cheke, William May, John Taylor, Simon Haynes, Griffith Leyson, John Redman, Hugh Latymer, Giles Eire, Matthew Parker, Miles Coverdale, John Olyver, Richard Liel, Roland Taylor, Christopher Nevins, Richard Goodrick, John Gosnold, Richard Wilks, Henry Sidal, and Nicolas Bullingham, or to any thirty-one, thirty, twenty-nine, twenty-eight, twenty-seven, twenty-six,—five, four, or three of them; whereof the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Norwich, the Bishop of Rochester, Nicolas Wotton, William Petre, William Cecyl, Richard Cox, James Hales, and William (May, I suppose) to be one: to correct and punish all anabaptists, and such as do not duly minister the sacraments according to the Book of Common Prayer, set forth by the king's majesty. This was dated in January, 1550.

p. 484.  
For ana-  
baptists,  
and irregu-  
lar mini-  
sters of the  
sacraments

A Commission to Edward Duke of Somerset, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Lord Rich, Lord Chancellor, William Earl of Wiltshire, John Earl of Warwick, John Earl of Bedford, William Marquis of Northampton, Henry Marquis of Dorset, Henry Earl of Arundel, Edward Lord Clinton, Thomas Lord Wentworth, and divers more, or any two of them, to prorogue the parliament to the 30th of October next. This bore date in February, 1550.

A Commis-  
sion for  
proroguing  
the parlia-  
ment.

A Commission to Thomas Bishop of Norwich, Sir Robert Bowes, Sir Leonard Beckwith, and Sir Thomas Chaloner, or to three of them, to determine with the Queen of Scots, or her commissioners, certain controversies risen between the king and her, since the late treaty of peace concluded between the

1551.  
For treaty  
with Scot-  
land.

1551. king's majesty and the French king, as well of limits and confines, as of taking and delivering captains and pledges, and all manner of spoils, piracies, and other attempts done by either of their subjects. Dated April 15, 1551.

For Jersey.

A Commission to Helier de Carteret, John Clerk, Clement Lemprier, Esquires, Ninian Saunders, Gent. Lewis Hampton, Clerk, Charles Mabion, Clerk, Richard Dinnarick, Nicolas Lemprier, Edward Denmarick, Laurence Hampton, Jurats, Hugh Perrin, and Nicolas Solomont, Gentlemen, and to twelve, eleven, ten, nine,—or six of them, whereof Helier de Carteret, and John Clerk, or one of them at the least, to be one: giving them power and authority to call before them the inhabitants of Jersey, by the advice of Sir Henry Powlet, Kt. captain there; and to assess every of them to be contributories according to their goods and lands, towards the building of two fortresses, to be edified, the one in the Islet of St. Helier, and the other in the Islet of St. Obyn there: and also a perpetual pension, to be gathered of their lands, for the charges of the safe keeping of them: and to put their said order and cessment in writing, that it may remain for ever; with an authority given them to appoint officers to make all manner of provision for the edification of the said fortresses. This was dated in May.

To the Duke of Somerset, to be the king's justice in Bucks and Berks.  
p. 485.

A Commission to Edward Duke of Somerset, to be the king's justice, to inquire of all treasons, misprisions of treason, insurrections, rebellions, unlawful speaking of words, confederacies, conspiracies, false allegations, contempts, falsehoods, negligences, concealments, oppressions, riots, routs, murders, felonies, and other ill deeds, whatsoever they be; and also all accessaries of the same, in the counties of Bucks and Berks: and to appoint certain days and places for the inquiry thereof: and to be the king's lieutenant within the said counties, for levying of men, and to fight against the king's enemies and rebels, and to execute upon them the martial law; and to subdue

all invasions, insurrections, &c. as shall chance to be moved in any place, as he shall repair to the limits of the said shires: with a commandment to all officers to assist him. And that the said commission be not prejudicial to the former commissions of *Oyer* and *Terminer* within the said counties. 1551.

A like Commission to the Earl of Rutland, and the Lord Clinton, for Lincoln and Nottingham. The like for Lincoln & Nottingham.

The like to the Earl of Sussex, Sir Roger Townsend, Sir William Fermor, and Sir John Robertson (Robsert perhaps), for Norfolk. For Norfolk.

The like Commission to the Earl of Warwick, the Viscount Hereford, and the Lord Paget, for Staffordshire. For Stafford.

The like to the Earl of Arundel, and the Lord La Ware, for Sussex. For Sussex.

The like to the Lord Chancellor (Lord Rich), the Earl of Oxon, the Lord Darcy, and Sir John Gate, for Essex. For Essex.

The like to Sir William Herbert, for Wiltshire. For Wilts.

The like to the Bishop of Ely, for the Isle of Ely. For Ely.

The like to the Earl of Warwick, for Warwick and Oxford. For Warwick and Oxon.

The like to the Lord Marquis of Northampton, for Surrey. For Surrey.

The like to the Lord Cobham, and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports (Sir Thomas Cheny), for Kent and Canterbury. For Kent.

The like to the Earl of Huntingdon, for Leicester and Huntingdon. For Leices-ter and Huntingd.

The like to the Earl of Derby, for Lancashire. For Lanca.

The like to the Earl of Shrewsbury, for Derby. For Derby.

The like to Sir William Herbert, for the Principality and Marches of Wales. For Wales.

The like to the Lord Darcy, Lord Wentworth, and Sir Anthony Wyngfield, for Suffolk. For Suffolk.

The like to Sir Robert Trewhit, and Mr. Thomas Audley, for Huntingdon. For Hunt-ington.

The like to the Lord Marquis of Northampton, for Northampton, Bedford, Hertford, and Cambridge. For North-amp. Bedf. Hertf. and Cambridge.

1551.  
For Dor-  
set, Som-  
set, Devon,  
and Corn-  
wal.  
For South-  
ampton.  
For Mid-  
dlesex.

The like to the Earl of Bedford, for Dorset, Somerset, Devon, and Cornwall.

The like to the Lord Treasurer (Earl of Wiltshire) for Southampton.

The like to the Lord Paget, and Sir Roger Cholmely, for Middlesex. All these commissions were dated in May.

A Com-  
mission  
for Scilly.

A Commission to Sir William Godolphin, Knt. John Killigrew and John Godolphin, Esquires, personally to repair to the Isle of Sulley (Scilley) and to make a perfect diligent survey of all the same isle, and to set out the number of acres of land within the same; and to divide the same into so many parts as may serve for tenants, and householders of husbandry, allowing them sufficient land for tilling, and sufficient pasture; and to grant the same for 21 years, reserving to the king reasonable rents. And for their better instruction, the king hath sent there inclosed, certain Instructions. And that they signify in the Chancery, in distinct writing in parchment, under their hands, within three months after they shall accomplish the same commission, their doing therein. Dated in May.

p. 486.

For mines  
in Ireland.

A Commission to Robert Record, Esq. appointed surveyor of all the mines of metal and minerals in the realm of Ireland; that he, during pleasure, shall as well rule and order the affairs and works concerning the said mines, and provisions of the same, as to appoint and take all manner of provision, labours, and carriages, both by land and water, as well in the realm of England as Ireland. And that the treasurer, controulor, and seymaster of the late erected mints, and other officers, in all their alleys (alloyes) assays, mixtures, meltings, blanchings, sheerings, and other their works, use the counsel of the said surveyor. Dated in May.

For forti-  
fying  
Scilley.

A Commission to John Killigrew, to take up and provide all manner of workmen, and labourers of all sorts, and all such stuff, of what kind soever it be, as shall be thought requisite and needful for further-



ance and finishing of the new fortification within the isle of Scilley. Dated in June. 1551.

A Commission to the Bishop of Chester, William Cliff, Richard Liel, Jeffrey Glyn, and Henry Harvey, Doctors of the Law, and George Wimesly, Bachelor of Law, or any two of them; that upon the proof of the manifold adultery of Elizabeth Atherton, they separate and divorce her from John Atherton, her husband. Dated in June. For a divorce.

A Commission to Sir William Petre, Secretary, Sir Richard Read, &c. upon due proof of the manifest adultery of the Lady Mary Luttrell, to separate and divorce her from Sir John Luttrell, her husband. Dated in June. For a divorce.

A Commission, dated in August, to the Duke of Somerset, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, &c. or any two of them, to prorogue the parliament to the 4th of November next. For proroguing the parliament

A Commission to Sir Roger Cholmely, Sir Richard Rede, Richard Goodric, Esq. — Broke (Dr. Oliver) and Dr. Liel, or to six, four, or three of them, to visit the house or hospital, commonly called The Savoy: and to inquire and search, by all ways and means, not only how and in what sort, the foundation, statutes and ordinances thereof have been, and be observed, and wherein the same doth agree with the common order and proceeding of the realm in causes of religion: and how the ministers, both men and women, give attendance, and do their duties in their several offices; but also of the life, behaviour, and conversation of all the ministers aforesaid; and the state of their house, and order of their lands: and to call before them such men as they shall think expedient, for the attaining of more knowledge touching the premises: and to advertise the king's majesty, or his privy council, of their proceedings. This was dated in September. For visiting the Savoy.

A Commission to Sir Roger Cholmely, Knt. Sir Richard Rede, Knt. Rich. Goodrick, Esq. John Gosnold, Esq. John Oliver, and Richard Liel, Doc- For trial of the Bishops of

1551.  
Worcester  
and Chichester.

p. 487.

For proroguing the parliament

For framing ecclesiastical laws.

For dispatching Chancery matters.

tors of the Law, or to six, five, or four of them; authorizing them, at such several days, times, and places, and as often as they shall think good, to call before them the Bishops of Worcester and Chichester, and every of them, several and apart, and all other whom they shall think good and necessary, for the examination, trial, proof, and full determination of such matters as be laid against them; and to require all process, writings, and escripts, either remaining with the council, or otherwise: and finding that the said bishops, and either of them, have not conformed themselves according to the king's pleasure, commandment, or monitions given by the council, by the king's commandment, to proceed against them, and every of them, to deprivation of their several bishopricks. This bore date in September.

A Commission, dated in October, to Edward Duke of Somerset, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Lord Rich, Lord Chancellor, William Marquis of Winchester, &c. and to two of them, to prorogue the parliament from the 2d of March until the 4th of November next.

A Commission, dated October 22, to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Nicolas Bishop of London, and Richard Cocks, Almoner, Peter Martyr, Rowland Tayler of Hadley, Bartholomew Traheron, John Lucas, John Gosnold: to consider all the king's ecclesiastical laws, according to a statute of parliament made 3<sup>d</sup>. Reg. Edw. VI. wherein 32 persons were appointed for the same use; and to gather and put in order in writing all such of them as they shall think convenient, and other laws ecclesiastical, as they shall think meet to be used within the realm: and to deliver the same unto the king's majesty, that they may be further considered according to his statutes.

A Commission, dated October 26, to John Beaumont, Esq. Sir William Portman, Sir James Hales, Sir Richard Rede, John Olyver, and William Cook, and to five, four, or three of them, to hear and deter-

mine any manner of matters before the king in his Chancery, between his subjects, now hanging, or hereafter to be exhibited; with authority to award out all manner of process that hath been accustomed therefore; and to punish all manner of contempts, and do all other circumstances necessary for the same; with a commandment to all the officers to attend upon five, four, or three of them. And all things done by them to stand in like force as if they were done by the Lord Chancellor. (The Lord Chancellor Rich was now sick.) 155.

A Commission in November to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Lord Rich, Lord Chancellor, &c. to prorogue the parliament from the 4th of November to the 23d of January following. To pro-  
rogue the  
parliament

A Commission in November to Edward Lord Clinton, to christen the French king's child. To chris-  
ten the  
French  
king's  
child.

A Commission to the said Lord Clinton and Sir William Pickering, jointly and severally, to hear all manner of matters with the French king, concerning the marriage between the king's majesty and the Lady Elizabeth, the French king's daughter, and the confirmation thereof according to their instructions, which they must receive by virtue of the same. To treat of  
a match  
with  
France.

A Commission in November to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Bishop of Ely, Richard Cocks, Almoner, Peter Martyr, William May, Rowland Tayler, John Lucas, and Richard Goodrick, to confer together touching the ecclesiastical laws. (This Commission superseded that made in October, in which three persons were nominated Commissioners, which it was thought convenient afterward to change, viz. the Bishop of London, Barth. Traheron, and John Gosnold, for the Bishop of Ely, William May, and Rich. Goodrick.) For the  
ecclesi-  
astical  
laws.

A Commission, dated in December, to John Lord Mordaunt, Sir John Saint John, Sir Urian Bruerton, Knights, Nic. Luke, Francis Pygot, and Lewis Dives, Esquires, to inquire by all ways and means, how the enhauncing of prices of corn, victuals, and p. 488.  
For in-  
quiry into  
the dearth.

1551. other things, contained in a proclamation annexed to the said commission, have grown, and daily grow, by the insatiable greediness of divers covetous persons in the county of Bedford; and to punish all such as shall disobey any thing contained in the same. And a clause therein writ to make out 32 commissions for like effect, to others there named.

For Calais  
and Guis-  
nes.

A Commission, dated in December, to Sir Richard Cotton and Sir Richard Bray, Knts. to repair with certain instructions to the town of Calais, and castle and county of Guisnes, and to the other pieces on that side the seas: and there shewing their Commission, do hear the opinions and advice, as well of the counsellors in each of the said pieces, as of other officers there, concerning the works, buildings, and fortifications of the said pieces.

For assist-  
ing in the  
Chancery.

A Commission in January, for assistance in hearing and determining of the causes of the Chancery, to the Master of the Rolls, Sir William Portman, Sir James Hales, Sir Richard Rede, William May, Griffyn Leyson, John Olyver, Anthony Bellasis, and William Cook. (The Bishop of Ely having the great seal lately delivered to him.)

For in-  
quiry into  
the king's  
courts  
about his  
revenues.

A Commission in January, to the Lord Chancellor, John Earl of Bedford, Sir John Gates, Sir William Petre, &c. to call before them the heads and inferior ministers of the Court of Exchequer, the Court of the Duchy of Lancaster, the Court of Wards and Liveries, the Court of Augmentations, the Court of Firstfruits and Tenths: charging and commanding them to make before them perfect and full declaration in writing under their hands, of all the king's revenues, profits, and casualties, within their several charges and offices, answerable in the said courts before the date of the said Commission, and of all rents, resolutions, fees, annuities, pensions, and other deductions.

1552.  
For the  
Debatable  
Land.

A Commission in March, 1552, to Henry Earl of Westmorland, the Lord Wharton, Sir Thomas Chaloner, Sir Thomas Palmer, or to four, three, or



two of them ; to conclude with the Scots queen's ambassadors, or commissioners, for and concerning a certain parcel of land, called the Debatable Land, and of other lands in the marches of Scotland ; and to make division thereof. 1552.

A Commission in the same month, to John Earl of Bedford, William Earl of Pembroke, the Lord Darcy, Sir William Petre, Sir John Baker, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Robert Bows, Sir Thomas Wroth, Edward Griffythy, John Gosnold, or to ten, nine, eight, seven, or six of them ; to put in execution all such martial laws as shall be thought by their discretions most necessary to be executed. Instructions given to them in nine articles. To put martial laws in execution.

A Commission, the same month, to the Lord Chamberlain, the Bishop of Norwich, Sir John Gates, Sir William Petre, Sir Robert Bows, Sir Thomas Wroth, Sir Richard Cotton, Sir Walter Mildmay, and John Gosnold, or to nine, eight, seven, six, five, or four of them ; to survey and peruse the state of all the king's courts, erected or kept for the custody of the king's lands, and for the answering and payment of any manner of rents and revenues, &c. ; and instructions given to them in five articles. For survey of the king's courts. p. 489.

A Commission, the same month, to Sir John Gates, authorizing him, as well to keep the privy and great seals of the duchy still, as also to do all other things that shall concern the said office, during the king's pleasure, in as ample manner as the Lord Paget had it, with authority to appoint a vice-chancellor. For keeping the seals of the duchy.

Commissions in May, for the counties in England, to the noblemen, and other great men, to be the king's justices : to inquire of all treasons, misprisions of treason, insurrections, rebellions, unlawful assemblies, and conventicles ; unlawful speaking of words, confederacies, conspiracies, false allegations, contempts, falsehoods, neglects, concealments, riots, routs, murders, felonies, &c. For the king's justices of the counties.

A Commission in June, for the sale of chantry lands, directed to Sir John Gates, Sir Robert Bows, For sale of chantry lands.

1552. Sir Richard Sackville, Sir Walter Mildmay, Knts.; Richard Goodrick, and John Gosnold, Esqrs.

To survey bells, plate, &c. belonging to churches. Divers Commissions and Instructions in June, to certain persons within every shire of the realm, to view and survey the bells, plate, jewels, vestments, or ornaments, belonging to every church within the said shire; and to take account and seize into their hands, to his majesty's use, such of the said goods as have been at any time since or before the last survey embezzled away.

To Clarenceux, for survey of arms. A Commission to Thomas Hawley, alias Clarenceux, king of arms, and principal herald from the river of Trent southward: to visit and oversee within his province the arms, devices, and cognizances of all noble and gentlemen; and if any fault be found in any their coat armours, standards, banners, &c. contrary to the usage of this realm, to give knowledge thereof to the king's majesty and his council.

For trial of the Bishop of Durham. A Commission in September, to Sir Roger Cholme-ly, Sir Richard Rede, John Gosnold, Richard Goodrick, Robert Chidley, — Stamford, Esqrs.; and Richard Liel, Doctor of Law; or to seven, six, or five of them; to examine and call before them, at such times and places as they shall think convenient, Cutbert, Bishop of Durham, (and examine him) of all manner of conventicles, conspiracies, contempts, and concealments, or other offences; and if he be found guilty, to deprive him of his bishoprick, and otherwise to do the premises according to their wisdoms, &c.

For punishment of erroneous opinions. A Commission, dated in October, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of London, and others, for examination and punishment of erroneous opinions in religion.

For examination of the officers of the treasuries. A Commission in December, to John Duke of Northumberland, John Earl of Bedford, Henry Duke of Suffolk, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Earl of Pembroke, the Lord Darcy, Sir Thomas Cheney, Sir John Gates, Sir Thomas Wroth, Sir Walter Mildmay, and Thomas Mildmay,

Esq. or to five of them, to call before them, at such time and place as they shall think meet, the treasurer, under-treasurer, and teller of the Exchequer, the treasurer of the Court of Augmentations, the treasurer of the Chamber, the treasurer of the First-fruits, the receiver-general of the Wards, the receiver-general of the duchy of Lancaster, the treasurer of the town and marches of Calais, the treasurer of the town and garrison of Berwick, and all other treasurers, which now be, or heretofore have been, since the 24th year of the king's majesty's father's reign, or their heirs or executors; or all and every paymaster, surveyor, mustermaster, purveyor, victualler, and other persons, which at any time within the time aforesaid have received of the king's majesty, or his said late father, any sum or sums of money, treasure, bullion, victuals, provision, or other goods and chattels, either to be employed in the wars, buildings, fortifications, or other affairs: causing and compelling them which have not yet accounted for their several charges and receipts, to make and declare before them a full and perfect account of all such sums of money, obligations, specialties, treasures, bullion, victuals, provisions, &c. as they, or any of them, received; and also of the payment, and disbursage, and discharge of the same, and every part thereof. And if any of them shall be found indebted to the king, to proceed for the due satisfaction and payment thereof.

1552.

p. 490.

A Commission in the same month, to the Duke of Northumberland, the Earl of Bedford, the Earl of Huntingdon, Lord Darcy, Lord Clinton, Sir Richard Cotton, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Walter Mildmay, Richard Goodrick, Thomas Mildmay, or to four of them; not only to see how the king's majesty is satisfied of all such lead, bell-metal, plate, jewels, ornaments, stock, and store-goods, as come and is due unto the king's majesty, by reason of divers commissions and visitations, and by reason of the dissolution of divers monasteries, priories, colleges, chan-

To inquire  
into lead,  
bell-metal,  
plate, &c.

1552. tries, &c. and by attainder of divers persons; but also for divers forfeits of jewels, silver, bullion, plate, gold, and silver.

Commis-  
sion for in-  
quiry into  
monies due  
for sales.

A Commission in January, to the Bishop of Ely, Lord Chancellor, the Bishop of Norwich, Sir Richard Cotton, &c. to examine, search, and try, as well by the record of the Chancery, as by all other ways, what sums of money were at any time heretofore due unto the king or his father, for the sales of lands, possessions, sithence the 4th of February, an. 27 Hen. VIII. and how the same was answered.

For collec-  
tion of  
church-  
stuff.

A Commission in the same month, to Sir Richard Cotton, Sir John Gates, Sir Robert Bowes, Sir John Mason, Sir John Baker, Sir Walter Mildmay, John Lucas, Thomas Mildmay, Esqrs. or to four of them, for the collection of church-stuff, plate, jewels, ornaments, &c.

For deter-  
mining a  
matter be-  
tween Fr.  
Chaloner,  
&c.

A Commission in February, to the Dean of St. Paul's, Thomas Gawdy, Griffyn Leyson, William Staunford, William Cook, and Richard Catlyn, or to three of them, for the understanding, hearing, and final determining of a matter in controversy between Francis Chaloner and Agnes his wife, daughter to Sir William Bowyer, late alderman of London, deceased, and the executors and overseers of his last will and testament.

For find-  
ing gold  
and silver  
ore.

A Commission, dated in the foresaid month, to Richard Stephen, for the finding of ores of gold and silver, and other metals, within the counties of Derby and Chester, with licence of the owners.

To inquire  
into  
church-  
goods.

A Commission the same month, to the Marquis of Northampton, the Lord Bray, Sir John St. John, Sir Urian Bruerton, Richard Snow, and Lewis Dyve; to make perfect survey of all manner of church-goods within the county of Bedford; and that the like commissions be made out and directed to the persons in the end of the said commissions, for the shires, cities, and towns, therein declared.

p. 491.

A Commission, dated in March, to Thomas Bishop of Norwich, Sir John Gates, Sir Philip Hoby,



&c. to sell for ready money any of the king's manors, lands, tenements, &c. to the yearly value of 1000*l*. 1552.  
To sell  
lands to  
raise mo-  
ney.

A Commission in April, 1553, to Sir Richard Cotton, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Walter Mildmay, Knts. and Edmund Pigeon, clerk of the wardrobes, or to three, or two of them; to take account of Jane Cecyl, and Sir William Cecyl, Knt. administrators of the testimony of Richard Cecyl (yeoman of the wardrobes, deceased) for certain robes, apparel, and jewels of the king, in the custody of the said Richard. 1553.  
To take ac-  
count of  
apparel in  
the ward-  
robe.

A Commission in May, to Sir Richard Cotton, Sir John Gates, Sir Roger Cholmely, &c. to call before them all treasurers, receivers, bailiffs, collectors, &c. or other persons, that do demand allowance for the falls of any sums of money alleged to be lost, by reason of two proclamations; and to consider the same in their accounts. To consider  
receivers  
for the fall  
of money.

To these Commissions I add a few Proclamations.

## II. PROCLAMATIONS.

A Proclamation that none should melt any testour or shilling, groat, half-groat, penny, halfpenny, or farthing, or any other coin of silver, being current within the realm; to make vessel, plate, or any other thing, upon pain of forfeiture of four times the value of the money so molten, and to suffer imprisonment and other pains. Dated in September, 1551. 1551.  
Against  
melting  
down the  
king's  
coin.

A Proclamation declaring, That the king's majesty hath ordered and established to be made within his mints these several coins, as well of silver, in fineness of the standard, as also of gold, as hereafter ensueth: That is to say, one piece of silver monies, which shall be current for Five Shillings, of the lawful monies aforesaid; another piece, which shall be called the piece of Two Shillings and Sixpence, of the lawful monies; the third piece, which shall be called the Sterling Shilling, current for twelve pence; the fourth piece, which shall be half of the said shilling, shall be current for Sixpence. Also the king's majesty Declaring  
the several  
values of  
gold and  
silver coin.

1551. hath ordered to have four pieces of small monies made likewise current; that is to say, the first piece shall be called a Penny, with a double rose, and shall be current for a penny of the lawful monies aforesaid; the second shall be called an Halfpenny, with a single rose; and the third piece, a Farthing, with a port-cullice. (A fourth piece is here wanting, whether it should be the Groat, or the Twopence, I know not.)

And of the coins of gold as here ensueth; that is to say, the old Sovereign, of fine gold, which shall be current for thirty shillings of lawful money of England; another piece of fine gold, called the Angel, shall be current for ten shillings; the third piece of fine gold, which shall be called the Angelet (half of the Angel), current for five shillings: and further, a whole Sovereign of crown gold shall be current for twenty shillings; the second piece of crown gold, which shall be called the Half-sovereign, shall be current for ten shillings; and the third piece of crown gold, which shall be called a Crown, current for five shillings; the fourth piece of crown gold, which shall be called the Half-crown, shall be current for two shillings and sixpence of the lawful monies aforesaid.

And the king's majesty strictly chargeth and commandeth all manner of persons within his realms and dominions, to receive and pay the said several pieces of money, as well of silver as of gold, at the several rates before rehearsed, upon pain of the king's high displeasure, and to be further punished, as his highness shall think convenient.

And his express commandment is, that all such base monies which his majesty did lately, by his several proclamations, reduce to the value of a lower rate, shall pass and go current in payment, in like manner and sort as his highness's last proclamation did declare, until such time as his majesty's mints may with diligence convert the same into his said new coins; which his majesty mindeth to have done with all possible expedition.

And his majesty signifieth to all his loving sub-

jects, that if they do bring in a quantity of monies 1551.  
now current, into his grace's mint within the Tower  
of London, they shall have the same received there  
by tale at the value as they be now current upon  
bills; and they shall, in as convenient time as may,  
be repaid for the same monies now current by tale in  
other the king's majesty's new money afore declared.  
This came forth in October, 1551.

A Proclamation, set forth in November, 1551; That the  
declaring, That the king's pleasure is, that the Pro- late assess-  
ment of  
the prices  
of provi-  
sions  
should  
cease.  
clamation set forth for the censing the prices of cattle  
and other victuals, and all pains, forfeitures, and  
prices therein contained, shall from henceforth cease,  
and be put no further in execution. (The Proclama-  
tion for assessing the prices of cattle and provision,  
and to which this refers, came out anno 1549, and  
may be read in the foregoing History.)

A Proclamation in December, 1551, charging and Against  
false ru-  
mours of  
the king's  
new coin.  
commanding all the king's true subjects not to credit  
such vain, false, and seditious rumours, concerning  
certain pieces of his highness's coin now made, which  
have been well stricken, that his majesty's arms do not  
appear in the same, &c. to be seditiously declared.

A Proclamation, the same month and year, prohi- Against  
buying and  
selling of  
coin.  
biting the buying and selling of coin at other prices  
than the same is current by the king's late Procla-  
mation.

A Proclamation, February 20, 1551, prohibiting Against  
frays in  
churches.  
frays and fightings in cathedral churches, and bring-  
ing in horses and moyles into the same.

A Proclamation in August, 1552, to avoid all 1552.  
manner of persons infected with pestilence, or other For all  
persons in-  
fected to  
avoid the  
court.  
outrageous diseases; or having any person in their  
houses therewithal infected, from the court, and other  
places, whereunto the king's majesty shall repair in  
this his majesty's progress; and also forbidding any  
of the inhabitants of Pole or Winburn-Minster, by  
reason of the plague there, to resort to the court at  
Woodlands or Cranford, during his majesty's abode  
there.

1552.  
To put in  
execution  
an act for  
tillage.  
p. 493.

A Proclamation in November, 1552, willing and charging all justices of peace diligently to have respect to the due execution of a statute made in the last session of the parliament, for tillage, to be used as it was in any one year since the first year of the reign of King Henry VIII.

For keep-  
ing Lent.

A Proclamation in February, 1552, that no person, after the publishing hereof, having no license to eat flesh, do willingly eat any manner of flesh in time of Lent, or other fasting days, upon the pain and penalty contained in a statute in that behalf made.

For the  
price of  
Gascoin  
wine.

A Proclamation, the same month and year, that no persons that sell wine by retail, sell above eight-pence a gallon of Gascoin wine, four-pence a pottle, and two-pence a quart, and a penny a pint, upon pain limited therefore.

## CHAP. XXX.

Divers acts of the king's grace and favour, shewed to his courtiers, and others.

**W**E now proceed to set down various rewards, liberalities, honorary and beneficial trusts, &c. conferred by the king upon divers persons.

### III. *Gifts, grants, annuities, and offices, pardons, and purchases.*

1550.  
Annuity to  
Cecyl, se-  
cretary.

An annuity of 100*l.* to William Cecyl, one of the king's secretaries, in consideration of his said office, during the king's pleasure; to be paid at the Augmentation, from Michaelmas last, half yearly. Dated Oct. 1550.

Bell-clap-  
pers grant-  
ed to  
Champion  
and Chi-  
chester.

A grant to Arthur Champion, and John Chichester, of all the clappers of the bells commanded to be taken down within the counties of Devon and Cornwall, with all the iron and other furniture thereunto belonging. Dated in November.



A grant, dated in November, unto John, Lord Sheffield, son and heir to Edmund, late Lord Sheffield, deceased; to bestow himself in marriage at his own free election and choice, without any fine or payment to be required in the Court of Wards and Liveries, or elsewhere, to the king's use, for the value of his marriage, being in minority; in consideration of the great charge that his said father sustained in the king's war at Norwich (where he was killed the last year).

1550.  
To the Lord Sheffield, under age, the gift of his marriage.

The office of steward of the manor of Rising, in the county of Norfolk, and the constablenesship of the castle there, to (Sir) John Robsert, and Sir Robert Dudley (a son of the Earl of Warwick, and that married the daughter and heir of the said Sir John) for life, and to the longer liver of them; with a fee of 40*s.* by the year for the office of stewardship, and for the constablenesship 13*l.* 0*s.* 8*d.* per annum; and for the office of master of the game 4*l.* 13*s.* 3*d.* per annum; and 53*s.* 4*d.* for the wages of two forests: to be paid by the receivers of the premises. Dated in December.

To Sir John Robsert, & Sir Robert Dudley.

p. 494.

The office of Master of the Rolls to John Beaumont, Esq. for life, with all fees and profits thereunto belonging, in as large and ample manner as Sir Robert Southwel lately had it. Dated in December.

To John Beaumont, Esq.

The office of keeping the chief messuage of the manor of Essher, in Surrey, and the keeping of the gardens and orchard there, with the office of lieutenant of the chase of Hampton Court, to John, Earl of Warwick, and John, Lord Lisle, during their lives, and the longest liver. Dated in December.

To the Earl of Warwick, and Ld. Lisle.

An annuity of 5*l.* to Nic. Bacon, Esq. with the wardship and marriage of Edward Fox, without disparagement, during his minority; and so from heirs male to heirs male. Dated in January.

To Nic. Bacon.

An annuity of 200 marks to Sir John Zouch, Kt. for life, after Elizabeth Zouch's death, late Abbess of Shaftsbury; to be paid at the Augmentation quarterly. Dated in January.

To Sir John Zouch.

1550.  
To Sir Martin Bowes. Sir Martin Bowes, sub-treasurer of the money and coin in the Mint of the Tower of London; which place he surrendered, and had an annuity granted him therefore, dated the month above. Besides the annuity of 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* granted him by the king his majesty's father, for his good service done in the said office.

To the same.

A grant to the said Sir Martin, of the same date, wherein he was found indebted to the king in the sum of 10,000*l.* upon his account taken by John, Earl of Warwick, Sir William Herbert, and Sir Walter Mildmay, commissioners appointed to hear and determine all accounts and reckonings of the king's mints within this realm, that he shall pay and discharge the same as followeth: that is to say, in hand 3000*l.* and so at divers payments the rest, allowing him time.

To the same.

A pardon to Sir Martin Bowes, of all treasons, trespasses, contempts, &c. done and committed by the said Martin, concerning the money and coin of the king's majesty and his father's, before the date of these presents; and of all unjust and false making of money, and payments of the same; and of all other offences done contrary to the effect of the common law, or contrary to any statute, act, provision, proclamation, &c. or contrary to any prescription, custom, &c. Dated as above.

To Thomas Marsh.

The office of clerk of the council to Thomas Marsh, for life, after the death of Richard Eden and Thomas Eden, with a fee of 40 marks per ann. to be paid at the Exchequer quarterly. Dated in March.

To the Earl of Warwick.

A gift to John, Earl of Warwick, in consideration of the manor of Assher and park, granted by the king, of all the manor of Chelsey, and the chief mansion-house, to the yearly value of 30*l.* 3*s.* 1*½d.* Dated in March.

To John Leland.

The keeping of John Layland (Leyland) the younger, being mad, to John Layland, the elder, with all his lands, tenements, rents, &c. in as large and ample manner as the said John, the younger,

being in his right mind, had the same. Dated in March.

Guillim Stretes, the king's painter, had paid him 50 marks, for recompence of three great tables made by the said Guillim; whereof two were the pictures of his highness, sent to Sir Thomas Hoby and Sir John Mason (ambassadors abroad); the third, a picture of the late Earl of Surrey, attainted, and by the council's commandment, fetched from the said Guillim's house. Dated in March, 1551.

1551.  
To Guillim  
Stretes.

p. 495.

To Sebastian Cabote (the great seaman) 200*l.* by way of the king's majesty's reward. Dated in March, 1551.

To Sebas-  
tian Ca-  
bote.

The creation of Sir Thomas Darcy, and his heirs male of his body, to the title of Baron of Chich, in Essex, by the voice of the parliament. Dated in April.

To Sir  
Thomas  
Darcy.

A gift to the said Sir Thomas Darcy, and to his heirs male, of the reversion of the house and seat of the late monastery of Chich St. Osyth, with the appurtenances, in the county of Essex, with the house and scite the Lady Mary hath during her life, with divers other lands, tenements, &c. together with a further gift unto him in fee simple, of the manor of Lucton, alias Loughton; with divers other lands in the county of Devon: all extending to the yearly value of 467*l.* 13*s.* 0 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* To hold the entailed lands *in capite* by one knight's fee; and the land in fee simple *in capite*, by the half of one knight's fee. Dated in April.

To the  
same.

A privilege to Laurence Torrentinus, printer to the Duke of Florence, for seven years, to print the book of Digests and Pandects of the Civil Law of the Romans: and that none shall print the same book during that time, without his licence. Dated in April.

To Lau-  
rence Tor-  
rentinus.

The office of High Marshal of England to John, Earl of Warwick, for life, in as ample manner as John Mowbray, and Thomas, late Duke of Norfolk, had, and enjoyed the same. The patent dated in April.

To the Earl  
of War-  
wick.

1551.  
To the  
Lady Eli-  
zabeth.

A gift to the Lady Elizabeth, the king's sister, for the term of her life, of all the scite of the late monastery of Missenden, in the county of Bucks, with divers other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 3064*l.* 17*s.* 8*d.* which lands before were given to her, and for divers considerations now signed, the month above.

To John  
Gipken.

A privilege to John Gipken, of London, (a Dutchman, lately made free) bookseller, for ten years, to print, or cause to be printed, the Herbal, in English, compiled by W. Turner, doctor in physic: and that none other shall print the same. Dated in April.

To John  
Cheke,  
Esq.

A gift to John Cheke, Esq. in fee simple, in consideration of the surrendering of 100 marks rent, granted him by letters patents, dated at Westminster, Aug. 26, an. 2, Edw. VI. for twenty-one years, if it should so long please the king, of all the manor of Stoke juxta Clare, in the counties of Suffolk and Essex, with divers other lands, tenements, &c. all to the yearly value of 145*l.* 19*s.* 3*d.* to hold all the premises *in capite*, by the fortieth part of a knight's fee: except the Fuller Mill, in Stoke, the Guildhall House, in Stoke; the Pistern Pasture, and other premises in Spalding; and the rectory of Sandon, and other premises in Sandon; to be holden as of the manor of Greenwich, by fealty only. Paying yearly to the king for the manor of Stoke, 4*l.* 17*s.* 7*d.* Dated in May.

To John  
Fowler.

The keeping and governance of Richard and Edward Dautry, ideots, to John Fowler, groom of the privy chamber, during their lives, and of all their lands, &c. with a grant to the said John of all the revenues of the said lands, &c. from the death of Sir John Dautry, Kt. their father. Dated in May.

p. 496.  
To Earl  
Warwick.

A gift to John, Earl of Warwick, in fee simple, of Otford, in Kent, with divers other lands, &c. value yearly 49*l.* 3*s.* 8*d.* Dated in May.

To William  
Turk.

A grant to William Turk, groom of the privy chamber, of all William Rastal's leases, goods, moveables, and inmoveables, being forfeited to the king



by the said Rastal, for going beyond the seas without license, contrary to a statute and proclamation in that behalf. Dated in May. 1551.

The office of protonotary, or clerk of the crown, to John Leonard and Thomas Leonard, for life, and the longest liver, of the counties of Glamorgan, Monmouth, Brecknock, and Radnor, in all courts, terms, sessions, &c. with the making and entering of all manner of writs, processes, declarations, &c. with all fees and profits thereunto belonging, without account making; which office John Leonard surrendered, to have this joint patency. (Thomas, probably, being his son, or heir.) To John and Tho. Leonard.

A gift, dated in July, to the mayor and commonalty of the city of London, and their successors, of all the house and scite of the late hospital of Thomas Becket, in Southwark, commonly called St. Thomas's Hospital, in Surrey, with divers other lands, &c. ornaments, lead, and goods, belonging to the said hospital, to the yearly value of 154*l.* 17*s.* 1*d.* to be holden all by fealty, only in sockage, as of the manor of East Greenwich; and to take the profit from the Annunciation of our Lady last; with a new erection of the said hospital, and the appropriation thereof to the said mayor and commonalty, and their successors. And that all the profits of the said land shall go to the finding of the poor yearly, except such as shall go to the finding of two masters, two sisters, one porter, and the overseer of the said hospital. And that the king shall appoint commissioners from time to time to visit the said hospital, and to see the same lands to be spent and employed (according to the intent of the royal donor.) And that the officers thereof shall pay no first-fruits and tenths. To the mayor and commonalty of London. S. Thomas's Hospital.

A gift to Sir John Gates, for life, in consideration of surrendering the foresaid hospital of St. Thomas into the king's hands, granted unto him by his majesty's father's letters patents, for life, with all the profits, and without account rendering, of all the manors of Bradwel, Munden, Lawford, in the county To Sir John Gates.

1551. of Essex, and other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 208*l.* 9*s.* 9½*d.* Dated in July.

To the same.

The office of keeping the capital messuage, or mansion, late of Charles, Duke of Suffolk, in Southwark, and of the garden, orchard, and park there, to Sir John Gates, for life, with the office of high steward and bailiff there, of all the lands, tenements, and liberties of the same: and also of the office of steward and bailiff of Paris Garden, and the liberties thereof, with a fee of 30*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* per ann. Dated in July.

To Peter Osborn.

The office of clerk of the faculties to Peter Osborn, for life, with fees accustomed. Dated in July.

These parcels were given in July, by the king, from the bishoprick of Winton:

p. 497.  
To Sir John Gates.

To Sir John Gates, the manors of Sutton, Ropley, &c. in the counties of Southampton and Surrey, to the yearly value of 145*l.* 19*s.* 9½*d.*

To Sir Philip Hoby.

To Sir Philip Hoby, the manor of Marden, &c. in the county of Southampton, to the value of 87*l.* 18*s.* 7*d.* per ann.

To Sir Andrew Dudley.

To Sir Andrew Dudley, the manor of Witney, &c. to the value of 180*l.* 0*s.* 7¾*d.*

To Sir Henry Seimour.

To Sir Henry Seimour, lands to the yearly value of 186*l.* 0*s.* 4*d.*

To William Fitzwilliams.

To William Fitzwilliams, the manor of High Clere, &c. to the yearly value of 84*l.* 17*s.* 3*d.*

To Henry Nevyl.

To Henry Nevyl, the manor of Margrave, &c. to the yearly value of 114*l.* 18*s.* 10*d.*

To several Frenchmen.

Annuities, dated in September, to several Frenchmen (ministers, probably, and others, fled from their own country, for the persecution), viz.

	£	s.	d.
Francis de Bignon . . .	37	10	0
Abraham Parady . . .	27	7	6
John De Len . . .	27	7	6
Nic. Du Menir . . .	27	7	6
Galliot Tassat . . .	27	7	6
Collin Le Cout . . .	18	5	0

to be paid from the first of January last.

The office of steward of the lordship of Sheriff Hutton, and constable of the castle of Sheriff Hutton, in Yorkshire, to Sir William Pickering, Kt. for life, with all fees and profits thereunto accustomed, together with the herbage and pannage of the park thereof; paying so much yearly as Charles Brandon (late brother to the Duke of Suffolk) deceased, did. Dated in August.

1551.  
To Sir William Pickering.

The office of the king's apothecary to John Hemingway, for life; and a fee of 40 marks per annum. Dated in September.

To J. Hemingway.

A gift to William Thomas (clerk of the council) in fee simple, of all the manor of Garway, with the appurtenances, in the county of Hereford; and divers other lands, to the yearly value of 35*l.* per ann. to be held *in capite*, by the fortieth part of a knight's fee. Dated in September.

To William Thomas.

The creation of Sir William Herbert, Kt. and his heirs male, to the barony of Cardiff, in Glamorganshire; and to be lords of the parliament, with the name, title, and state thereof. Dated in October.

To Sir William Herbert.

His creation to the earldom of Pembroke, with the name, title, and state thereof. Dated as above, with 40*l.* by year, to be paid of the customs of Bristol.

To the same.

The creation of John Earl of Warwick, and of his heirs male, to the dukedom of Northumberland, with 50 marks by year, to be paid of the customs of Newcastle. Dated as above.

To John Earl of Warwick.

The creation of Henry Marquis of Dorset, and his heirs male, to the dukedom of Suffolk, with 50 marks by year, to be paid of the customs of Hipseswich. Dated as above.

To Henry Marquis of Dorset.

The creation of William Earl of Wiltshire, to the marquessy of Winton, and his heirs male, with 50 marks by year, out of the fee-farms of Winton. Dated as above.

To William Earl of Wilts.

To Sir John Mason, and the Lady Elizabeth, his wife, and their heirs, of the manor of Apulford, in

To Sir John Mason.

1551. Berks, with divers other lands, of the yearly value of  
p. 498. 104*l.* 5*s.* 6½*d.* Dated in October.

To William  
Earl of  
Pembroke.

A gift to William Earl of Pembroke, and his heirs, of 162*l.* 3*s.* 5*d.*; being several rents reserved of the house and scite of the late monastery of Wilton, in Wilts, and divers other lands: as also of the manor of Bishopston, alias Eblesborn, in the same county, of the yearly value of 43*l.* 2*s.* 7*d.* Dated as above.

To the  
Duke of  
North-  
umberland

The office of general warden, or keeper of the marches of England, towards the parties of Scotland, that is to say, to the east march, the west march, and middle march, nigh the king's dominions of Scotland, to John Duke of Northumberland; with authority to do and exercise all things appertaining to the same office, in as large and ample manner, as by authority of Richard II. Henry IV. Henry V. Henry VI. Edward IV. Richard III. Henry VII. Henry VIII. it hath been used; and to see the same well fortified with weapons of war, for the safeguard of the king's liege people, and the sure defence of the town and castle of Berwick: and to appoint, ordain, and constitute under him a sub-warden: and to have the pre-eminences, liberties, and commodities belonging to the same office, to him and his deputies, in as large and ample manner as any heretofore had the same. Dated in October.

To Sir Will.  
Cecyl.

A gift to Sir William Cecyl, and Lady Mildred, his wife, and to the heirs of the said William, of the manor of Berehamstow and Deeping, with the appurtenances, in the county of Lincoln; and of the manor of Thetford Hall, in the same county; and also of the reversion of the manor of Barrowdown, alias Wrangdike, with the appurtenances, in the county of Rutland, granted to the Lady Elizabeth for life, by the king's letters patents, dated at Westminster, an. 4. reg. Also of the reversion of the manor of Liddington, in the county of Rutland, granted to George (Gregory) Lord Crumwel, and Lady Elizabeth, his wife, during their lives. Also the moiety of the rectory of Godstow, alias Walthamsted, with di-



vers other lands, to the value of 152*l.* 3*s.* 3 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* To 1551.  
be holden *in capite*, by the half part of a knight's fee.  
Dated in October.

The office of master of the hospital of the Savoy, To Sir Rob.  
in the parish of St. Clement of Dacars, without the Bows.  
bars of the New Temple, in the county of Middlesex,  
to Sir Robert Bows, Kt. for life, with all manors,  
lands, tenements, and hereditaments to the same be-  
longing. Dated in November.

The office of clerk of the Parliament, granted to To Sir John  
Sir John Mason, Kt. and Francis Spilman, for their Mason and  
lives, with the fee of 40*l.* by year, to be paid by Fr. Spil-  
the keeper of the hamper of the Chancery, quarterly: man.  
and the old letters patents cancelled to this joint  
patency.

Annuities of 100*l.* to Richard Goodric and John To Goodric  
Lucas. (These were the king's lawyers, employed and Lucas.  
by him in many commissions.) Dated in December.

The office of deputy warden of the west marches To the Lord  
towards Scotland, to the Lord Conyers, with the fee Conyers.  
of 600 marks per ann. and for two deputies, 10*l.* per  
ann. Dated in December.

The office of deputy warden of the east marches To Sir Nic.  
towards Scotland, to Sir Nic. Strelly, with the fee of Strelly.  
700 marks per ann. ; with like allowance for deputies  
and serjeants. Dated as before.

The office of deputy warden of the middle marches, p. 499.  
to the Lord Ogle, with the fee of 500 marks per To Lord  
ann. ; with like commission and authority as the others Ogle.  
have. Dated as before.

A grant to Sir John Mason, Kt. of the lease and To Sir John  
farm of Yelingbery and Wormold, in the county of Mason.  
Middlesex, in the parishes of Yelding and Fulham,  
demised by the Bishop of London to the Duke of  
Somerset, being presently in the king's disposition,  
as a chattel of the said duke's. Dated as before.

A gift to Sir Thomas Wroth, as well in considera- To Sir Th.o.  
tion of his service, as of surrendering into the king's Wroth.  
hands an annuity of 100 marks, of the manor of  
Lydiard, in the county of Somerset, and divers other

1551. lands, to the yearly value of 84*l.* 8*s.* 11 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* To hold partly by fealty only in soccage, and partly *in capite*; paying yearly for the manor of Thoyden Boys 36*s.*; for the scite and demean lands of Berden (a late priory) 47*s.*; for the scite and demean of Abendon 11*s.* and for the lands and tenements in Chulden 10*d.*; and for the manor of Lydiard 10*l.*; and for the manor of Thoyden Bois (mistaken by the scribe for some other place) 5*l.* 18*s.* 3 $\frac{1}{2}$ *d.* Dated as before.

To the  
Duke of  
North-  
umberland

A gift, dated in the said month of December, to the Duke of Northumberland, being the scite of the late monastery of Tinmouth, in the county of Northumberland, and a great number of lordships and manors more; and another gift to him of the towns of Alnwick, &c. in the same county. Dated as before.

To Rose  
Fisher.

A patent to Rose Fisher, being a widow of a sister-ship, within St. Bartholomew's Hospital, in Smithfield. Dated 27 Septemb. (Decemb. it should be.)

To the  
Marquis of  
Northampton.

A gift of the king to the Marquis of Northampton, of all the possessions and goods belonging to the late fraternities of our Lady, of St. Peter and St. Paul, of the Trinity, and of St. George, within the town of Boston, in Lincolnshire; with a licence to him to erect an hospital within the said town of Boston; and to give for the maintenance of the same 50*l.* of yearly revenue for ever; which hospital shall be called, "The Hospital of the Foundation of William Marquis of Northampton." Dated Jan. 13.

1552.  
To the  
Lord Bur-  
gavenny.

A pardon granted to Henry Nevyl, Lord Burgavenny, for striking a nobleman, (viz. the Earl of Oxford) in the king's chamber of presence. Dated April 6.

To Hamp-  
ton, Tho-  
mas, and  
Wade.

Clerks of the Council had these fees granted them in April, viz. to Bernard Hampton, Esq. 50 marks; to William Thomas, Esq. 40*l.*; to Armagil Wade, Esq. 50*l.*; payable out of the Exchequer. Their patents for these fees bore date May 12, following.

To the  
Duke of  
North-  
umberland

A patent granted to the Duke of Northumberland, of the offices of the chief stewardship, as well of the

East Riding, in the county of York, as also of all the king's lordships and manors of Holderness and Cottingham, with the appurtenances, in the said East Riding; with the grant of several fees belonging to the said several high stewardships; and also the authority to name and appoint, by writing under his hand, all offices of under stewards, bailiffs, escheators, feudaries, clerks of the crown courts, and other officers, whatsoever they be, within the East Riding, and Holderness, and Nottingham, when they shall chance to be void: and also, that no particular officer shall grant by copy of court-roll, or let to farm, any lands within the East Riding aforesaid, without the consent of the duke. And moreover, to have the keeping of the manor and park of Scroby, in Nottinghamshire, with the fee of 5*l.* 5*s.* 5½*d.* and to have the barlage and pannage of the said park, for term of life, for the rent of 6*l.* to be paid at the Court of Augmentations. Dated April 23. 1557.  
p. 500.

A patent granted to Sir William Sidney, of the honour of Penshurst, in Kent, and of the manors of Ensfield in Cephame, and Hawden, in the same county, lately parcel of the inheritance of Sir Rauf Fane, Kt. attainted of felony; and also free warren in the park, with all the deer and conies in the said park, to him and his heirs: and also to have all the lands, goods, chattels, lead, utensils, vessels, mares, geldings, mules, and other things, in and upon the said chief mansion of Penshurst, or within the foresaid manor of Ensfield, and park, which were the said Fane's, Octob. 2 last past, and came to the king's hands by his attain: and to have the issues and profits of all the premises from the day of the attainder of the said Rauf. Dated April 25. To Sir Will.  
Sidney.

A patent granted to Sir Henry Gates, Kt. and of the king's privy chamber, of the chief messuage in Kew, in the parish of Mortlack, in the county of Surrey, with the appurtenances, which came to the king's majesty by the attainder of Sir Miles Partridge, to him and his heirs; as also of the manor of East To Sir  
Henry  
Gates.

1552. Greenwich, by fealty in soccage, and not *in capite*. And to have the reversion of the advowson of Bernstow, after the Earl of Pembroke, if he shall fortune to decease without heirs male of his body begotten; and to have all the issue and profits of the premises from the time of the attainder of the said Partridge. Dated April 26.

To the  
same.

Another patent to him of all the goods and chattels of Sir Miles Partridge, being at his house at Kew at the time of his attainder. Dated April 20.

To Eger-  
ton, Stan-  
ley, Bil-  
lingsley,  
and Munds

The king appointed for his Mint Thomas Egerton, Esq. treasurer of the Mint of the Tower, Thomas Stanley, comptroller, William Billingsley, assay-master, John Munds, provost. Dated in April.

To the  
Earl of  
Warwick.

A patent granted to the Earl of Warwick (Ambrose, eldest son to the Duke of Northumberland) to be master of the king's horses, upon surrender of the king's letters patents of the same office by the Earl of Pembroke, being of the date of Decemb. 2, 3<sup>o</sup> reg. for his life: and for the occupation of the said office to have 100 marks at the receipt of the Exchequer. Dated April 29.

To Sir John  
Mason.

A patent granted to Sir John Mason, Kt. one of the council, and Elizabeth, his wife, of the fee-farm of all the manor of Wrotham, in Kent, with the appurtenances, late parcel of the possessions of the archbishop of Canterbury; which be extended to the yearly value of 40*l.* 10*s.* 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* Dated May 3.

To Sir John  
Godsalve.

An annuity granted to Sir John Godsalve of 60*l.* by the year, upon the surrender of the office of comptrolment of the Mint in the Tower of London, *durante vita*. Dated as before.

To Sir  
Edw. Bray

A patent granted to Sir Edward Bray, of the constableness of the Tower, in reversion after the death of Sir John Gage, by the fee of 50*l.* per ann. Dated May 28.

p. 501.  
To the Earl  
of Bedford.

A patent granted to John Earl of Bedford, and lord privy seal, of the gift of Covent-Garden, lying in the parish of St. Martin's in the Fields, next Charing-Cross, with seven acres, called Long Acre, of the



yearly value of 6*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* parcel of the possessions of the late Duke of Somerset. To have to him and his heirs, to be held in soccage, and not *in capite*. Dated in May. 1552.

A patent granted to Christ's College, in Cambridge, of the manor of Burne, in Cambridge, and the parsonage with the advowson of the same, in the said Burne, late belonging to the priory of Barnwel, in the said county: upon the surrender of one annuity of 20*l.* granted to the said college by King Henry VIII. to be levied yearly of the manor of Weting, in the county of Norfolk, *in puram et perpetuam eleemosynam*. To Christ's College, Cambridge.

A grant to Sir Roger Cholmely, of the office of chief justice. To Henry Bradshaw, of chief baron of the Exchequer. To Edmund Griffith, of the office of attorney general of all the Courts of Record within England. And to John Gosnold, of solicitor general. Dated in June. To Sir Roger Cholmely, Bradshaw, Griffith, and Gosnold.

A grant of master of the buck-hounds to the Lord Robert Dudley for life, with the yearly fee of 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* upon surrender of the same by the Earl of Warwick (his brother.) Dated as before. To the Lord Rob. Dudley.

Remission of a debt owing to the king by the Duke of Northumberland, in sundry particular sums, amounting to 2094*l.* 17*s.* 3*d.* Dated as above. To the Duke of Northumberland.

A grant to divers persons, aliens, being born out of the king's dominions, to detain every sum of money taxed on their heads, for their relief, as of the king's gift. Dated as above. To divers aliens.

A pardon granted to Sir John York, Knt. under-treasurer of the coin, money, and mints within the Tower of London and Southwark; to Nic. Throgmorton, Esq. one of the under-treasurers of the said mints; to Sir John Godsalue, Knt. comptroller of the mint within the Tower; to Thos. Fletewood, Gent. comptroller of the mint within the Tower and Southwark; to William Knight, of London, mercer, assay-master of the said mints; to William Dunch, auditor of the said mints; to William Bil- To Sir John York, Nic. Throgmorton, Sir John Godsalue, &c. officers of the mints.

1552. lingsley, assay-master of the said mints; to William Stanley, goldsmith, assay-master of the said mints: for all, and all manner of transgressions, contempts, abusions, and offences, touching or concerning the said mints of the Tower and Southwark. Dated July 21.

To Sir John  
Cheke.

A patent of license granted to Sir John Cheke, Kt. one of the gentlemen of the king's privy chamber, to license at all times, one of his household servants, to shoot in the cross-bow, hand-gun, hackbut, or demy-hake, at certain fowls or deer, expressed in his patent, notwithstanding the statute made to the contrary, anno 33 Hen. VIII. Dated at the king's honour of Petworth, July 23.

To Sir Tho.  
Darcy.

A patent of exchange of lands, granted to Sir Thomas Darcy, Lord Chamberlain of England, for the manors of Lucton, *alias dict.* Loughton, Chingford Pauli, and Chingford Comitis, in the county of Essex, with the appurtenances; to have the manor and park of Beddington in the county of Surrey, and the manor of Ravesbury in the same county, and divers other manors and lands there: which be extended to the clear yearly value of 86*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.*

p. 502.  
To the  
Lady Anne  
Cleves.

A gift to the Lady Anne Cleves, for life, in consideration of the surrender of the monastery of Bisham, of all the manors and lordships of Brokeford and Thwait, in the county of Suffolk, with divers other lands, to the value of 67*l.* 17*s.* 10*d.* And to pay therefore yearly 7*l.* 13*s.* 6½*d.* Dated in August.

To Sir Tho.  
Wroth.

A grant to Sir Thomas Wroth, of the remain of certain bedding, and other stuff of the late Duke's of Somerset, being in the hands of the same Sir Thomas: which is valued by the clerk of the wardrobe of beds, the keeper of the wardrobe at Richmond, and an upholster at London, at 61*l.* 7*s.* 2*d.* Dated in September.

To Sir  
Edward  
Seimour.

A patent to Sir Edward Seimour, Kt. son of Edward, late Duke of Somerset, of all the lordships and manors of Walton, Shedder, and Stowey, and the

park of Stowey, and the hundred of Winterstock, 1552.  
with the appurtenances, in the county of Somerset,  
lately the possession of his father: which are extend-  
ed to the clear yearly value of 113*l.* 19*s.* 7*d.* to him  
and his heirs for ever. To be held of the king *in*  
*capite*. Rent reserved 13*l.* 19*s.* 8 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* Dated at  
Ely, September 6. (From his father's death to this  
time he had no provision made for him.)

A pardon granted to John Seimour (perhaps the To John  
duke's brother) of all treasons, &c. with all his goods Seimour.  
and lands (restored.)

A patent granted of exchange by the king's majesty, To the  
to the Lord Marquis of Northampton, to have the Marquis of  
lordship and manor of Southwark, sometimes the Northamp-  
Bishop of Winchester's, for the chief or capital mese ton.  
of Lambeth, sometimes the Duke of Norfolk's, at-  
tainted of treason.

A patent granted to Sir John Cheke, Kt. one of To Sir John  
the privy chamber, to be one of the chamberlains of Cheke.  
the Exchequer, or of the receipt of the Exchequer:  
which was once Sir Anthony Wyngfeld's office, now  
dead. And also to appoint the keeper of the door of  
the said receipt, when the room shall fall; and the  
appointing of all other officers belonging to the  
same, for term of life. Dated at Sarum about Sep-  
tember.

A patent granted to John Peter of Exeter, Gent. To John  
for the sum of 120*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to enjoy the mansion- Peter.  
house of the late college or chantry of Slapton, in  
the county of Devon, parcel of the possessions and  
inheritance of Sir Thomas Arundel, Knt. (executed  
for felony) and also the manor of Norton in the said  
county, and parcel of the aforesaid college, and of  
the possessions of the said Arundel. All which pre-  
mises are extended to the yearly value of 6*l.* 0*s.* 8*d.*  
to him and his heirs, from the feast of the Annuncia-  
tion last past. Signed September 18.

A patent of an annuity of 10*l.* granted to Dr. To Dr.  
Nicols; and license to take the bodies of prisoners, Nicols.  
both men and women, after their execution. (For

1552. dissecting. He was, I suppose, the king's chirurgion or physician.)

To James  
and  
William  
Moris.

An annuity of 110*l.* to James Moris, and William Moris, for their lives. To be paid at the Augmentation from Michaelmas, an. 38 reg. Hen. VIII. Dated in December.

p. 503.  
To Sir  
Henry  
Nevyl.

A patent granted to Sir Henry Nevyl, Kt. of the prebend of South Cave in the county of York, with the parsonage and advowson of the said South Cave, Waddisworth, and Ottley; which extend to 84*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.* Dated in January.

To the  
Duke of  
Suffolk.

A patent granted to Henry Duke of Suffolk, of the chief messuage and mansion called, The Minory House, within the precincts of the monastery called, The Minories without Aldgate, London, and divers houses in London, belonging to the same; which extend to the clear yearly value of 36*l.* 11*s.* 5½*d.* (So it is set down in Chancellor Goodrick's book, but in the Warrant Book it is 37*l.* 11*s.* 5½*d.*) To hold in free soccage, and the capital house *in capite*: from the Feast of S. Michael, at Westminster. Dated Jan. 13.

To the  
Earl of  
Darby.

A patent granted to the Earl of Darby, to have in exchange of Darby Place at Paul's Wharf in the parish of S. Benet's in the city of London, now in the tenure of Sir Richard Sackvyle, Kt. and divers other messuages and hereditaments sold by the said earl to the king's majesty, by his indenture bearing date Novemb. 24, anno reg. 6, certain lands called Leonard's Lands, joining to the earl's parks, called Knowsley Park, in the county of Lancaster, and lately belonging to the monastery of Bristow, of the yearly value of 20*s.* with other lands, &c. to the value of 4*l.* 10*s.* and a mese and a grange called Badley Grange, of the value of 42*s.* in Cheshire. All which amount to the value of 7*l.* 12*s.* Dated Jan. 24.

For the  
Duke of  
Suffolk.

An allocate for the Duke of Suffolk for 40*l.* a-year, given him by the king with the erection of the dukedom of Suffolk, directed to the treasurer and



barons of the Exchequer, for allowance of the same 1552.  
40*l.* per annum.

An annuity of 150*l.* to Barnaby Fitz-Patric, one of the gentlemen of the privy chamber, during pleasure. A license granted to him for this, dated Feb. 6. To Barnaby Fitz-Patric.

An annuity of 100*l.* to Sir Nic. Throgmorton, in consideration, as well of the surrender of his office of one of the treasurers of the coin of the mint in the Tower, as for his faithful service, during life. Granted Jan. 28. The patent bore date in February. To Sir Nic. Throgmorton.

A gift to Sir Andrew Dudley, of the manor of Mynster Lovel, and the hundred of Chadlington, in the counties of Oxon and Gloucester, to the yearly value of 54*l.* 16*s.* 1½*d.* Dated in the month above. To Sir Andrew Dudley.

A patent granted to the Lord Robert Dudley, of the office *capitalis tranchiatoris*, i. e. of chief carver, upon the surrender of the said letters patents of the Duke of Northumberland, his father, granted to him by King Henry VIII. anno regni sui xxxiv. for term of life: which the king's majesty hath had long in his grace's hand: to have to the said Lord Robert for term of life, with the fee of 50*l.* to be received by the hands of the treasurer and chamberlain of the Exchequer. And because the said lord hath exercised the said office from the feast of S. Michael hitherto, without fee, the king hath granted to the same as many pence as that allowance came to, of his free gift. Dated Feb. 27. To the Lord Rob. Dudley.

A grant to the Duke of Northumberland, of the manor and borough of Stratford, and Old Stratford, in Warwickshire, with other lands, to the yearly value of 1000 marks. And another gift of the lordship, manor, and castle of Kenelworth, in the same county, and other lands, to the yearly value of 40*l.* 13*s.* 1½*d.* And likewise the manor and town of Wellington, in Somersetshire, with divers other lands, of the yearly value of 104*l.* 15*s.* 5½*d.* But for these he surrendered to the king the castle and manor of Tunbridge, and two parks called the Postern, and p. 504.  
To the Duke of Northumberland.

1552. the Cage, and certain lands and chases of North Frith, &c. in Kent, Otford, in the same county, and Chelworth, in Wilts. Dated in February.

To Geo.  
Barns,  
William  
Garret,  
John York,  
and Tho.  
Windham.

The king in the month beforesaid, lent a ship called *The Primrose*, and a pinace called *The Moon*, with all the tackle and apparel to them belonging, to *George Barns*, Mayor of London, *William Garret*, one of the sheriffs, *John York* and *Thomas Windham*; they engaging themselves, and being bound to deliver to his majesty's use by Midsummer, 1554, another ship and pinace of like goodness and burden. (These ships were set forth for the great adventure into the East by the North seas, by the encouragement of *Sebastian Gabato*, a great seaman. They set forth a month or two after, being commanded by *Sir Hugh Willoughby*, who perished in the adventure in the northern parts. But it had this advantage, that hereby the trade into Russia was discovered.)

To William  
Seres.

A privilege granted to *William Seres*, stationer and bookseller, to print all books of private prayers, called *Primers*, as shall be agreeable to the book of *Common Prayer* established in the court of parliament: and that none else do print the same, upon pain of forfeiture of the same. Provided, that before the said *Seres* and his assigns do begin to print the same, he shall present a copy thereof to be allowed by the lords of the privy council, or by the king's chancellor for the time being, or by the king's four ordinary chaplains, or two of them. And when the same is or shall be from time to time printed, that by the said lords, and others of the said privy council, or by the lord chancellor, or with the advice of the wardens of the occupation, the reasonable price thereof to be set, as well in the leaves, as being bound in paste or board, in like manner as is expressed in the end of our book of *Common Prayer*. March 4, an. 7.

To Griffith  
Leyson.

A patent to *Griffith Leyson*, LL.D. of a manor called *Tresberket*, in *New Carmarthen*, lately belonging to the priory of *Carmarthen*, with the appurte-

nances, and other lands, &c. Dated March 9. Pay- 1552.  
ing yearly 39*l.* 16*s.* 10*d.*

A patent granted to Sir Philip Hoby, of the monas-  
tery of Bisham, in Berks, with all the grange within To Sir  
Phil. Hoby.  
the said monastery, and the advowson and right of  
patronage to the vicarage, &c. extending to the value  
of 61*l.* 19*s.* 8*d.* And that he may convert the afore-  
said rectory, with its appurtenances, glebe and profits,  
to his own use. Dated March 6.

A purchase to William Crowch, Esq. and Susan, To William  
Crowch.  
his wife, for the sum of 568*l.* 4*s.* 5*d.* of all the lord-  
ship and manor of Hampton, and all the hundred of  
Hampton, in the county of Somerset, with all the  
rights and appurtenances whatsoever, late parcel of  
the lands, revenues, and possessions of the bishop p. 505.  
and bishoprick of Bath and Wells: and also all the  
lands, meadows, pastures, &c. called by the name of  
Cleves; and all the land, &c. called Archers' Meads,  
&c. lately belonging to the monastery of Henton.  
Dated March 15.

A purchase to Sir Roger Cholmely, lord chief To Sir  
Roger  
Cholmely.  
justice of England, and Lady Christine, his wife, for  
the sum of 246*l.* of the lordships and manors of East  
(Ham) West Ham and Placy, in the county of  
Essex; late parcel of the possessions belonging to the  
late monastery of Stratford Langton. Which are  
extended to the sum of 12*l.* 6*s.* March 24.

A grant to William Lord Paget of Beaudesert, and To Lord  
Paget.  
to his posterity for ever, to give in his arms, sables,  
a cross engrailed between four eaglets, argent; upon  
the cross five lioncels passant sable, armed and languid,  
gules. And to his crest, upon the helm, a demy  
tiger, sable, rampant, fashed, toothed, with a crown  
about the neck, argent upon a wreath, argent and  
sables mantled of the same: which arms were given  
him before by a king of arms that could not give it;  
and now confirmed by the king's majesty. Dated  
March 21.

A wardship or custody granted to the Earl of  
Warwick, of Edward Seimour, Kt. with an annuity

1552. of 510*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.* growing and coming out of certain manors in Dorsetshire, Somerset, and Wilts, for the education of the said Edward; which lands were appointed and assigned out by the master and council of the Wards, by virtue of the king's warrant. Dated March 30.

1553.  
To the  
Lady  
Denny.

A purchase granted to the Lady Johan Denny, widow (of Sir Anthony Denny, of King Henry's privy chamber), for the sum of 3202*l.* 7*s.* 0 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* (so in Chancellor Goodrick's Ledger, but in the Warrant Book 4102*l.* 7*s.*) of the lordships and manors of Waltham and Nasing, with the appurtenances, with a fulling-mill and two water-mills, late parcel of the dissolved abbey of Waltham-Cross, in Essex, with the parsonage and church of Mettingham, and advowson of the same; and the parsonage and church of Sibton, and advowson of the same; late parcel of the possessions of the Duke of Norfolk, &c. extending unto the yearly value of 103*l.* 4*s.* 8*d.* To have to her and her heirs the manors *in capite*, the rectories in soccage. Dated April 16, an. reg. 7.

To the  
Earl of  
Westmor-  
land.

A pardon granted to the Earl of Westmorland, of all treasons, as well greater as less, and concealments of treasons, misprisions, insurrections, rebellions, confederacies, conspiracies, imaginations and abbettings, procurations, comfortations, unlawful uttering of words, before the 20th day of March; and all other murders, homicides, accessaries, and flights for the same; and all heresies, and heretical opinions, and undue uttering of words against the king and his counsellors. Dated April 17.

To Sir T.  
Wroth.

A gift to Sir Thomas Wroth, in fee-simple, of all the seite of the monastery of Abendon, and St. John's chapel, lying in St. Michael's church, in Abendon, in Berks, with divers other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 5*l.* 14*s.* Dated in March.

To the  
Lord  
Darcy.

An exchange made between the King's Majesty and the Lord Darcy, lord chamberlain: the king granting to the same lord, the manor of Clarkton, with the appurtenances, in the county of Essex, some-



time parcel of the bishoprick of London, with the lands called Westwick, and parks of Alton and Clarkton, with the manor of Weylech, with the free warren of deer in Weyleche park; and all the manor of Canonshall, with the parishes of Much Clackton, Little Clackton, and Little Holland; and all those the manors, lordships, and tenements of Wiglarrow, in Chiche, with the advowson of Kenne, in the county of Devon, and Churchton, in the county of Stafford. And the king's majesty hath of the said Lord Darcy, all his manors or late prebends of Wollesgrove, and Towford, Henstue, Polecros, with divers other lands, in the county of Devon, with the manor of Crediton, with all the lordship or manor, hundred, and borough, late part of the bishoprick of Exeter; and the manor of Weachton-Underwold, in the county of York, with the advowson and parsonage of Morchard Bishop, called Bishop's Morchard, in the county of Devon, &c.

1553.  
p. 506.

A pardon granted to William Worthington, being indebted to the king for and concerning the office of bailiff and collector of the rents and revenues of all the manors, messuages, lands, tenements, and hereditaments, within the city of London, and the county of Middlesex, which did belong to colleges, guilds, fraternities, or free chapels, in the sum of 392*l.* 10*s.* 3*d.* as upon the foot of his account, made by the said William before Thomas Mildmay, auditor of the said revenues, manifestly in it doth appear; in consideration of his service both in France and Scotland, and also his daily service and attendance, being one of the ordinary gentlemen and pensioners, and for that debt grew by the unfaithfulness of his servant, who ran away with the same. Granted in March, but the patent signed in April.

To William  
Worthing-  
ton.

The office of keeping the chief mansion at Otford to Sir Henry Sydney, for life, with the fee of twopence a-day; the office of steward of the honour of Otford, with the fee of 6*l.* 13*s.* 3*d.* per ann. and the keeping of the woods there, with the fee of twopence a-day;

To Sir H.  
Sydney.

1533. the office of bailiff of the manor : the office of bailiff of the manors of Gravesend and Milton ; the keeping of the great park there ; the office of under-steward there : the office of steward of the manor of Swainscomb ; the keeping of the manor of Knol, with the garden and orchard ; the keeping of the park at Knol ; the keeping of the woods there : the office of under-steward of the manor of Knol, with the respective fees. And a lease to him of the little park of Otford. Dated in April.

To Sir H. Seimour. A grant to Sir Henry Seimour, for life, of the manors of Somerford and Hurn, with the appurtenances, in the county of Southampton, and divers other lands, to the yearly value of 202*l.* 6*s.* 9 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* without account rendering, or paying any thing therefore. Dated as before.

To Sir W. Cecyl. The office of chancellor of the order of the garter to Sir William Cecyl, Knt. with the fee of 100 marks per ann. during his life, to be paid at the Exchequer half-yearly. Dated as above.

To St. Alban's. A grant for the establishing of the corporation of St. Alban's, in the county of Hereford (Hertford), with certain liberties therein mentioned ; and for the erection of a free grammar-school there ; with a grant of the late abbey church to be their parish church. Dated as above.

p. 507.

To the Lady Denny. A purchase to the Lady Denny, in April, for 1102*l.* 7*s.* 0 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* of certain manors, lands, &c. in the counties of Essex and Suffolk, of the yearly value of 153*l.* 4*s.* 7 $\frac{1}{4}$ *d.*

To the Lord Wharton. A patent, dated in April, for augmentation of a bordure of lions' legs to the Lord Wharton's ancient arms.

To Sir Will. Petre. A purchase to Sir William Petre, Knt. of the manor of Shapwich, Murlinch, and Ashcote, and the hundred of Whitteleghe, in the county of Somerset, and divers other lands in Devon, for the sum of 554*l.* 12*s.* 1*d.* ; of the yearly value of 77*l.* 6*s.* 3 $\frac{1}{4}$ *d.* To him and his heirs for ever. Bearing date April 3.

To the Archbishop of Athens. A passport to the Archbishop of Athens, to pass through the realm into Scotland, with twelve persons in his company. Dated in April.

The erection of the county palatine of Durham, <sup>1553.</sup> to continue from henceforth in such manner and degree as is mentioned in the letters patents; wherein Durham made a county palatine. shall be appointed such numbers of judges, officers, and ministers, as be requisite to supply the same, and a great seal and privy seal; and the same county palatine shall be united to the imperial crown of England. Dated as before.

A gift to the Duke of Northumberland, and to his heirs male, of the castle, called Bernard's Castle, <sup>To the Duke of Northumberland.</sup> within the bishoprick of Durham, (or) in the county of Northumberland, with divers lands to the yearly value of 229*l.* 6*s.* 3½*d.* Dated as before.

The office of steward of all the honours, castles, <sup>To the same.</sup> manors, lordships, lands, &c. in the counties of Cumberland, Northumberland, Westmorland, and York, or any otherwhere within the bishoprick of Durham, to the said Duke of Northumberland for life, with the several fees of 50*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to the same offices belonging. Dated in the said month of April.

A grant to Sir John Mason, Knt. and to the inhabitants of the town of Abendon, in Berks, that there shall be an hospital in Abendon, called Christ's Hospital, to continue for ever, with twelve governors; with a gift to the same governors, and to their successors, of the messuage and tenement called the Antelope, in Abendon, with divers other lands, &c. <sup>To Sir J. Mason.</sup> to the yearly value of 65*l.* 11*s.* 10*d.* Dated in May.

A gift to Sir John Gates, of the manor of Hursbourn, in the county of Southampton, with divers <sup>To Sir J. Gates.</sup> other lands, to the yearly value of 203*l.* 10*s.* 0½*d.*; with a further grant, that there shall be for ever one market and two fairs at Ringwood. Dated in May.

A gift, the same month, to Sir John Cheke, and <sup>To Sir J. Cheke.</sup> his heirs male, of Clare, in Suffolk, with divers other lands, to the yearly value of 100*l.*

A grant to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, of the fee-farm of the lordship, manor, town, and borough of Gateshead, lately parcel of the possessions of the bishoprick of Durham, with divers <sup>To Newcastle.</sup>

1553. other lands, to the yearly value of 27*l.* 0*s.* 8½*d.* To be holden in free burgage. Dated in May.

p. 508. Many lands and manors passed away by purchase from the king, this month of May.

To the Lady Mary A grant in June, to the Lady Mary's grace, during her life, of the castle and manor of Hertford, the manor of Hartingfordbury, the parks of Hertford and Hartingfordbury, with the appurtenances, in the county of Hertford; the manor and park of Wikes, in Essex; to the yearly value of 91*l.* 2*s.* 3½*d.*

To Cutbert Vaughan. The office of master and overseer of the king's bears, bulls, and dogs, to Cutbert Vaughan for life, with all profits to the same belonging; and to take up mastiff dogs, bears, and bulls, at reasonable prices. Dated in June.

To Lord R. Dudley. A gift to the Lord Robert Dudley, of the manor of Corsy and Saxlingham, in Norfolk, of the yearly value of 149*l.* 10*s.* 4*d.* Dated as above.

To the Duke of Northumberland. A gift to the Duke of Northumberland, of the manors of Feckenham, Bromesgrove, and King's Norton, in Worcestershire, of the yearly value of 300*l.* Dated as above.

To Sir W. Cecyl. A purchase for 687*l.* 6*s.* 6*d.* to Sir William Cecyl, of all the lands, meadows, pastures, feedings, now or of late in the tenure of William Broke, lying in Collyweston, in Northampton, with other lands, to the yearly value of 30*l.* 16*s.* 5½*d.* Dated as above.

To Sir J. Gates. The office of keeping the house and park at Eltham to Sir John Gates, and the park of Horn, and the office of steward of the manor of Eltham. Dated as above.

To the Lord Clinton. The Lord Clinton appointed the chief order, rule, and safe custody of the Tower of London, with such numbers as are appointed by his highness. Dated as above.

To the Earl of Arundel. A pardon and discharge to the Earl of Arundel for 10,000 marks, acknowledged by him to owe unto the king's majesty by recognizance, upon certain considerations in the same expressed. Dated as above.

A purchase to Sir William Petre, Knt. of certain



tenths, amounting to the yearly value of 15*l.* 7*s.* 2½*d.* <sup>1553.</sup>  
 reserved to the king's majesty out of the manors of <sup>To Sir W. Petre.</sup>  
 Engerston, Hendley, Cawondel, alias Thorowden, in  
 Essex; the manors of Teddenham and Sutton, in the  
 county of Gloucester; the manor of Churchsto, in  
 the county of Devon: paying for the same 707*l.* 4*s.* 2*d.*  
 To him and his heirs. June 22.

A pardon granted to Peter Osborn (officer in the <sup>To Peter Osborn.</sup>  
 Exchequer) for all manner of accounts and reckon-  
 ings, as well of such sums of money as he hath re-  
 ceived of the arrearages of the king's majesty's debts,  
 as other sums of money received for his highness's  
 special affairs, and by Mr. Vice-chamberlain's ap-  
 pointment, to the sum of 39,949*l.*; which he hath  
 issued out by sufficient warrants, as in the declaration  
 of his accounts appeared; together with his discharge  
 for 106*l.* taken away in the chamber where the king  
 doth commonly hear the sermons. Dated June 25.

A gift to John Earl of Bedford, and Edmund <sup>To the Earl of Bedford.</sup>  
 Downing, Gent. of the manor of Boiton on Barton-  
 de-Bridge, with the appurtenances, in the county of  
 Cornwall, and other manors in Wilts, and other par-  
 cels of the bishoprick of Worcester, and divers other  
 manors in other counties; extending to the full value <sup>p. 509.</sup>  
 yearly of 78*l.* 6*s.* 7*d.* To them and their heirs, pay-  
 ing yearly out of the manor of Boiton 4*l.* 17*s.* and  
 from Lurgishal 7*l.* 6*s.* 2*d.* Dated June 19.

A gift to the Earl of Shrewsbury, of the capital <sup>To the Earl of Shrewsbury.</sup>  
 messuage of Coldharborow, in Thames-street, Lon-  
 don, belonging lately to the bishoprick of Durham,  
 with the appurtenances to the same messuage belong-  
 ing; and all those six messuages and tenements, late  
 in the tenure of Henry Polston, and others, in the  
 parish of St. Dunstan-in-the-East, in London, with  
 divers other lands belonging to Sir John Robert, of  
 Knaresborow, and the priory of Pomfret, in the  
 county of York. To him and his heirs. To the  
 yearly value of 66*l.* 16*s.* 1½*d.* Dated June 30.

A purchase made by Anthony Brown (of South <sup>To Anth. Brown, Esq.</sup>  
 Weald, in Essex), Esq. in reversion of the Lady

1553. Anne of Cleves, the manor of Costed Hall, with the appurtenances, in the county of Essex, with all the fairs and markets in Brentwood, which were part of the possessions of Thomas Crumwel, Knt. late Earl of Essex, and are extended to the yearly value of 17*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* To have to the said Anthony and his wife Johan, and their heirs for ever. Dated June 28.

To Spainy  
and Bas-  
pole.

A purchase to Edward Spainy and John Baspole, Gents. for the sum of 436*l.* 12*s.* 7*d.* of Lemans manor, in the county of Norfolk, and the parsonage of Tamstale, of the late possessions of the house of Sybton, in the county of Suffolk; with certain other lands and tenements, extended to the clear yearly value of 20*l.* 18*s.* 3½*d.* To hold the said manor of Lemans *in capite*, of the fiftieth part of one knight's fee, and the rectory in soccage. Signed at Westminster, July 1.

To the  
same.

The same 1st of July was granted them a fee-farm, in reversion of the Duchess of Richmond and Countess of Nottingham, of the scite of the late monastery of Westacre, and the lordship and manor of Westacre and Ousthorp, and the parsonage of Westacre, and all the appurtenances, in the county of Norfolk; with two warrens of conies, which they call Wycan Warren, and the other Ousthorp, with a mill, and a meadow called Will's Meadow, and the parsonage and church of Ousthorp and Westacre; and all the lordship and manor of Great and Little Walsingham, with all the lordships and manors of Betts and Hadshaws, in the county of Norfolk: which are extended to the yearly value of 201*l.* 14*s.* 9½*d.* To have to them and their heirs for ever; paying thence yearly 52*l.* 6*s.*

To John  
Towly.

A pardon granted to John Towly, of London, pultor; with pardon of his lands and goods. Dated July 5. (This was but the day before the king's death, and, I suppose, the very last that ever he signed.)

## CHAP. XXXI.

p. 510.

A collection of various letters, warrants, and licenses from the king, both to foreigners and his subjects.

**T**O give a further insight into the transactions of this reign, I shall now set down other matters that passed from the king and council, viz. 1550.

IV. *Letters, warrants, licenses, and passports.*

A passport to Dr. James Omphalius, stranger, to go into Flanders, with three servants, three horses, 300 crowns, with all other necessaries. Dated in November, 1550. To Dr. Omphalius

A letter to the Bishop of Colen, advertising him, that the king hath received his letters sent unto his highness by James Omphalius. Dated as before. To the Bp. of Colen.

A letter of answer to Otto, Duke of Brunswick, that where he required of the king money and aid by his letters, that his highness would have been willing to have granted unto his request, if for the necessity of his reign and affairs to do the contrary he were not forced. Dated in November. To the Duke of Brunswick

A letter to the mayor, aldermen, and commons, of the city of London, in favour of Henry Fisher, that he may succeed Thomas Hays in the room and office of chamberlain of the said city, void by the death of the said Thomas. Dated as before. To the mayor, aldermen, &c. of London.

A warrant to grant to my Lady Elizabeth's grace, the wardship and marriage of William Reyner, during his minority, with the keeping of the manor of Overton Longfield, and the advowson of the church of Overton Longfield, in Huntingdonshire, without fine or accounts making. Dated in December. To the Lady Elizabeth.

A warrant to grant to Katharine Duchess of Suffolk, the wardship of Henry Duke of Suffolk, To the Duchess of Suffolk.

1550. (her son) and Agnes Woodhil;\* allowing her for the keeping of them, 220*l.* a year. A warrant afterwards, allowing 100*l.* more for keeping the duke, and 20*l.* more for the 'said Agnes, during their minority : and the grant of the wardship and marriage of them to begin from Michaelmas, an. 1. reg. Dated in December.

To Jugg,  
the printer  
p. 511. A license to Jugg, citizen and stationer, of London, and to his sufficient deputies, to print the New Testament in English, as well in great volumes as in small, for the space of            years, next ensuing the date hereof. Dated in January.

To Marg.  
Birken-  
head. A letter to Margaret Birkenhead, widow, in favour of Peter Aston, that she will, at the contemplation of the king's letters, take in marriage the said Peter. Dated as before.

To Sir W.  
Petre. A warrant to Sir William Petre, to pay to Sir John Markham (lieutenant of the Tower) for the necessary apparel of William Courtney (a prisoner in the Tower from his childhood, son and heir of the Marquis of Exeter, beheaded) the sum of 59*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* and for his spending money 50*l.* Payable at the feasts of the Annunciation of our Lady, the Nativity of St. John Baptist, St. Michael, and Christmas. Dated in February.

To the  
same. A like warrant to Sir William Petre, to pay Sir John Markham, for the necessary apparel of the late Duke of Norfolk (a prisoner) the sum of 73*l.* 5*s.* 4*d.* and for his spending money 80*l.* at the feasts mentioned in the other warrant. Dated in February.

To the Earl  
of Bedford A letter to the Earl of Bedford, warden of the stannery of Devon, to summon before him, or his deputy, at a place called Crockrentor, within the said stannery, four-and-twenty of the discreetest tinnors of every stannery, and to reform all such laws and cus-

\* She seems to have been of the noble family of the Woodvilles, that were Earls Rivers; Elizabeth, of that name, Edward IV. made his queen; and her sister was married to Henry Duke of Bucks.



toms as be amiss therein : and to set such good laws and orders as be requisite for the preservation of the said stannery. Dated in February. 1550.

A letter, undirected, in the presence of Mr. Vice-chamberlain, and Sir Anthony Aucher, to take all manner of garnishments, and apparel of silver and gold, and to deliver it to the said Sir Anthony ; and to deface and carry away out of the library at Westminster, all books of superstition. Dated as above. To deface superstitious books in Westminster.

A letter, undirected, in favour of Edward Randolph, willing and commanding him, in consideration of the faithful service done by the said Edward to the king's majesty, to make him a lease in reversion of the demesns of the whole possession of the Abbey of Connel, in the county of Kildare, in the realm of Ireland, for 21 years, now in the occupation of Gerard Sutton. Dated in March. In favour of Edward Randolph.

A license to Rafe Hopton, and his wife, with two or three guests, to eat flesh in Lent, and other fasting days, during his life. Dated in March. To Rafe Hopton.

A license to Sir Edward Warner, and Elizabeth, his wife, with two or three guests, to eat flesh and white meats in Lent, and on other fasting days, during his life. Dated as before. To Sir E. Warner.

A warrant, undirected, to pay the Bishop of Norwich for his diet, from the 10th of April last, until his return (out of the North) 40s. by the day ; and to Sir Robert Bowes 1*l.* 6s. 8*d.* Dated in March. 1551. In behalf of the Bp. of Norwich, &c.

A recognizance to Sir Andrew Jud, mayor of the city of London, and the commonalty of the same, that the king shall discharge them, their successors, lands, possessions, and goods whatsoever, as well beyond the seas, as on this side the same, for the payment of certain sums of money, Flemish, which they stand bound for to Anthony Fugger, and his nephews, to be paid at Antwerp. Dated in April. To Sir A. Jud.

A letter to the Earl of Wiltshire, declaring, that the king's pleasure is, that he call to him Sir Walter Mildmay, Kt. and of such treasure as remaineth in p. 512. To the Earl of Wilts.

1551. his hand in the Tower of London, to deliver to the Lord Clinton one collar of gold of the order of the garter, with a George thereunto appendent: taking of him so much gold of the same fineness as the same collar shall amount unto, or the value thereof; and that he deliver also to the Lord Marquis of Northampton, one garter, with a George of the best sort. The same collar and garter to be employed upon the French king. Dated in April.

To the  
French  
king.

A letter to the French king, declaring, that the king's majesty, with others of the honourable garter, hath elected and taken him into the same order, the 24th of April (being the day following the feast of St. George) according to the old and antient custom. Dated in May.

To Sir R.  
Sadler.

A warrant to Sir Ralph Sadler, to deliver to Edward Lord Clinton, Lord Admiral, who is now elect and chosen to be of the right honourable order of the garter, for his livery of the same order, 18 yards of crimson velvet, for one gown, hood, and tippet, and 10 yards of white sarcenet, for the lining of the same. Dated in May.

For Wm.  
Thomas,  
Esq.

A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to allow William Thomas, clerk of the council, going over into France in quality of ambassador, for his diet 40s. a-day; and to the Marquis of Northampton 10l. a-day; and to Sir Philip Hoby five marks a-day. Dated in May.

For Sir G.  
Dethic, Kt.

A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, for Sir Gilbert Dethic, Kt. alias Garter principal king of arms, attending the Lord Marquis of Northampton in his ambassade to the French king, to have for his diet 20s. by the day, from the 28th of April last, unto his return to the king's presence; and for his reward 20s. by the day: and to allow for his posting and transporting, both outward and homeward, of him and his train, and also for certain robes of the order, and other things necessary, such sums of money as by his bill subscribed he shall signify. And further, to allow him for the diet of Chester herald 5s. by

the day, and 5*s.* in reward by the day; and for the diet of Rouge Dragon pursevant, 2*s.* 6*d.* by the day, and 2*s.* 6*d.* reward also by the day: and also for their posting money, according to the tenor aforesaid. Dated as afore. 1551.

A warrant to Sir Ralph Sadler, to deliver to Sir Gilbert Dethic three yards of cloth of gold, two yards of cloth of gold tissue, and sixteen yards of blue velvet; which shall be for the banner, for the mantles of the helmet, and the lining of the same, for the installation of the French king. Dated as afore. For the same.

A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay to Sir Thomas Smith, sent into France, for his diet, from the 29th of April last, unto his return to the king's presence, 3*l.* by the day; defalking out of the same 100*l.* which he hath already received in prest. Dated as afore. For Sir T. Smith.

A passport to the Bishop of Ely to go into France, in his ambassade thither. Dated in May. To the Bp. of Ely,

A warrant, undirected, to deliver to him 2000 French crowns, taking of him sufficient bond for the repayment of the same in like crowns, or other gold of the same fineness, and of that value: and also to sundry other noblemen and gentlemen, as shall attend upon the Lord Marquis of Northampton in his ambassade, 4000 French crowns a-piece, taking likewise of every of them bonds of repayment. Dated in May. p. 513.  
For lending 2000 French crowns.

A warrant for allowance of John Olyver, doctor of the civil law, one of the two lawyers (Sir Thomas Smith the other) appointed to go with the Marquis of Northampton into France, four marks by the day, for his diet. Dated as above. For Dr. Olyver.

A warrant to the Exchequer, where John Forster, of London, gave information to the officers, that Andrew Cutler, Richard Westerfield, Roger Ireland, John Bound, and William Wright, of London, by the space of 200 days, in the parish of St. Benet, in London, did maintain a certain house of playing at dice and cards, contrary to the law provided therefore, forthwith they have forfeited every one 40*s.*; to To cease prosecution of A. Cutler, &c.

1551. surcease for ever of all processes, executions, quarrels, and demands; so that they be discharged of the premises. Dated in May.

To pay the  
Lady Anne  
of Cleve's  
officers.

A warrant, undirected, to pay to certain of the Lady Anne of Cleve's officers, viz. to the chamberlain 26*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to her receiver 20*l.* to her cofferer 20*l.* to her comptroller 13*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* to Dr. Cornelius 46*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to Chard 20*l.* to Hoven 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* to Bronkehosen 10*l.* to Lodwic 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to John Scholebormve, and to some others, footmen and others, &c. and to pay the same, whether the officers be placed or displaced. Dated in June.

For Sir J.  
Gates, Sir  
P. Hoby,  
Sir H. Seimour, &c.

A letter, undirected, where the king hath given to Sir John Gates, Sir Philip Hoby, Sir Henry Seimour, Sir Andrew Dudley, Kts. and Henry Nevyl, and William Fitzwilliams, Esqrs. certain manors, lands, tenements, &c. to them and their heirs, parcel of the castles, lands, and tenements, lately had of the Bishop of Winchester, that pertained to the bishoprick, with the rents and profits, &c.; and where the king hath granted to Sir Thomas Wroth an annuity of 100*l.* going out of the manor of Taunton, and out of other lands, &c. belonging to the same bishoprick; his majesty's pleasure is, that he account and pay to them all the said rents, issues, and profits, coming and growing of the said manors from Michaelmas last forwards: and the annuity to Sir Thomas Wroth, from the death of Sir Francis Brian. Dated in June.

For the  
castle of  
Dover.

A letter, undirected, for the castle of Dover to be surveyed, and thereupon to be repaired sufficiently without delay. Dated as before.

To the  
warden of  
the stannery.

A letter to the warden of the stannery of Cornwall, to summon within the town of Lostwithiel four-and-twenty of the most substantial and discreet tanners of every stannery, and there to make, amend, and reform all such laws, customs, enormities, and other things as are amiss, and needful to be redressed within the said stannery, for the quietness and good government of the tanners there, the preservation of



the said stannery, and for the commonwealth of the realm; and to put the said order and laws strictly in execution. Dated in June. 1551.

A license to George Chidley, to wear his cap in the king's presence, or elsewhere, without let or trouble of any man. Dated in July. To George Chidley.

A letter to the Earl of Darby, declaring, the king's majesty is well pleased with his son, the Lord Strange, that he shall solemnize marriage with his majesty's kinswoman, the Lady Margaret, daughter to the Duke of Somerset, his highness's uncle. Dated in July. p. 514.  
To the Earl of Darby.

A warrant to the surveyor of Essex, to deliver to Sir William Petre twenty good oaks, fit for timber, within Horsefrith Park, in the same county. Dated in August. For Sir W. Petre.

A warrant to the cofferer and clerk of the household, to pay Henry Sydney, admitted one of the chief gentlemen of his majesty's privy chamber, in the Lord Darcy's room, 100*l.* a-year, payable quarterly. For Sir H. Sydney.

A license to Sir Thomas Wroth, to give license to any one of his servants, from time to time, to shoot in any cross-bow, or hand-gun, at all kind of fowls, and, with license of the owner, at all manner of deer, red and fallow. Dated in September. (For in the 2d and 3d of the king, all such shooting hailshot at any fowl was forbidden to all under the degree of a lord of the parliament.) To Sir T. Wroth.

A warrant to the Lord Marquis of Dorset and Lord Cobham, to accept into the order of the garter the Lord Darcy, and to give him his oath, according to a chapter holden at Hampton Court, by the king and his brethren, the 28th of September. Dated in October. For the Ld. Darcy

Licenses to Sir Philip Hoby, Sir John Gates, Edward Lord Clinton, Sir John Mason, for life, with as many as shall come to their tables, to eat flesh and white meats in Lent, and other fasting days. To Sir P. Hoby, Sir J. Gates, &c.

A warrant to the master and officers of the Court of Wards and Liveries, to deliver to Sir Anthony To Sir A. Cook.

1551. Cook eight obligations, wherein he standeth bound for the payment of 200*l.* at several days, for the wardship and marriage of William Shelly; and also to discharge him of a yearly rent of 47*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* for the manors of Boxsted and Great Horsly, in the counties of Essex and Suffolk; which the king hath forgiven him. Dated in November.

For Sir E.  
Peckham.

A warrant, dated in November, to the Duke of Northumberland, William Earl of Pembroke, &c. to discharge Sir Edmund Peckham (Treasurer of the Mint) in his account which he presently yieldeth to them, the several sums of

£	s.	d.
4000	0	0
2333	6	8
10642	4	11 q.
6790	0	0

which the king, for divers considerations, hath forgiven him. (Sir John York, sub-treasurer, and divers other officers of the Mint, had these kind of pardons in December.)

To the Bp.  
of Roches-  
ter.

A license to John (Scory) Bishop of Rochester, and Elizabeth, his wife, to eat flesh in Lent, and other fasting days, during his life. Dated in November.

To the Ld.  
Chancellor

A letter to the Lord Chancellor, to cause a sufficient commission to be made, and sealed with the great seal of England, of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to the Lord Marquis of Winchester, that he may thereby be the king's seneshal *hac unica vice tantum*, for the hearing and determining of the treasons and felonies of the Duke of Somerset; giving the date of the said commission the 28th of this month (of November.) And also to cause a commission of *Oyer* and *Terminer* to be directed to the two chief justices, and to their associates. So that the said justices, and any other three of their sociates, be of the *quorum* of the said commission; and the same to be dated the 29th of this month, for the trying by the order of the laws, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir Thomas Arundel,

Sir Rafe Fane, and Sir Miles Partridge, Kts. John Nudigate and John Seimour, indicted with the said duke. 1551.

Another letter to the said Lord Chancellor, to cause the commission of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, made to the Chief Justices of both the King's Benches, for the trial of the treasons of Sir Michael Stanhope, and others, to be made again to the Earl of Bedford, Viscount Hereford, Lord Cobham, the Lord Chief Baron, and after appointed in the said commission. Dated in November. To the same.

A warrant to Sir Anthony Darcy (who was now come into the room of Sir Arthur Markham) for the diet of the Duke of Norfolk every month sithence the 29th of October last, 20*l.*; and for the diet of his man every month, 26*s.* 8*d.*; and for wood, coal, and candle, 32*s.* To Sir Anthony Darcy.

And for the diet of Edward Courtney monthly, 5*l.* 8*s.*, accounting 28 days to the month: and 20*s.* for his servant; and 8*s.* for wood, coal, and candle. Dated in December.

A warrant to the Chancellor of the Augmentation, and other officers there, to pay to Thomas Bishop of Ely, to whom the king hath committed the custody of the great seal, for his wages, diet, and livery of himself, and his ministers of the Chancery, in as large manner as the Lord Rich or any other had, from the 22d of December, an. 5. Edw. VI. To the Chancellor of the Augmentations

Six letters to being of one import, signifying to them, that where the king's majesty hath appointed the Bishop of Ely, the Earl of Bedford, Sir John Gates, Sir William Petre, Sir Rob. Bowes, and Sir Walter Mildmay, to be his highness's commissioners to peruse and consider the state of his majesty's courts, and to understand perfectly what debts be due unto him within the same; his majesty's pleasure is, that every one of them shall from time to time be attendant upon the said commissioners, giving unto them such instructions, and doing such things For the Bishop of Ely, Earl of Bedford, &c.

1531. as the said commissioners shall think good to require of them. Dated in Decemb.

To the deputy and council of Ireland. A letter to the deputy and council of Ireland, that in case they shall think it convenient, they do establish in the same realm an office for the sealing and measuring of linen and woollen cloths, as like offices be in this realm; making reasonable taxes for the same: and to grant a lease thereof to John Colby, during the king's pleasure; reserving to the king such reasonable rents as they shall think good. Dated in January.

To the Bishop of Ely. A warrant to the Bishop of Ely, to make out a commission to the Lord Treasurer, to take the said (Bishop of Ely) Lord Chancellor's oath.

To Sir Tho. Palmer. A pardon to Sir Thomas Palmer, of London, of all manner of treasons, &c. Dated in February.

p. 516.  
For the Marquis of Northampton. A bill to be enacted for legitimating as well the marriage of William Marquis of Northampton, and Elizabeth, his wife (his former wife yet living, from whom he was divorced), as the children born between them. Dated as above.

To the Lord Chancellor. A warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make forth writs of execution of Sir Rafe Vane, Miles Partidge, Thomas Arundel, and Michael Stanhop, Kts. that is to say, for heading of Thomas Arundel and Michael Stanhop, and hanging the rest. Dated as above.

For the lazars of Mile-end. A protection to beg, granted to the poor lazars of the house of our Saviour Jesus Christ and Mary Magdalen, at Mile-end, (within the parish) of Stepnehuche (Stepney), in the county of Middlesex: and John Mills appointed their proctor. Sealed Feb. 18.

Protections to beg. A protection or license to beg, granted to Richard Pope, of the parish of Henly, in the county of Hertford, to beg within the county of Hertford: and the same to endure for one whole year. Feb. 16. (These protections, granted both to hospitals and necessitous persons, were frequently practised; as ap-



pears by these following, besides those above, granted in February.) 1551.

A protection to Thomas Drauffield, in Darby, to beg within the counties of York and Leicester, and the city of York, and not elsewhere, during one whole year.

A protection granted to the lazars of the hospital of St. Peter, nigh St. Edmund's-bury: and George Hodgson, guide of the house, appointed their proctor. To dure one year.

A protection granted to the lazars of the house of Mary Magdalen and St. Anthony, of Becoles, in Suffolk: and Edward Lydgate appointed their proctor.

A protection granted to the hospital of the brethren, without Bishopsgate, London: and Thomas Haliday appointed their proctor.

A protection granted to the hospital of our Lady and St. Katharine, at Newington, in Surrey: William Cleybroke their proctor. All these dated in February.

A protection granted to the hospital of Bethlem, without Bishopsgate: John Whitehed their proctor: to beg within the counties of Lincoln, and Cambridge, the City of London, and Isle of Ely. To endure for a whole year. March 7.

A license to beg, for Nicolas Sandburne, of Barkeham, in the county of Berks, in consideration of a fire: to beg within the county of Southampton, the Isle of Wight, the town of Southampton. To endure for one year. Dated March 22. (Such licenses I find sometimes for losses by fire. But the licenses extended not but to one county or two.)

A warrant to the Chancellor of the Augmentation, and to the other officers, to pay to Thomas Bishop of Ely and Lord Chancellor, for his wages, diet, and livery, of himself, and of the masters of the Chancery; that is to say, after the rate of 54*l.* 15*s.* by the year, from the 19th of January, an. 5. reg. Edw. VI. so long as he shall exercise the same office: 1552.  
For the Bishop of Ely.

1552. and for his attendance in the Star-chamber, after the  
 p. 517. rate of 50*l.* every term: and after the rate of 300*l.*  
 by year, over and above his said allowances quarterly.  
 Dated in March.

To the Marquis of Branden-  
 burgh. A letter of thanks to Albert Marquis of Branden-  
 burgh, for falcons sent yearly unto the king by him.  
 Dated in March, 1552.

To Henry  
 Smith. A license to Henry Smith, of London, merchant,  
 to bring into the realm such persons as he shall think  
 meet, for making of glass, of like fashion and good-  
 ness to that which is called Normandy. Dated in  
 April.

To the  
 Lord Chan-  
 cellor. A warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make out  
 several writs to Robert Brook, James Dier, John  
 Caril, Thomas Gawdy, Richard Catlyn, Rafe Rooks-  
 by, William Staunford, and William Dallison, Esqrs.  
 that in consideration that his majesty hath nominated  
 and appointed them to be serjeants at the law, to  
 prepare themselves for the execution of the same,  
 upon pain of forfeiture of 1000*l.* a-piece accordingly.  
 Dated in June.

To the  
 Lady Anne  
 of Cleves. A letter to the Lady Anne of Cleves, requiring her  
 to give order for the going through with the exchange  
 for the manor of Bisham. Dated in June.

To the  
 Mayor of  
 Boston. A patent of license, granted to the mayor and bur-  
 gesses of Boston, in the county of Lincoln, that Sir  
 William Cecil, Kt. their recorder, may make his  
 deputy in the said office: proviso, that the said  
 deputy be learned in the law. Dated in June.

To the  
 Marquis of Winches-  
 ter, for  
 John Sei-  
 mour. A warrant to the Lord Marquis of Winchester,  
 master of the Wards and Liveries, signifying, that  
 whereas it is found, that the late Duke of Somerset  
 alienated certain lands which came unto him by  
 Katharine Fylol, his first wife, to the yearly value  
 of 67*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* which should have descended to John  
 Seimour, his eldest son, that he, according to the  
 late act of parliament, for the limitation of the said  
 late Duke of Somerset's lands to the heirs begotten  
 of the body of the Lady Anne, his second wife, ap-  
 point unto him so much thereof as shall amount to

the same sum ; and to award that he may have the same quietly. Dated in July. 1552.

A license to John Day, printer, of London, to print a Catechism, both in Latin and English, which the king's majesty hath caused to be set forth. Dated in September. To John Day.

A passport for two of the late Scotch king's bastard sons, to transport out of the realm four dozen of bows, twenty dozen of arrows, and four gross of strings, and two geldings. Dated in October. For the Scotch king's bastard sons.

A warrant to the treasury of the chapter (of the knights of the garter) to allow from the 5th of July last unto the 7th of October, unto Garter king of arms 10s. by the day ; unto Norroy 6s. 8d. by the day ; to Clarencieux 6s. 8d. by the day ; to Somerset 4s. by the day ; to Rouge Dragon 2s. by the day ; to Blue Mantle 2s. by the day : and to allow to Ulster king of arms, for his diet only, 6s. 8d. by the day. This for their diet in their attendance on his majesty in this time of his progress. Dated in October. For the kings at arms and heralds.

A letter to Sir Andrew Dudley, for his revocation from the captainship of Guisnes, to serve about his majesty in the place of one of the four principal gentlemen of his highness's privy chamber. Dated in the month above. To Sir Andrew Dudley. p. 518.

A license to Thomas Galtier, of London, to print in French all such books of the church as shall be set forth. (As Common Prayer Books, Homilies, Injunctions, &c. for the use of the churches in Calais, Guisnes, the Isles of Jersey, Guernsey, &c.) Dated in December. To Thomas Galtier.

A license to Edward Prime, Thomas Hicks, and Robert Butler, merchants adventurers of the city of Bristol, to chuse a master of the said mystery, and two wardens thereof. And that it shall be a corporation in itself for ever. Dated in December. To Edw. Prime, &c. of Bristol.

A warrant to the keeper of Mortymer Park, and the little park in the county of Berks, to deliver to Sir Philip Hoby thirty timber oaks, growing there. For Sir P. Hoby.

1552. A like warrant to the keeper of East Hemsted, in the said county, for the like number. (To build him, it may be, an house at Bisham ; the monastery there being granted to him.) Dated in January.

To the  
Lord Chan-  
cellor.

A warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to cause to be made, and directed forth, process for the calling and summoning of the parliament at Westminster, against the 1st of March. Dated in January.

To Sir A.  
Dudley,

A warrant to Sir Andrew Dudley, to deliver to John Bridges ten yards of crimson velvet, to make his majesty a kirtle and a whode for his parliament robes. Dated in January.

To the Bi-  
shop of  
Peter-  
borough.

A letter to the Bishop of Peterborough, licensing him to be absent from the next parliament, so as he make out his sufficient proxy to some discreet personage of the state.

To John  
Harwel,  
&c.

A license granted to John Harwel, and other nine in the county of Suffolk, clothiers, to make 500 coarse cloths ; so the same be made by Michaelmas next coming : and to sell the same to one Richard Crag of London, draper, his executors or assigns ; and to carry the same out of the realm during the space of one year after the date hereof, into the parts of Danske or East Land, upon condition that he shall bring in, to the king's majesty's use, cables, cordage, and oars, for the furniture and munition of the king's ships : commanding the customers, comptrollers, searchers, to take of him sufficient surety at the time of the shipping, for the bringing in of the cordage, and other marine munition, to the value of the same cloths. Provided, that the foresaid parties, after this number of cloths so made, shall not make or continue their trade. Dated Feb. 10.

To the  
Marquis of  
Winches-  
ter.

A warrant to William Marquis of Winchester, master of the Wards and Liveries, and to the council of the same court, to make such books and writings for the assurance of the wardship and marriage of Sir Edward Seimour, with the keeping, use, order, and receipt of certain manors, lands, tenements, &c. to the yearly value of 500*l.* and above, to the Earl of



Warwick. Dated in February. The patent was 1552.  
signed March 30 following.

A letter of gratulation to the Marquis of Branden-  
burgh; (for sending the king's falcons, as he did  
yearly.) Dated in February.

To the  
Marquis of  
Branden-  
burgh.

A letter to Margaret Tayler, widow, to join in  
marriage with John Canslare, gentleman of the king's  
chapel. Dated as before.

For John  
Canslare.

A license to William Seres, for                      years, to  
print the books of private prayers, (viz. such as were  
called Primers.) Dated as before.

p. 519.  
To Will.  
Seres.

A warrant to Sir Edmund Peckham, to deliver  
to Andrew Wise 4000*l.* to be employed by him to-  
wards the payment as well of the charges of the mines  
in Ireland, as otherwise, by order of the privy coun-  
cil, for the king's service. Dated in March.

To Sir Edm.  
Peckham.

A warrant to Sir Edmund Peckham, to deliver to  
Benjamin Gonson, treasurer of the admiralty, the sum  
of 6000*l.* to be by him defrayed towards the discharge  
of such debts as are due within that office, for the  
marine affairs. Dated in March.

To the  
same.

A warrant to                      to deliver to Benjamin  
Gonson, treasurer of the admiralty, the sum of 460*l.*  
about victualling and furniture of such ships as are  
presently sent forth for the apprehension of Strang-  
wich the pirate. Dated in March.

For Benja-  
min Gon-  
son.

A warrant delivered to Sir Maurice Denys, by  
way of prest, 6000*l.* to be by himself defrayed about  
the king's affairs in his office and charge. Dated as  
above.

For Sir  
Maurice  
Denys.

Another warrant to deliver to Andrew Wise 6000*l.*  
to be delivered by him to the executors of Martin  
Pirry, late treasurer of the mines in Ireland. Dated  
as above.

For And.  
Wise.

A letter to the commissioners of the sales of lands,  
to pass to the Earl of Pembroke certain lands after  
the rate of twenty years' purchase: and to pass to Sir  
William Petre certain lands after the same rate; he  
paying two parts in hand, and a third at Michaelmas.  
Dated as above.

For the  
Earl of  
Pembroke,  
and Sir W.  
Petre.

1553.  
To John  
Day.

A license of privilege granted to John Day, printer, for printing of a Catechism in English, with the brief of an *ABC* thereunto annexed: and also the printing and reprinting of all such works and books, devised and compiled by the right reverend father in God, John, now Bishop of Winton, or by Thomas Beacon, professor of divinity: so that no such book, nor any part of them, be in any wise repugnant to the holy scriptures, or proceedings in religion, and the laws of our realm. Dated at Westminster, March 25.

For the  
Lord  
Wharton.

A warrant to the Exchequer, to allow unto the Lord Wharton the sum of 6127*l.* 12*s.* 7¼*d.* Who being charged with the said sum upon his account, for his late office of warden of the West Marches against Scotland, and for the office of general receiver of certain manors in the county of Cumberland, by the space of eleven years, can produce warrant and sufficient authority for the allowance of the said sum before the treasurer and chamberlains of the Exchequer: which remission is granted to the same Lord Wharton, as well for the consideration mentioned in the book, as for his long and faithful service. And in the said remission, the Lord Dacre and the Lord Conyers must be also allowed and discharged of their petition and demand, touching the exercising of the said offices for their time; to be allowed by the said treasurer and chamberlains of the Exchequer. Dated in March.

To Peter  
Osborn.

A warrant to Peter Osborn, to disburse to Sir John Gates, by way of loan, the sum of 400*l.* taking his obligation for payment thereof at Whitsuntide, 1554. Dated as before.

p. 520.

A passport for Sir Hugh Willoughby, Kt. to go beyond the seas with four servants, monies, and his chain, &c. Dated as before.

For the Bi-  
shop of  
Norwich.

A warrant to deliver to the Bishop of Norwich the sum of 200*l.* by way of reward for his attendance all the last year hitherto about London in his majesty's service, being thereunto commanded. Dated as above.

A warrant to deliver to the four principal gentlemen of the privy chamber, the sum of 1000*l.* to be by them defrayed as out of his majesty's purse. Dated in March. 1553.  
For the king's principal gentlemen.

A letter to the Chancellor of the Augmentations, to assign out of the profits arising of the lands of the late Duke of Somerset 100*l.* to be delivered to the lieutenant of the Tower of London, for the use of the Lady Somerset. Dated in March. For the Lady Somerset.

A letter to the Bishop of Worcester, licensing him to repair to the Tower to the Lady Duchess of Somerset, in this time of Easter. Dated in April. To the Bp. of Worcester.

A license to Richard Tothel, printer, to print all manner of books of the common law of this realm, for seven years; so as the first copies thereof be allowed by one of the justices of the law, or two serjeants, or three apprentices of the law, whereof one to be a reader in the court, &c. To Richard Tothel.

The custody of Thomas Philpot, lunatic (or ideot, according to another manuscript) to the Lord Robert Dudley, with all his lands, goods, &c. and the fee of 100 marks. Dated April 17. To Lord Robert Dudley.

A warrant to the Lord Chancellor, authorizing him to name and appoint, from time to time, commissioners for church goods, in lieu of such as shall happen to die, to be sick, or otherwise occupied about the king's affairs. Dated in April. To the Ld. Chancellor.

A warrant to the Lord Treasurer, to deliver to Sir Andrew Dudley out of his charge, certain pieces of coin of gold of sundry coins, to the value of 1435*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.* to be by him kept to the king's majesty's use; and for a device of gold like a standing cup, with divers conclusions of arithmetic, with certain boxes, and in one of them 24 counters of gold, all weighing 108 ounces: two flagons of gold, with chains of the same, weighing 165 ounces, being sent by the lord admiral to the French queen at the christening of her son: one ring of gold, set with a long diamond, sent to the Lady Elizabeth, daughter of France: To the Ld. Treasurer.

1553. one other ring, set with a fair table diamond, given by his majesty to the Scots qucen, at her being here: a pearl pendant to a chain enamelled, being set with diamonds, rubies, and pearls, which was lost by his majesty's wearing the same: and for a George of gold set with eight small diamonds, which was the Earl of Southampton's, delivered to the said lord admiral. Dated in April. (This was a discharge for these jewels to Sir Andrew Dudley, who was keeper of the jewels.)

To Sir An-  
drew Dud-  
ley.

A warrant to Sir Andrew Dudley, to deliver for the furniture of the wedding apparel, to the Lord Guilford, son to the Duke of Northumberland, and to the Lady Jane, daughter to the Duke of Suffolk, certain parcels of tissues, and cloths of gold and silver, of the late Duke's and Duchess's of Somerset, as appears by the same. Dated in April.

p 521.  
To the  
same.

Alike warrant to him to take to himself, as of the king's gift; and a warrant to deliver to the Lord Chamberlain, each of them eighteen yards of crimson velvet, for the livery of the order of the garter. Dated as above.

To the  
same.

Two like warrants unto him, for ten yards apiece of white sarcenet or taffaty, to line the same liveries. Dated as above.

Passports  
for three  
ships.

Three several letters of commendation, or safe conduct or passport, for the three ships now going to the Newfoundland, written in Latin to all kings, princes, and other states. Three other of the same effect written in Hebrew. Three others in Chaldee tongue of the same effect. Dated in May.

Letters  
about the  
articles for  
uniformity  
and the  
Catechism.

Twenty letters to signifying, that the king's majesty hath sent unto every one of them certain articles for an uniform order to be observed within every church within this realm: which articles are gathered with great study, and by the advice of the greatest learned men of the bishops, &c. Dated in May.

Fifty-four articles concerning the uniform order to



be observed in every church of this realm. A Cate- 1553.  
chism also to be taught to scholars, as the ground and  
foundation of their learning. Dated in May.

A warrant to Sir John Gates, to cause a book to To Sir  
be drawn of the castle and manor of Hertford, the John Gates,  
manor of Hartingford-bury, the parks of Hertford  
and Hartingford-bury, with the appurtenances, in the  
county of Hertford; and the manor and park of  
Wikes in Essex, to the Lady Mary's grace. Dated  
in May.

A license to the Earl of Warwick, to retain an To Earl  
hundred men; and to the Lord Robert Dudley, to Warwick  
retain fifty men. Dated as before. and Lord  
Rob. Dud-  
ley.

A warrant of discharge to Sir John Williams, for To Sir John  
16,667*l.* 7*s.* 11 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* paid to Peter Osborn, as the Williams,  
arrearages upon the determination of the said Sir  
John Williams's account of his late office of master-  
ship of the jewel-house. Dated as above.

A warrant to the Lord Chancellor, to make out To the Ld.  
writs for a parliament, to be holden the 18th of Chancel-  
lor.  
September next. Dated in June.

A letter to the Lord Admiral, that it is the king's To the Ld.  
pleasure, that he shall repair unto the Tower of Admiral  
London, and take the charge thereof, there being  
committed to him the order and governance thereof.  
Dated in July.

A letter to the lieutenant of the Tower, to assist To the lieu-  
him in all such things, as shall by the said admiral be tenant of  
declared to him or his; and to follow such direction the Tower.  
as he shall appoint. (This is the last warrant set  
down in this Warrant Book.)

## CHAP. XXXII.

p. 522.

Collations, presentations, indulgences, and permissions to  
churchmen.

WE go on now with another rank of things worthy 1550.  
observing, collected from the aforementioned manu-  
scripts, viz.

1550.

*V. Collations, presentations, grants, letters, and licenses to men of the church or university.*

To Nic.  
Wotton.

A lease to Nicolas Wotton, Dean of Canterbury, for 21 years, of the manor of Leigh, with the appurtenances, in Sussex, late parcel of the possessions of Sir Thomas Cheney, Kt. with divers other lands, &c. paying therefore yearly 50*l.* to the bailiff or receiver of the premises. Dated in October, 1550.

To the Bi-  
shop of  
Bath and  
Wells.

A license to the Bishop of Bath and Wells, to give, grant, and alien to Edward Duke of Somerset in fee-simple, all the scite, circuit, and precinct of the chief mansion, called The Palace of the Bishop of Bath and Wells, with divers other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 62*l.* 0*s.* 11*d.* to be holden by fealty only. Dated in November, the same year.

To Nic.  
Daniel.

A license to preach to Nicolas Daniel, M.A. Dated in November.

Spillesby.  
Church  
and vicar-  
age.

A grant that the church of the late college or chantry of Spillesby, in Lincolnshire, dissolved by parliament holden an. reg. Edw. VI. 1°. shall be the parish church of Spillesby again, together with the churchyard. And that there shall be a vicar endowed for ever. And he and his successors shall have a messuage, and two barns, and one horse-mill and kiln-house, and one acre of land in Spillesby aforesaid, commonly called, in the scite of the said college: and an annuity of 10*l.* out of all the king's lands there, payable quarterly, to be holden in frank almoyn. Dated as above.

To John  
Bradford.

A license of preaching to John Bradford, professor in divinity. Dated in December.

To Wm.  
Dawson.

A grant to William Dawson, to be vicar preacher in the college of Southwel in Nottinghamshire, with the fee of 20*l.* per annum during pleasure: to be paid by the receiver of the same shire. Dated as before.

For Nic.  
Wotton.

A non-residence for Nic. Wotton, clerk, to take all the profits of his prebend in Salisbury, during his life, although he be not resident. Dated as before.

A presentation to John Bishop of Chester, to admit James Pilkington to the vicarage of Kendal in Westmorland. Dated as before. 1550.  
To the Bp.  
of Chester.

A warrant to Sir John Baker, Kt. (chancellor of the Court of Augmentations) to exonerate and discharge James Pilkington, clerk, and his executors, of his first-fruits of the vicarage of Kendal, whereunto he is presented; whereof the king hath pardoned him. Dated in December. p. 523.  
To Sir John  
Baker.

A presentation to the Bishop of Chester, to admit Henry Ilkins, clerk, to the parish church of Bedal, void by the death of Thomas Magnus, last incumbent. Dated as before. To the Bp.  
of Chester.

A letter to the Dean and Chapter of Worcester; where the king did write to them in favour of Sir Robert Tyrwhit, Kt. for a lease in reversion for 60 years, of the rectory of Wimbleton, that they will make the like grant to Mr. Cecyl, secretary, and rather better; who hath the interest of the said Sir Robert in the said rectory by the old lease. Dated in January. To the  
Dean and  
Chapter of  
Wigorn.

A non-residence to Giles Eire (the king's chaplain) professor of divinity, during life, to take the profits of his two prebends in Winton and Westminster, whether he be present or absent. Dated as above. To Giles  
Eire.

The advowson of the next canonship or prebend that falleth void in the cathedral church of Canterbury, to Peter Alexander, (a learned stranger, residing with the Archbishop of Canterbury.) Dated in February. For Peter  
Alexander.

A letter to the Bishop, Dean, and Chapter of Salisbury, in favour of William Honning, Esq. (who was one of the clerks of the council), where Guido Cavalcant, incumbent of the prebend of Cheping Faringdon, in the county of Berks, is contented, upon request made unto him, to give and surrender all his interest and estate of the possession of the said prebend, to agree to his said request, in such sort as the To the Bi-  
shop, Dean,  
and Chap-  
ter of  
Sarum.

1550. same may take effect towards him in fee-simple. Dated in February.

To the Bp. of Sarum. A license to the same bishop, to grant the premises in fee-simple unto William Honning. Dated as above.

For the Bp. of Norwich. A warrant to Sir John Baker, and Sir William Petre, where the reverend father in God, Thomas Bishop of Norwich, by five writings obligatory, every of them bearing date the 10th of April, an. 4 Edw. VI. standeth bound to the king's majesty in the sum of 1000*l.* for the sure payment of 583*l.* 13*s.* 10*d.* to be paid for his first-fruits: to defalk, deduct, and allow to the said reverend father, out of the said sum, 400*l.* and to deliver so many obligations for payment as amounts to the said sum, which the king hath forgiven him. Dated as above.

To Richard Squire. An annuity of 9*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* to Richard Squire, vicar of the parish of Dovercourt, in Essex, to be paid of the tenths of the parsonage of Dovercourt, from Christmas, an. 4 Edw. VI. half-yearly; in recompense of a promise made to him thereof by the king's majesty's father. Dated as above.

To the Bp. of Chester. A presentation to the Bishop of Chester, to admit John Standish, D. D. to the parsonage of Wiggon, in his diocese, void by the death of Mr. Herbert, late incumbent. Dated in March.

For Dr. Bill. A warrant to John Rither, cofferer, to pay William Bill, D. D. an annuity of 20*l.* from Michaelmas, an. 3 reg. during the king's pleasure.

p. 524. To the Bp. of Exon. A letter to the Bishop of Exeter (Voysey), to suffer the Earl of Bedford, and others of the council, to procure the best assurance for certain lands bought of him, appertaining to his bishoprick. Dated in March.

To Gest, Ayland, and Bernard. A license of preaching to Edmund Gest, B. D.: the like to Henry Ayland, B. D. and Thomas Bernard, M. A. Dated as above.

To Bp. Ponet. A translation of John Ponet, Bishop of Rochester, to the bishoprick of Winchester, during his life, with all lordships, manors, lands, tenements, heredita-



ments, and other possessions, as well spiritual as temporal, with all other commodities and jurisdictions. 1550.  
Dated in March.

The translation of the said John Bishop of Rochester to the bishoprick of Winchester, during his life, with all the lordships and manors, &c. New signed, because his spiritual jurisdictions and probate of testaments were not in the other. Dated in the same month. To the same.

A license to William Thynn, prebendary in the cathedral church of Wells, to grant and alienate to Edward Duke of Somerset, in fee-simple, all the manor of Dultingcote and Chilcote, in the county of Somerset, with the appurtenances belonging to his prebend there, by fine or recovery; and also to the Bishop of Bath and Wells, and to the dean and chapter, to ratify and confirm the said grant; and to the said duke to grant and exchange therefore to the said William Thynn, and his successors, the manor of Tyngerst, alias Fingurst, in the county of Bucks. Dated as before. To Wm. Thynn.

A license for preaching to James Haddon, M. A. of Cambridge, and to John Wilcock, M. A. of Cambridge. Dated in March. To J. Haddon, and J. Wilcock.

A presentation to William Bishop of Bath and Wells, to admit William Turner, doctor of physic (and who lived in the Duke of Somerset's family), to the deanry of the church of Wells, with all the lands and tenements thereunto belonging; which the king hath given him, with the prebend of Currey. Dated in March. To Dr. Turner.

A non-residence to William Turner, to be absent from his deanry within the church of Wells, and to take the profits notwithstanding during his life. Dated in March. 1551.  
To the same.

A presentation to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, to admit William Marsh to the parsonage of St. Peter's within the marches of Calais, of Turwyn diocese, void by the resignation of John Butler, the late incumbent. Dated in March. To the Archbp. of Canterbury

1551. A collation to John Scory to the bishoprick of Rochester, with all lordships, manors, lands, tenements, &c. during his life, from the translation of John, now Bishop of Winchester. Dated in April.
- To the Dean and Chapter of Worcester. A letter to the Dean and Chapter of Worcester, where they have granted to Sir Philip Hoby the parsonage of Lenchwich and Norton, in the county of Worcester, and to John Barnsley the farm and parsonage of Linrich, for 21 years, the king's majesty's pleasure is, although the statutes of their house do not permit them to extend their grants any further than for twenty-one years, to dispense with their statutes in that behalf, and desireth them to grant the same leases to them for sixty years a-piece. Dated in April.
- To the Archbp. of Canterbury p. 525. A presentation to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, to admit William Britten to the parish church of St. Dionys, in Lime-street, in London, which Thomas Pannel hath resigned to the same William, by his writing dated 13th February, an. 5 Edw. VI. Dated as before.
- To the same. A presentation to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to admit Christopher Ashburn, B. A. to the parsonage of St. Michael's, in Crooked-lane, London. Dated in April.
- To Trinity College. A letter to Trinity College, in Cambridge, declaring the king is pleased to dispense with Thomas Dovel, B. D. and vice-master of that college, for enjoying of his fellowship and vice-mastership, notwithstanding he be married. Dated in May.
- To the Bp. of Carlisle. A letter to the Bishop of Carlisle, that at the contemplation thereof he would grant to the Lord Clinton, Lord Admiral, a lease for sixty years of the manor of Horncastle, in Lincolnshire, after the accustomed yearly rent. Dated in May.
- To the Bp. of Winchester. A license of preaching to the Bishop of Winchester within this realm; and to appoint whom he shall judge meet to preach within his diocese, and to inhibit them whom he shall not think meet within the same. Dated as before.

A warrant to take bond of John Scory, <sup>1551.</sup>  
 Bishop of Rochester, for the payment of his first-fruits. <sup>For Bishop</sup>  
 to begin at the Annunciation of our Lady, anno 1554; <sup>Scory.</sup>  
 at which day he shall pay 100 marks, and so yearly  
 at the same feast 100 marks, till the same be satisfied  
 and paid. Dated as before.

A letter to the Bishop of Oxon, that he will grant, <sup>To the Bp.</sup>  
 for reasonable years and rent, to William Higham <sup>of Oxon.</sup>  
 and William Holms, the parsonage of Oughton, alias  
 Overton-on-the-Hill, in the county of Leicester, which  
 is presently in his disposition. Dated in May.

A letter to that it is the king's plea- <sup>For Dr. R.</sup>  
 sure, that Dr. Rowland Taylor shall succeed in the <sup>Taylor.</sup>  
 preacher's room of Canterbury, now void by pro-  
 moting Dr. Scory to the bishoprick of Rochester,  
 who last had the same. Dated as before.

A letter to in favour of John <sup>For John</sup>  
 Calvely, that they will grant a lease in reversion, <sup>Calvely.</sup>  
 under their chapter seal, for fifty years, of the whole  
 lordship of Stoughton, alias Sawton, a piece of land  
 called Church, in Hethe, in Cheshire, with all pro-  
 fits and commodities thereunto belonging. (They had  
 granted this before to Calvely, for as many years as  
 their statutes would allow; but this letter served to  
 dispense with them for letting it for fifty years.)  
 Dated as before.

A license to John Clark, to have, hold, and enjoy <sup>To John</sup>  
 his prebend in Wells, during his life; and a license <sup>Clark.</sup>  
 to him to marry. (As though he thought his marriage  
 without the king's license might have shaken his right  
 and title to his prebend; but he did not seem well to  
 consider the act made in the second year of this king,  
 which took off all old canons and constitutions against  
 priests' marriage, and that all forfeitures, pains, and  
 penalties, for the breach of them, should be of none  
 effect.) Dated in May.

A non-residence to George Carew, during his life, <sup>To George</sup>  
 to have all rents, benefits, fruits, &c. of his prebends <sup>Carew.</sup>  
 in the churches of Oxon and Wells, notwithstanding  
 his absence. Dated in May.

1551. A presentation to the Archbishop of Canterbury,  
 To the Archbp. of to admit Richard Kiffin to the parsonage of Bonings,  
 Canterbury in the marches of Calais, void by the resignation of  
 p. 526. Anthony Lisle, last incumbent; which was delivered  
 without preaching before the king, notwithstanding  
 the order taken. Dated as before.

For the bi- A warrant to the Chancellor, Treasurer, and Coun-  
 shoprick of cil, and to all other officers of the Court of First-fruits  
 Winton. and Tenths: where the king's majesty hath given to  
 John, late Bishop of Rochester, the bishoprick of  
 Winchester; and where it is agreed, that the said  
 bishop should assure unto the king divers manors,  
 lands, &c. of the said bishoprick, and the king granted  
 to assure to the said bishop divers of his lands, tene-  
 ments, and possessions, by reason whereof the said  
 bishoprick shall be greatly diminished: the king is  
 contented, therefore, that the said bishoprick of Win-  
 chester, and the revenues thereof, shall be rated,  
 taxed, and charged to the king's majesty, at 2000  
 marks for the first-fruits, and not above (whereas be-  
 fore it was valued in the king's books at 3885*l.* 3*s.*  
 3 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.*), as often as the first-fruits thereof shall be due  
 and payable; and the same bishoprick of Winchester,  
 and the possessions and revenues thereof, from hence-  
 forth shall be rated, taxed, and charged at 200 marks  
 yearly, and not above, for the yearly tenths of the  
 said bishoprick; and that he shall be discharged of  
 all sums of money heretofore due, or used to be  
 paid for the first-fruits and tenths of the said bishop-  
 rick. And further, the king hath licensed the said  
 bishop to enter into the same bishoprick before the  
 payment of the said first-fruits; to take only the bonds  
 of the said bishop, without surety or sureties to be  
 bound with him, by ten several obligations, for the  
 sure payment of the said 2000 marks, for the satis-  
 faction of his first-fruits, and of all other sums of  
 money, in ten years. And further, to deliver all bonds  
 and writings touching the first-fruits of the bishoprick  
 of Rochester to the said Bishop of Winchester, which  
 the king hath forgiven him. Dated in May.



A gift to the said bishop, in consideration of the manors of Marden, Twiford, Marwel, Waltham, &c. in the county of Southampton, and of divers other lands, tenements, rents, &c. of all the rectory of Bremmer, and of the chapel of Charford and Hale, and of the rectory of Rogborn, in the county of Southampton, with divers other lands, to the yearly value of 2000 marks: to be holden *in liberam eleemosynam*, and to take the profits from Michaelmas last. Dated in May.

1551.  
To the Bp.  
of Winton.

A license to the said Bishop of Winchester, to enter into the said bishoprick, and to take and receive the profits thereof, without paying any thing thereof, notwithstanding a statute made in that behalf, in the 26th of the reign of Henry VIII. (anno Dom. 1534), with a pardon to him of all pains, penalties, and sums of money that might be forfeited and due to the king, for entering into the bishoprick of Rochester contrary to the said statute. Dated in May. (The said statute was, that every bishop or other spiritual person, before any actual or real possession, or meddling with the profits of the bishoprick or other spiritual promotion, should satisfy, content, and pay, or compound and agree to pay to the king's use, at reasonable days, upon good sureties, the first-fruits.)

To the  
same.

A letter to (the Dean and Chapter of Winton) to confirm the grant of the said bishop by their full consent and seal of the chapter, as in that case by the order of the laws is requisite and accustomed. Dated as before.

To the  
Dean and  
Chapter  
of Winton.

A presentation to the Bishop of Winton, to admit Leonard Bilson, M.A. to the prebend in the cathedral church of Winton, void by the death of Thomas White. Dated in June.

p. 527.  
For L. Bil-  
son.

A presentation of John Ashdown to Ashtisford (in Kent), which Ponet, when Bishop of Rochester, held with his bishoprick. Dated in June.

For John  
Ashdown.

A license to John Bishop of Gloucester, and Anne, his wife, during his life, with five or six guests, to eat

To the Bp.  
of Glou-  
cester and  
his wife.

1551. flesh and white meats in Lent, and on other fasting days. Dated as before.

To the Bp. of Norwich A presentation to the Bishop of Norwich, to admit Launcelot Thexton to the parish church of Great Bircham, in his diocese. Dated in June.

To John Whithear. The deanry of Bristow to John Whithear, clerk, for life, after John Snow's death, or when it shall be void. Dated as before.

For John Harley. A presentation to Nicolas Bishop of Worcester, to present John Harley, M.A. to the prebend of Worcester, called the Nineteenth Prebend, void by Wembley's death. Dated as before.

For Miles Wilson. A license of preaching to Miles Wilson, M.A. student in divinity in the university of Cambridge. Dated May 7.

To the Archbp. of York. A letter to the Archbishop of York, in favour of Mr. Rider, cofferer, for the prebend of Uskel, which William Lughton late had. Dated in July.

To Miles Coverdale. The collocation of the bishoprick of Exeter to Miles Coverdale, with a license of entry into the said bishoprick, being of the yearly value of 500*l.* now, and no more, where afore it was of 1565*l.* 13*s.* 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.* and that the yearly tenths shall be but 50*l.* hereafter; and to be discharged of this year's tenths, and all arrearages in the old bishop's time. Dated in July.

To Vesey, late Bishop of Exeter. A grant to John Vesey, late Bishop of Exeter, upon his resignation of his said bishoprick, to enjoy all annuities granted unto him out of the lands of the bishoprick, whereof he hath made a state in fee-simple to others; and also to enjoy certain rents granted out of the bishoprick to certain persons, that be come to his hands; and that the said late bishop may plead in any court by the name of John Vesey. Dated in July.

For Bishop Coverdale. A warrant to the Court of First-fruits and Tenths, to discharge Miles Coverdale, a late made Bishop of Exeter, of his first-fruits. Dated in August.

To Sir John Mason. A letter to Sir John Mason, Knt.; where the Bishop of Winchester hath departed to the king's ma-

1551.  
 jesty certain lands lately belonging to the see of Winchester, which lands behoveth to be confirmed to his highness, under the chapter seal of the cathedral church there, before Michaelmas next; that he with convenient speed repairing thither, and agreeing with the bishop to meet with them there at a day certain, do cause all the canons, prebendaries, and others whom it concerneth, to assemble and come together in the Chapter-house at Winchester, for confirming of the said lands, before the feast of Michaelmas; advising the council the day of their meeting, as order may be given to the king's learned council to be there at the same time. Dated in August.

A license of preaching to Miles Coverdale, Bishop of Exeter. Dated in September. To the Bp. of Exeter.

A license to the said bishop, and Elizabeth, his wife, during their lives, with five or six at their table, to eat flesh and white meats in Lent, and other fasting days. Dated in September. p. 528.  
To the same.

The deanery within the cathedral church of Chichester, in Sussex, given to Bartholomew Traheron, for life, void by the death of Giles Aire, late the king's chaplain, with all the profits thereunto belonging. Dated as before. To Bart. Traheron.

A letter to the Dean and Chapter of Worcester, in favour of William Huggon, to grant him a lease for 40 years, of their lordship of Himbleton, in Worcestershire. Dated as above. To the Dean and Chapter of Worcester.

A presentation to the Bishop of Winchester, to admit John Rudd, B. D. to a prebend in that church, void by the death of Giles Eyre. Dated in September. To the Bp. of Winton.

A letter to the Prebend and Chapter of Chichester, to elect Bartholomew Traheron dean thereof, and to do all other things thereunto requisite. Dated as above. For Bart. Traheron.

A license of preaching to Launcelot Thexton, M.A. Dated in October. To Laun. Thexton.

A letter to \_\_\_\_\_ to elect Mr. Lever to be master of (St. John's) College, in Cambridge, now For Mr. Lever.

1551. void by reason of the preferment of him that was late master there (viz. Dr. Bill) to another promotion within the same university. Dated in November.
- To Robert Horne. A grant to Robert Horne, of the deanery within the cathedral church of Durham, with all and singular pre-eminences, jurisdictions, lands, &c. for the term of his life, in as large and ample manner as Hugh Whithed had it. Dated as before.
- To W. Bill. A grant of the mastership of Trinity College to William Bill, D.D. for life, void by the death of John Redman, clerk, with all manors, mansions, &c. Dated in November.
- For John Watson. A presentation to John Bishop of Winchester, to admit John Watson to a prebend in that church, void by the death of Anthony Barker, late incumbent. Dated in November.
- For T. Rose. A presentation to the Bishop of London, to admit Thomas Rose to the vicarage of West Ham, void by the death of the said Anthony. Dated in November, but the seal passed not till January 18 following.
- For N. Udal. A presentation to admit Nicolas Udal, M. A. to a prebend of Windsor, void by the death of the said Anthony. Dated as before.
- For Alex. Nowel. A presentation to admit Alexander Nowel to a prebend in St. Peter's, in Westminster, void by the death of John Redman. Dated as before.
- For Nic. Ashton. A presentation to John Bishop of Chester, to admit Nicolas Ashton to the vicarage of Kirby, in Kendal, void by the resignation of James Pilkington, late incumbent. Dated as before.
- For T. Kay. A letter to (the fellows of University College, in Oxon) to elect Thomas Kay to the mastership of their college, void by the resignation of the late master there. Dated as above.
- To the Provost and Fellows of King's College. A letter to the Provost (Sir John Cheke) and Fellows of King's College, in Cambridge, that in chusing ordinary officers, they use first the order prescribed in the statutes; and if, after due form used, they cannot agree, that then he be taken for officer, whom the said provost shall appoint; whom the rest of the fel-



lows shall obey during the time of his said office, in 1551:  
all things that the statute wills them, until further  
order be therein taken, either by the king's majesty, p. 529.  
or the Bishop of Lincoln (their visitor.) Dated in  
December.

A license of preaching to John Jewel. A like li- To Jewel  
cense to Thomas Sampson. Dated in December. and Samp-  
son.

A license to Nicolas Bishop of London, to give to To the Bp.  
Thomas Lord Wentworth, and his heirs, all his chief of London.  
messuage, with the appurtenances, in the county of  
Middlesex, with divers other lands, tenements, &c.  
(the yearly value not expressed) to be holden in fealty  
only. Dated in December.

A presentation to admit Richard Turner, B. D. to For R.  
a prebend within the chapel of St. George the Mar- Turner.  
tyr, in the Castle of Windsor, void by the death of  
Simon Simons. Dated in December. The patents  
sealed December 24.

A license of preaching to Adam Shephard, B. D. To Shep-  
Dated Jan. 15. heard.

Thomas Carew made Archdeacon of Norwich, T Carew.  
void by the death of Alexander Carew. Dated in  
February.

A grant to John Ellis of a canonship in the church To J. Ellis.  
of Rochester, void by the death of William Harrison.  
Dated in February.

A letter to the Fellows of Trinity Hall, in Cam- To Trinity  
bridge, to receive for their master, Dr. Haddon, the Hall.  
king's principal reader in the civil law. Dated in  
February.

A license for preaching to Nicolas Grimwald, M. A. To Grim-  
Dated January 2. wald.

A license of preaching to Thomas Wylson. Dated To T.  
February 23. Wylson.

Annuities of 40*l.* each, during pleasure, to be T the  
made from Michaelmas last, to William Bill, D. D. king's  
Mr. Grindal, B. D. Mr. Perne, D. D. Mr. Harley, chaplains.  
B. D. the king's ordinary chaplains. Signed March  
13; with a *liberat dormant*.

A license of preaching to Dr. Bill. Dated March 1. To Dr. Bill.

1551.  
For W.  
Britain.

A presentation to Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, to admit William Britain, doctor of law, to St. Deny's Back-church, void by the resignation of William Ereth. Dated in March.

For T.  
Wilson.

A presentation to John Bishop of Lincoln, to admit Thomas Wilson to the parsonage of Washingborough, void by promoting the said John Bishop of Lincoln. Dated in March.

1552.  
Bishop of  
Rochester

The translation of John (Scory) Bishop of Rochester, to the bishoprick of Chichester, with all lordships, manors, lands, &c. to the same bishoprick belonging, to him during his life. Dated in April.

Bp. Hoper.

Translation of John (Hoper) Bishop of Glocester, to the bishoprick of Worcester, with all lordships, manors, &c. to the same belonging. Dated in April.

To Row.  
Tayler.

A grant to Roland Tayler, LL. D. for life, of the archdeaconry of Exon, with all lordships, manors, &c. to the same belonging. Dated in April. With the pensions granted him by the Court of Augmentations, in recompense of a prebend and synodals of the late dissolved college Glasney, and of the abbies of Bodmin, Tywardreth, and Luxam, with the discharge of his first-fruits, and the arrearages of his predecessors for their tenths and subsidies. Signed May 3.

To the Bp.  
of Roches-  
ter.

A pardon or release to the Bishop of Rochester, of all manner of debts, or arrearages of debts, due to the king for tenths for his bishoprick and first-fruits. Dated in May.

p. 530.  
For the  
Bishop of  
Lincoln.

A warrant to take the bonds of the new-elected Bishop of Lincoln, for the payment of his first-fruits and tenths: the first payment to begin at Michaelmas, 1553, after 100*l.* by year. Dated in May.

To Taver-  
ner.

A license to Richard Taverner to preach. Dated as before.

For Bart.  
Traheron.

A letter to the Chancellor of the First-fruits, for the remission of Bartholomew Traherin (Traheron) of 52*l.* 12*s.* 4*d.* due for the first-fruits of the deanery of Chichester. Dated as before.

A letter to the Dean and Chapter of Exeter, for

continuance of the divinity lecture in the cathedral church there, as the king's late visitors appointed it. <sup>1552.</sup>  
 Dated as before. <sup>To the Dean and Chapter of Exeter. For Bishop Hoper.</sup>

A warrant to the officers of the Court of First-fruits, to discharge John Hoper, Bishop of Worcester, of all his first-fruits. Dated in May.

A license to Edmund Grindal, B. D. to preach. <sup>To Grindal.</sup>  
 Dated in June.

The prebend of Horton, in the county of Gloucester, parcel of the possessions of the Duke of Somerset, leased to Clement Paston, Esq. for twenty-one years, paying yearly for the same 65*l.* 1*s.* 7½*d.*  
 Dated in June. <sup>To Clement Paston.</sup>

A presentation for Matthew Parker, for the prebend of Corringham, in the church of Lincoln. Dated in June ; passed the seal June 21. <sup>For M. Parker.</sup>

A letter also to the President and Chapter of the Church of Lincoln, to admit and chuse the said Matthew Parker, D. D. to the deanery of Lincoln. <sup>For the same.</sup>  
 Dated as before.

A license to the Bishop of Lincoln to preach, with authority to him to forbid any to preach within his diocese, being unable, and not having the king's license. Dated as above. <sup>To the Bp. of Lincoln.</sup>

A license to the Bishop of Chichester, both to preach himself, and also at his discretion to license or forbid any other within his diocese. Dated in June. <sup>To the Bp. of Chichester.</sup>

A license to Dr. Standish, one of the king's chaplains, to enjoy his prebend in the church of Worcester, as though he were resident. Dated as before. <sup>To Dr. Standish.</sup>

A letter in favour of Thomas Harding (chaplain to the Marquis of Dorset) that they will, at the contemplation of his majesty's letter, accept and chuse him to be master of their college, whensoever the same shall next become void. Dated as above. <sup>For Th. Harding.</sup>

A letter requiring them, at the contemplation thereof, to nominate and elect Dr. (Walter) Haddon, at Michaelmas next, to the room that Dr. Oglethorpe hath in their college (which was the president- <sup>For Dr. Haddon.</sup>

1552. ship of Magdalen College, in Oxon) who is then willing to resign the same. Dated as before.

To the Bp.  
of Bath  
and Wells.

A patent granted for exchange of lands, to the Right Reverend William, Bishop of Bath and Wells, viz. for the chief mansion of the deanery of Wells, with all the lands within the precincts of the same; and also the manor of Westoker, with the right of patronage of the parsonage of Westoker, and the borough of Wellington and Stogursey, in the county of Somerset, to the yearly value of 60*l.* 2*s.* 11½*d.*; and also of the park of Wedmore: and for one annuity of 16*l.* coming yearly of the manor of Glastenbury, in the said county (which were made over to the king:) and the bishop to have the chief mansion belonging to the bishop's see, commonly called, The Bishop of Bath and Wells' Palace, with all the appurtenances within the precincts of the said palace, and the house in Wells appointed for the safe custody of the clerks convict, and all the manors in Wells and Westbury; and all the borough of Wells, and the hundred of Wells, with all their appurtenances; late parcel of the possession and inheritance of Edward Duke of Somerset, attainted of felony, and sometime parcel of the possessions of the Bishop of Bath and Wells. And also the park called Westbury Park, parcel of the possessions of the foresaid duke: *etiam nativos, nativas et villanos cum eorum sequelis: habend. eidem episcopo et successoribus suis in perpetuum tenend. de domino rege in perpetuam eleemosynam*, with a pardon for his first-fruits. The indenture dated in July. The patents dated at Westminster, Aug. 1, an. reg. 6.

To Pilkington and Jones.  
To Grindal.

A license of preaching to Edward Pilkington, M. A. and another to Griffith Jones. Dated in July.

A grant to Edmund Grindal, of a prebend in the church of Westminster, for life, void by the death of Breton. Dated in July.

To Magdalen Coll.  
Oxon.

A letter to the Fellows of Magdalen College, Oxon, to chuse next Michaelmas Dr. Haddon president thereof: and that the king is not pleased for the de-



nying of his former letters, nor for the division that is 1552.  
between them. Dated as before.

A presentation to the Bishop of London, to admit For J. Pullen.  
John Pullen, B. D. to the parsonage of St. Peter's, in  
Cornwall, void by the advancing of John (Tayler)  
Bishop of Lincoln, to that bishoprick. Dated in July.

A grant to Rafe Cavelare (Cavalerius) stranger, to To Rafe Cavelare.  
be free denizon; and therein the advowson of a pre-  
bend (or, of the next prebend or deanery, as Chan-  
cellor Goodrick's Ledger Book sets it down) in the  
church of Canterbury; in consideration of his reading  
the Hebrew lecture freely in Cambridge. Dated in  
August.

A gift to James Haddon, B. A. of the prebend of To James Haddon.  
Westminster, void by the death of Anthony Bellows,  
LL. D. and master of chancery. Dated in August.

A license of non-residence granted to Dr. Standish, To Dr. Standish.  
a prebendary in the church of Worcester, being one  
of the king's ordinary chaplains, to have the said pre-  
bend, being in any other his promotions; any con-  
stitution or act of parliament that is, or shall be to  
the contrary notwithstanding. Dated at Christ's-  
church, (where the king was in his progress). Au-  
gust 20.

A grant to Edwin Sands, D. D. of a prebend with- To Edwin Sands.  
in the church of Carlisle, void by the death of Ballace  
(Bellows.) Dated in September.

A presentation to the Bishop of Worcester, to ad- For J. Dee.  
mit John Dee to the parsonage of Upton, void by the  
promotion of John Harley to the bishoprick of He-  
reford. Dated in September.

A letter to the Bishop of Bath and Wells, signi- To the Bp. of Bath.  
fying his majesty's contentation, that the bishop hav-  
ing many fit places within the precinct of the house  
of Wells to make an hall of, and for his hospitality,  
may (edifying one thereon) take down the great hall  
now standing, and grant the same away: commend-  
ing unto him for that purpose Sir Henry Gates, upon  
knowledge had of the bishop's good inclination  
towards him. Dated in September.

1552.  
p. 532.

A letter to the Master and Fellows of St. John's College, Oxon, to place one Alexander Smutches, stranger, in that place which Johannes ab Ulmis, lately departed hence, had. Dated as above.

For Nic.  
Uvedale.

A presentation to John Bishop of Winchester, to admit Nicolas Uvedale, M.A. to the parsonage of Calborne, in the Isle of Wight, void by the promoting of John Goodacre to the archbishoprick of Cashel, in Ireland. Dated in September.

To J. Old.

A grant to John Old, D.D. for life, of the canonship or prebend in the cathedral church of Hereford, void by the death of Anthony Bellasis (or Bellows) and in the king's gift by vacation of the said bishoprick. Dated in September. Signed and sealed October 4.

To the  
Dean and  
Chapter of  
Worcester.

The king's letters to the Dean and Chapter of Worcester, to confirm under the chapter seal such assurance as shall be devised for his highness, for certain lands and hereditaments reserved of the old possessions of the bishoprick of Worcester. Dated in September.

To the  
same.

A letter to the Bishop, Dean, and Chapter of Worcester, for the surrender of the bishoprick of Worcester, to the intent there may be a new collation of the same, by the name of the Bishoprick of Worcester and Gloucester. Dated in September.

For Nic.  
Udal.

A letter in favour of Nicolas Udal, to the Dean and Chapter of Windsor, to have his dividend, and other commodities growing to him by the prebend there, during the time of his absence thence; in consideration that he hath been occupied in preaching. Dated in September.

To the Bp.  
of Here-  
ford.

A letter to the Bishop of Hereford, for granting of Hereford Place, in London, to the lord admiral, in fee-simple.

To Andrew  
Perne.

A grant of a prebend in Westminster, void by the death of Simon Heins, to Andrew Perne, the king's chaplain. Dated in October.

To James  
Haddon.

A grant of the deanery of the cathedral church of Exeter, which Simon Heins, lately deceased, had, to

James Haddon, D. D. to have during life: Dated 1552. in October: but the patent not signed till Jan 8, at Westminster.

Statutes signed by the king's majesty for Trinity College, in Cambridge. Dated in October. For Trinity College.

A prebend granted to George Burden, B. D. in the cathedral church of Rochester, now void by the death of Wilbore: and that he shall have the daily distributions, dividends, &c. arising thence, whether he be absent or present; provided, that he make yearly sermons of the gospels in the aforesaid church, either by himself, or some sufficient minister. Dated in September: but the patent bore date November 28. To George Burden.

A patent and grant made by the king to the Bishop of Gloucester, viz. uniting the bishopricks of Gloucester and Worcester in one, and to be one from henceforth of one diocese, and so reputed and taken. The patent dated December 8. To the Bp. of Gloucester.

Richard Alvey, B. L. a donation to him of a prebend in the church of Westminster. Dated in September: but the patent bore date December 11. To Rich. Alvey.

A grant of a prebend of Windsor to Bartholomew Traheron. Dated in September. To Barth. Traheron.

A letter to the deputy of Ireland. to place and receive John Bale, professor of divinity, as a man commended by his majesty, to the bishoprick of Ossory there. Dated in October. For John Bale.

A letter to the Lord Chancellor, to cause the great seal of England to be put to a commission given to certain commissioners, for the devising and making divers and sundry statutes and ordinances, to be observed in Trinity College, in Cambridge. Dated in October. p. 533. For Trinity College.

A presentation to the Bishop of Chester, to admit Bernard Gilpin to the parsonage of Thornton. Dated in November. For Bern. Gilpin.

William Denison, B. D. presented to St. Edmund's, Lombard-street, void by the attainder of John Percy, late incumbent. Dated in November. For Will. Denison.

1552.  
To Rob.  
Horn.

A grant to Robert Horn, professor of divinity, of the bishoprick of Durham, with all lordships, manors, lands, &c. to the same belonging, during his life. Dated in November.

To John  
Hooper.

A grant to John Hooper, of the bishoprick of Worcester and Gloucester: and a gift to him and his successors for ever, of all the lordships and manors of Alchurch, &c. Dated in November.

To the Bp.  
of Worces-  
ter.

A presentation to the Bishop of Worcester, to admit Alexander Creek, clerk, to the vicarage of Kidderminster, void by the preferment of John Harley. Dated in December.

For John  
Knox.

An annuity of 40*l.* to John Knox, until he be promoted to some benefice; to be paid at the Augmentation quarterly. Dated in December.

The Bp. of  
Hereford's  
house.

A lease to Edward Lord Clinton, for 200 years, of the Bishop of Hereford's house in London; paying yearly 12*d.* Now signed in December (as one was signed in the month before) for that there wanted in the other the rehearsal of certain former leases.

To Arthur  
Dudley.

A grant of a prebend in the cathedral church of Worcester, to Arthur Dudley. Dated in December.

To the  
Dean of  
Windsor.

A patent granted to the Dean of the free chapel of St. George, of Windsor, and to his successors, to be a body corporate, and to purchase lands to the value of 40*l.*: and to have the parsonage and church of Dunstable, Houghton, with the advowson of the vicarage, in the county of Bedford; lately parcel of the possessions of St. Alban's, in the county of Hertford, viz. the said parsonage is granted to William Franklyn, now dean there, and his successors; and to convert the same to their own use; rendering to the king 3*l.*; which rectory, and the premises, extend to the clear yearly value of 41*l.* Dated December 10.

For the Bp.  
of Worces-  
ter.

A letter to the Bishop of Ely, Lord Chancellor, to take order, that no person do demand a fee of the Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester. Dated in December.

To the Bp.  
of Exeter.

A letter to the Bishop of Exeter, that the king's



pleasure is, to dispense with Dr. Haddon for taking 1552.  
of any other orders than he hath already. Dated in  
December. (Perhaps he took orders among the  
protestants beyond sea.)

A prebend of Bristol granted to Tho. Baily, B. D. To T. Baily.  
Dated in December.

A grant of a prebend of Windsor to Bartholomew To Trahe-  
Traheron. Dated in January. ron.

A presentation to the Bishop of Bath, to admit For Anth.  
Anthony Salvyn to the parish church of Higham. Salvyn.  
Dated in January.

A letter to Sir John Baker, to discharge Anthony For the  
Salvyn of such bonds as were made for the payment same,  
of the first-fruits of the mastership of the hospital of  
Sherborn, in the diocese of Durham: and to take p. 534.  
bond of Sir Robert Rede for payment thereof; in re-  
spect of the grant thereof unto him made. Dated as  
above.

The office of mastership of the hospital of St. Mary To Sir Rob.  
Magdalen, of Sherborn, in the bishoprick of Dur- Rede.  
ham, to Sir Robert Rede, Kt. for life. Dated in  
February.

A grant to Thomas Sampson, D. D. for life, of To Tho.  
the deanery of Chichester, with the profits thereunto Sampson.  
belonging, upon the resignation of Bartholomew Tra-  
heron, D. D. Dated in February.

A license for preaching to Bernard Gilpin, B. D. To Gilpin.  
Dated in February.

A license for preaching to John Madowel, B. D. To John  
Dated in February. Madowel.

A license to John A Lasco, during his life, to eat To John  
flesh in Lent, and other fasting days. Dated in A Lasco.  
February: but the patent bore date March 11.

The creation of John Harley, D. D. one of his 1553.  
majesty's ordinary chaplains, to the bishoprick of To John  
Hereford, for life, with all the lordships and manors Harley.  
belonging to the same, except the mansion, called the  
Bishop of Hereford's house, lying in Old Fish-street,  
London, with the gardens and houses belonging to the  
same, (which the Lord Clinton had got from the see.)

1553. Granted in February: but the patent bore date March 28, 1553.

To Ormund Hill.

A special license granted to Ormund Hill, clerk, to obtain, purchase, or possess any manner of parsonage, vicarage, lands, tenements, or other hereditaments whatsoever, to the value of 20*l.* by lease or otherwise, notwithstanding any act to the contrary. Dated March 18.

To Parkhurst.

A license for preaching to John Parkhurst, clerk. Dated in April.

To G. Eton.

A like license to Guy Eton, clerk. Dated in April.

To Alex. Nowel.

A like license to Alexander Nowel, schoolmaster of Westminster. Dated as before.

To John Barlow.

A patent to John Barlow, clerk, dean of the church of Worcester; giving him by the same full power and authority to take and receive of the king, or of any of his subjects whatsoever, manors, messuages, lands, parsonages, tenements, &c. in farm, to him, his executors, or assigns, being either of the demission or grant of the king, or any other persons, for the term of sixty years, either more or less, as between them can be agreed; so that the clear value of the said manors, messuages, &c. by the said Barlow taken and received to farm, do not exceed the clear value yearly of 50*l.* without incurring any forfeiture or penalty of the act made in the 21st of King Henry VIII. of the statute of lands and tenements to let to farm to clerks and ecclesiastical persons; (which statute actually forbad any spiritual person to take to farm manors, lands, tenements, &c. upon pain to forfeit 10*l.* for every month they shall occupy such farm.) This patent was dated April 7.

To the Dean of Chester.

A license to the Dean of Chester, to grant by deed indented, or otherwise, any of his lands, tenements, &c. to Sir Richard Cotton, Kt. of the yearly rent of 603*l.* 18*s.* 10*d.* Dated in April.

A license for preaching to John Rud, B. D. Dated as before.

For a new master in the Savoy.

A letter to

to proceed to the election and

nomination of a new master of the Savoy, according to the foundation and statutes of the same house. 1553.

Dated in May.

The office of master of the Savoy to Rafe Jackson, To Rafe Jackson.  
for life, with all fees. Dated in June.

Articles agreed on by the bishops and other learned men, in the synod at London, in the year of our Lord 1552, for avoiding of controversy in opinions, and the establishment of a godly concord in certain matters of religion, published by the king's majesty's commandment in the month of May, 1553. p. 535. Articles of religion.

A book signed by the king's majesty, containing the articles aforesaid. The book signed by the king.

A grant of the next prebend in the church of Fridewide, Oxon, to William Walby, bachelor in physic. To W. Walby.  
Dated in June.

A license to the Bishop of Peterborough, to give and grant to David Vincent all the wood, called Thomas Wood, and the gift of the parsonage of Bernak, in Northamptonshire. To David Vincent.  
Dated in June.

A gift to David Vincent, in fee-simple, of the prebend of Rothfeune, in Wiltshire, with divers other lands. To the same.  
Dated in June.

A letter to to assent to the gift of the king, of the square tower adjoining to the cathedral church there, with the bells, and other things thereto belonging, to Christopher Perne. To Christ. Perne.  
Dated as before.

A presentation to the Bishop of London, to admit John Rogers in the cathedral church of St. Paul's, London. For John Rogers.  
Dated as before. (To be reader there.)

### CHAP. XXXIII.

A Catalogue of King Edward's Free Grammar Schools. More private matters concerning the king's household.

THE next rank of things collected from the aforesaid manuscripts, is of

VI. *Schools founded by the king.*

1550.  
St. Ed-  
mund's  
Bury.

A grant of a free grammar school at St. Edmund's Bury in Suffolk, liberally endowed with several lands of dissolved chantries. Bearing date an. 4°. regis.

At Spilles-  
by.

p. 556.

A grant of a grammar school at Spillesby, in Lincolnshire, and for Robert Latham, the first school-master thereof for life: who shall have succession for ever, and be incorporated by the name of *Pædagogus Pædagogicæ de Spillesby*, of the king's foundation: and that he and his successors shall be able to take and purchase, and to give and grant lands and tenements, &c. and to plead and be impleaded by that name: and that the said Latham, and his successors, shall have the parsonage of Spillesby for their mansion and the school-house, with three acres and an half of land there belonging to it, an annuity of 13*l.* 13*s.* 8*d.* out of the king's lands in Spillesby, payable quarterly; with a grant in it, that Katharine Duchess of Suffolk, and Charles Brandon, and either of them, their heirs and assigns, shall have as well the nomination and appointment of the schoolmaster of the said school, as the visitation and reformation of the same. Dated in November, 1550.

At Chelms-  
ford.

A grant that there shall be a free grammar school in the parish of Chelmsford, in Essex; whereof Sir William Petre, Walter Mildmay, Henry Tirrel, Kts. and Tho. Mildmay, Esq. and their males of their bodies begotten, shall have the governance of all the possessions and goods, with a gift of all the chantry, called Hills Chantry, with the appurtenances, in Great Badow, in the said county: to the said governors, and their successors, for ever; with divers other lands and tenements, to the yearly value of 20*l.* 17*s.* 10*d.* besides 2*l.* yearly paid to the poor people of Badow aforesaid. Paying yearly therefore at Michaelmas 17*s.* 10*d.* at the Augmentation: and authority given to the said governors to appoint the schoolmaster and usher thereof, and to provide other necessities for the said school, and to take the profits



of the said lands; with a license to purchase of the king, or otherwise, lands, tenements, rectories, tenths, &c. to the yearly value of 20*l.* besides the premises. Dated in March. 1550.

A grant unto the inhabitants of the town of Sedbergh, in the county of York, that there shall be erected a free grammar school in Sedbergh, to be called, “King Edward the Sixth’s Grammar School:” and that James Ducket, Richard Middleton, &c. be governors of the same: with a further grant unto the said inhabitants, and their successors, towards the sustentation of the said school, of the parsonage of Weston, in the county of York, with divers other lands, to the yearly value of 20*l.* 13*s.* 10*d.* Dated in April. 1551. At Sedbergh.

A grant to the inhabitants of the town of Louth (Louth) and their successors, that there shall be a free grammar school there, called “King Edward’s Free Grammar School;” and one guardian, and six assistants, of the same town, one schoolmaster, one usher; with a gift for the sustentation of the same, of 67 acres of land in Louth, in Lincolnshire; with divers other lands, &c. to the yearly value of 40*l.* Dated in September. At Louth.

A grant to the bailiff, burgesses, and inhabitants of the town of Salop, that there shall be a free grammar school, and one master and usher to teach children. For the sustentation whereof, the king gave them and their successors for ever, all the tithes, coming and growing of the towns, fields, and parishes of Astley, Sensaw, Cliff-Letton, and Almon-park, in the county of Salop. Dated in November. (But the patent sealed in February following.) At Salop.

A grant to the bailiff and burgesses of the town of East Retford, in the county of Nottingham, that there shall be a grammar school there, which shall be called “King Edward’s Free Grammar School,” and a schoolmaster and usher. To the sustentation whereof, he gave the late chantry of Sutton Loundale, in the parish of Lounde in the said county, to At East Retford.

1551. the yearly value of 15*l.* 5*s.* 3 $\frac{1}{4}$ *d.* Dated in November.

At Bry-  
mingham.

A free grammar school erected by the king at Brymingham (alias Bromycham) in the county of Warwick, called "King Edward the Sixth's Free Grammar School," with a schoolmaster and usher.

p. 537.

For the sustentation whereof, he gave all that his barn, and four messuages lying in Dalend in Birmingham in the said county, to the value of 21*l.* per ann. rendering to the king and his successors 20*s.* yearly, at the Augmentations.

At Mor-  
peth.

A patent bearing date March 13, at the request of the Lord Dacres, granted to the bailiff and burgesses of Morpeth in Northumberland, for the erecting of a school there, a schoolmaster and usher: with a gift of two chantries in Morpeth, with divers other lands, &c. yearly value 20*l.* 10*s.* 8*d.*; and a license of mortmain to purchase 20*l.* by the year, for maintenance thereof.

1552.  
At Mac-  
clesfield,  
&c.

Likewise the next year, viz. 1552, were erected grammar schools at Macclesfield, at Non-Eton, at Stourbridge, in Worcestershire. This last, by the grant, to be called King Edward's School, and had a gift of all the yearly pensions and portions of tithes of Markley and Suckley in the same county; and divers other lands. Likewise there were other schools of his founding, the same year, at Bath and Bedford, and at Guilford. And in the last year of the king, viz. 1553, other schools, viz. at Grantham, at Thorne, and at Giggleswick. The foundations and endowments of all which above mentioned, are shewn in the Catalogue of Records, Book II. at the letter I. And besides all those, yet other more are these that follow, not mentioned there.

1553.

At St. Al-  
ban's.

A grant for the establishing of the corporation of the town of St. Alban's, in the county of Hertford, with certain liberties therein mentioned; and for the erection of a free grammar school there; with a grant of the late abby church to be their parish church. Dated in April.

A grant to Sir Andrew Jud, Kt. and alderman of London, that there shall be a free grammar school in <sup>1553. At Tun-</sup> Tunbridge, in Kent, called "King Edward the Sixth's Free Grammar School," with a schoolmaster and usher; with a license to the said Andrew Jud to take lands and possessions for the sustentation of the same school. Dated in April.

A free grammar school granted to the mayor and burgesses of Southampton, with a schoolmaster and usher; and with a license to take land to the yearly value of 40*l*. Dated in May. <sup>At South-</sup> ampton.

A grant to the burgesses of Stratford upon Avon of a free grammar school, and alms-house; with a gift <sup>At Strat-</sup> of certain lands, to the value yearly of 46*l*. 3*s*. 2½*d*. Dated in June. And this was the last this prince founded. <sup>ford.</sup>

We may note, that the endowments of these schools were for the most part out of the chantry lands, given to the king in the first of his reign, according to the intent of the parliament therein: which was, to convert them from superstitious uses, unto more godly, as in erecting grammar schools, for the education of youth in virtue and godliness, for further augmenting the universities, and better provision for the poor. And the king was so honest and just, to lay them out in a very considerable measure for these good ends intended. <sup>Schools en-</sup> <sup>dowed with</sup> <sup>chantry</sup> <sup>lands: and</sup> <sup>why.</sup>

The last things we are to give account of from our manuscripts, are a few matters relating to the king's household and servants: which, though of a private nature, yet may be well worthy our notice.

## VII. *Matters of the household.*

p. 538.

A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, Kt. (belonging to the wardrobe) to deliver to John Ventrice, Roger Newport, Edward Broughtel, and Humphrey Colley, the king's majesty's footmen, and to every of them, two yards and an half of crimson velvet for a running <sup>1550. Coats for the king's footmen.</sup>

1550. coat, and to pay for the lining and making thereof. Dated in October, 1550.

A warrant to Sir Edmund Peckham, Kt. (treasurer, as I think, of the chamber) to pay unto every one of the said four footmen, for 26 ounces of silver parcel gilt, at 8*d.* (8*s.* perhaps) the ounce, about their running coats, for the third year of the king's reign. Dated as before.

License to  
the king's  
factor for  
his ward-  
robe.

Bartholomew Compagni, a Florentine, the king's factor: a license to him, his factors and attorneys, appointed for provision of such things as be brought into the realm, as followeth; that is to say, all manner of cloth of gold and silver, all manner of silks and velvets, damasks, satins, taffaties, and sarcenets; all manner of works of Venice gold and silver, damask gold and silver, and of silk, as passe-main, fringe, ribband, and such other work, all gold and silver, both Venice and damask: all manner of gold work, plate and silver vessels, jewels, pearls, precious stones, as well set in gold, and embroidered in garments, as otherwise: all manner of garments embroidered with gold and silver, skins and furs, sables and lusards; cloths of tapistry and arras, mixed with gold, silver, or silk; and all other things meet for the king's majesty's use and purpose; without any manner of opening before it be brought to the port of London, and there viewed and praised by the king's officers thereunto admitted. Dated in October.

For the  
King's  
Chapel.

A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Robert Bassok, serjeant of the vestry, threescore and two surplices for the gentlemen of the chapel; two surplices with wrought work for the sub-dean of the chapel; four and twenty surplices for the children of the chapel; for the table in the chapel three cloths; two table-cloths for the body of the chapel; four diaper napkins for the communion; six albes for the minister, deacon, and sub-deacon: two hundred hooks, one hammer, a pair of pinsons, a little pot,



and a guispin, a pair of tin cruets, three yards of green cloth to lay the stuff upon. Dated in November. 1550.

A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to the officers of arms; that is to say, to the three kings of arms, three coats of satin, painted with gold; to five heralds, five of damask, painted with gold; and to eight pursevants, eight of sarcenet, painted with gold. Dated in February. 1551.  
Coats for  
the kings  
at arms,  
&c.

A commission to Philip Van Wilder, gentleman of the privy chamber, in any churches or chapels, or other places within England, to take to the king's use such, and as many singing children or choristers, as he or his deputy shall think good. Dated in February. Singing  
children  
for the  
king's use.

A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Mr. Cecyl and Mr. Robotham, yeomen of the robes, all things as hath been accustomed for the king's maundy, for the fifth year of his reign. (When he was to wash the poor men's feet.) Dated as above. For the  
king's  
maundy.

To Sir George Howard, for his office of Master of the Henchmen, for one whole year. He was appointed to attend upon the young lords sent over the sea as hostages, whereof the Earl of Hertford was one. Dated in March. p. 539.  
Master of  
the Hench-  
men.

A warrant to the Exchequer, to deliver to Peter Richardson, goldsmith, 600*l.* prest, to be employed in fine silver, to make spangles for the livery coats of the guard, the yeomen of the Tower of London, the footmen and messengers of the chamber, for the fifth year of the king's reign. Dated in May. Spangles  
for livery  
coats.

A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Edward Lord Clinton, lord admiral, which is now elect and chosen to be of the right honourable order of the garter, for his livery of the same order, eighteen yards of crimson velvet, for one gown, hood, and tippet, and ten yards of white sarcenet for the lining of the same. Dated in May. Crimson  
velvet for  
the Lord  
Clinton, of  
the order.

A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay to

1551. John Wheeler, whom the king hath taken into the  
 A child of the leashe. room of child of the leashe, the wages of 40s. by year, during his life, from the death of Richard Bolton. Dated in September.

His apparel A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to the said John Wheeler yearly, during his life, these parcels following: First, eight yards of motley, for a coat, at 3s. 4d. the yard, and for the making of the same coat 14s.; six yards of chamblet, for two doublets, at 3s. 4d. the yard; six yards of fustian, at 8d. the yard, for lining to the same; two yards of canvas to line the same, at 8d. the yard. For making his said doublets 1s. 4d. a-piece. Six yards of fustian, at 1s. the yard, for two doublets; and four yards of cotton, at 8d. the yard, and two yards of canvas, at 4d. the yard, for lining the same: for making the same 2s. Eighteen ells of holland cloth, for six shirts, at 1s. the ell; and for making every shirt 8d. Four yards of broad cloth, for a gown, at 5s. the yard. A fur of black Irish lamb, price 1l. 10s.: for furring and making of the same 3s. 6d. Three broad yards of red woollen cloth, for a coat, &c. Dated as before.

Wages paid to the lieutenant of the Tower. A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay Sir Anthony Darcy his fee or wages of 100l. by year, for exercising the room of lieutenant of the Tower of London. Dated in December.

Singing children of the chamber. A warrant to Sir William Cavendish, to pay to Philip Van Wilder yearly, the allowance of 80l. for the finding of six singing children of the chamber. Dated as before.

1552. A warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver to Richard Cecyl and Robert Robotham, yeomen of the robes, fifteen gowns of grey marble cloth, fifteen pair of single-soled shoes, and forty-five ells of linen cloth, to be given to fifteen poor men on Maundy Thursday.

A cane for the Earl of Shrewsbury. A warrant to Richard Cecyl, Esq. to deliver to the Earl of Shrewsbury one of the king's canes, having a dial of gold on the top, and garnished with gold, and

having at the end a viral (ferula) of gold, as of the king's gift. Dated in April. 1559.

Richard Gowre, master of the children of the King's Chapel: a letter to him, to take up from time to time as many children to serve in the chapel as he should think fit. Dated in June. Master of the children of the King's Chapel.

The office of child of the leashe to John Strete, for life, (there was one Strete, the king's limner: this John Strete might be his son,) with the wages of 40s. by year, to be paid by the treasurer of the chamber quarterly. And a warrant to Sir Rafe Sadler, to deliver yearly to the said John Strete certain stuff for his apparel, with allowance for making. Dated in December. p. 540. A child of the leashe.

A warrant to Sir Andrew Dudley, to deliver to Robert Robotham, yeoman of the robes, to keep for the king one fur of black jennets, taken out of a gown of purple cloth of silver tissue; another fur of black jennets, taken out of a purple gown of silver with works : and to the lord chamberlain a gown of crimson satin, embroidered with gold, and furred with black jennets. To Sir Richard Cotton, a crimson satin gown, furred with squirrels and faced with sables, and ten yards of black; and to himself a gown of dark crimson velvet, furred with aglets, and buttons thereto appertaining; and to Sir Thomas Wroth, ten yards of black velvet, which he wan of the king. Dated in December. Warrant to the yeoman of the robes.

A warrant to the Lord Treasurer, to deliver to Sir Andrew Dudley one collar of gold of the order of the garter, remaining in his charge, containing twenty-seven roses of gold enamelled red, with the garter about them enamelled blue, and *Honi soit qui mal y pense* in it; and also twenty-seven knots of gold enamelled, with a fair *George* pendant, with three very little short chains at it, set with five table diamonds, and five pointed diamonds enamelled black on the backside. Dated in December. A collar of the order.

A warrant to the Receiver of the Duchy of Lan-

1552. To the embroiderer, caster, to pay to Ibgrave, embroiderer, for embroidering 109 coats for the guard, and for four messengers of the chamber, for the seventh year of the king's reign, 41*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* Dated in March.

To another embroiderer. A like warrant to him to pay Gillan Brodlet, for embroidering 122 coats, 46*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.* Dated as before.


For spangles. A like warrant to him to pay Peter Richardson in prest, to be employed upon spangles, 600*l.* Dated as before.

END OF VOL. III.





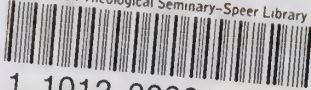
# Date Due

Mr 30 '39			
Mr 18 '47			
Mr 25 '48			
Mr 10 '54			
			



BW5115 .S92 v.3  
Ecclesiastical memorials.

Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00001 5505